

UNIVERSAL  
LIBRARY



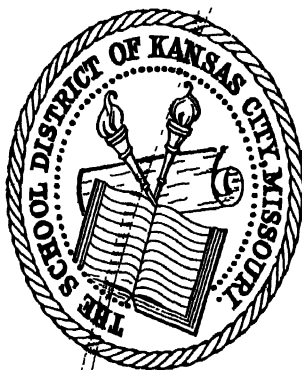
139 014

UNIVERSAL  
LIBRARY



822.33 HPS

Kansas City  
Public Library



This Volume is for  
REFERENCE USE ONLY







THE  
SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY'S  
P A P E R S.

— — —  
VOL. I.  
— — —



LONDON:  
PRINTED FOR THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY.

---

1844.

•

FREDERICK SHOBERL, JUNIOR,  
PRINTER TO HIS ROYAL HIGHNESS PRINCE ALBERT,  
51, RUPIERT STREET, HAYMARKET, LONDON

•

COUNCIL  
OF  
THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY.

*President.*

THE MOST NOBLE THE MARQUESS OF CONYNTHAM.

*Vice-Presidents.*

THE EARL OF POWIS.

THE EARL OF GLENGALL.

THE EARL HOWE.

THE RT. HON. LORD FRANCIS EGERTON.

THE RT. HON. LORD BRAYBROOKE.

THE RT. HON. LORD LEIGH.

THOMAS AMYOT, ESQ., F.R.S., TREAS. S.A.

WILLIAM AYRTON, ESQ., F.R.S., F.S.A.

JOHN BRUCE, ESQ., F.S.A.

J. PAYNE COLLIER, ESQ., F.S.A., DIRECTOR.

BOLTON CORNEY, ESQ.

PETER CUNNINGHAM, ESQ., TREASURER.

THE REV. ALEXANDER DYCE.

SIR HENRY ELLIS, K.H., F.R.S., F.S.A.

BARRON FIELD, ESQ.

HENRY HALLAM, ESQ., F.R.S., V.P.S.A.

J. O. HALLIWELL, ESQ., F.R.S., F.S.A.

THE REV. WILLIAM HARNESS.

JAMES HEYWOOD, ESQ., F.R.S., F.S.A.

JOHN OXENFORD, ESQ.

T. J. PETTIGREW, ESQ., F.R.S. F.S.A.

J. R. PLANCHÉ, ESQ., F.S.A.

WILLIAM J. THOMS, ESQ., F.S.A.

F. GUEST TOMLINS, ESQ., SECRETARY.

EDWARD V. UTTERSON, ESQ., F.S.A.

SIR FREDERICK BEILBY WATSON, K.C.H., F.R.S.

THOMAS WRIGHT, ESQ., M.A., F.S.A.

•

The Council of the Shakespeare Society desire it to be understood that they are not answerable for any opinions or observations that may appear in the Society's publications; the Editors of the several works being alone responsible for the same.

•

## P R E F A C E.

---

This work has originated in a desire, on the part of the Council of the Shakespeare Society, to afford a receptacle for papers illustrative of our early drama and stage, none of which, by themselves, would be of sufficient length and importance to form a separate publication.

It is to be borne in mind that the Society was formed, not merely for the elucidation of the productions of our great Dramatist (although that was certainly the main design), but of those of his predecessors, contemporaries, and immediate followers; so that few points connected with our popular literature, anterior to the Restoration, do not come within the scope of the Society.

This remark is the more necessary, because it does not always seem to have been understood, because some of the ensuing articles are of a general character or relate to a remote period, and because it is the wish of the Council to invite contributions illustrating, directly or incidentally, the opinions, manners, and peculiarities of the times in which Shakespeare lived, so distinctly and vividly reflected in his pages.

The Council has confined the volume, in the first instance, to five and twenty papers; but others are in

reserve, and, by the aid of zealous Members in different parts of the kingdom, it is hoped that succeeding volumes may be issued of larger dimensions and of a wider range of criticism and reflection. It is known that several individuals, friendly to the design, would have sent contributions to the Secretary, had they been aware of the precise form it was wished they should assume.

The Council has to return its thanks for various articles not found in the following pages, and to apologize to the writers for the non-insertion of them in the present publication, which has been put forth rather as a specimen of what has been done, than of what may be accomplished.

## CONTENTS.

---

	PAGE
ART. I.—Dogberry and his Associates    Arrest of the Conspirators with Mary Queen of Scots. By J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A.	1
ART. II.—Remarks on the Similarity of a Passage in Marlowe's <i>Edward II</i> , and one in the First Part of <i>The Contention</i> . By JAMES ORCHARD HALLIWELL, Esq., F.R.S., F.S.A., &c.	6
ART. III.—Letter from Ben Jonson to the Earl of Newcastle, and other matters relating to the Poet. By PETER CUNNINGHAM, Esq.	8
ART. IV.—Ballad illustrative of <i>Romeo and Juliet</i> , entitled "A pleasant new ballad of Two Lovers." By ANDREW BARTON, Esq.	12
ART. V.—Additions to "The Alceyn Papers." From the origi- nals in the possession of J. F. HERBERT, Esq.	16
ART. VI.—On the Profits of Old Actors. By DRAMATICUS	23
ART. VII.—"The passing measure Pavin." Illustrative of a Pas- sage in <i>Twelfth Night</i> . By J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A.	24
ART. VIII.—Origin of the Curtain Theatre, and mistakes regard- ing it. By THOMAS EDLYNE TOMLINS, Esq.	29
ART. IX.—Mistake by Campbell in his Life of Shakespeare, relative to <i>The Tempest</i> . By L.L.D.	36
ART. X.—Observations on the correct method of punctuating "too too," in <i>Hamlet</i> . By JAMES ORCHARD HALLIWELL, Esq., F.R.S., F.S.A., &c.	39
ART. XI.—Ballad of "The Green Willow," by John Heywood, with the same burden as the song of "The Willow," in <i>Othello</i> . By a BALLAD-MONGER	44
ART. XII.—Court Revels in the Reign of Henry VII. By ALFRED T. GOODWIN, Esq.	47



	PAGE
ART. XIII.—Imitations of Shakespeare by Shelley, in his Tragedy of <i>The Cenci</i> By J B B .	52
ART. XIV.—“Albion Knight;” a fragment of a Moral Play From the original in the library of his Grace the Duke of Devonshire By J PAYNE COLLIER, Esq .	55
ART. XV.—Shakespeare’s Puck. Lines by Thomas Nash, illustrative of a passage in <i>Midsommer Night’s Dream</i> By a BOOK-LOVER .	69
ART. XVI.—Skeltonical Song by John Heywood, the Dramatist. By PHILIP HEYWOOD . . .	71
ART. XVII.—On Shakespeare’s Bust at Stratford-upon-Avon, and proposal for restoring it to its primitive state . . .	74
ART. XVIII.—On a poem attributed to Thomas Nash By G L .	76
ART. XIX.—“I’m to be married o’ Sunday,” a Ballad illustrative of a passage in <i>The Taming of the Shrew</i> . By F S A .	80
ART. XX.—Early Rarity of the Works of Robert Greene. By T. J. SCOTT, Esq. . . . .	83
ART. XXI.—Who was “Will, my Lord of Leycester’s Jestin’g Player?” By JOHN BRUCE, Esq, F.S.A. . . . .	88
ART. XXII.—Corrections of Shakespeare’s Text, suggested by Judge Blackstone, &c. From his Original MS. By THOMAS EDLYNE TOMLINS, Esq. . . . .	96
ART. XXIII.—Imgo Jones, and his Office under the Crown with extracts from the Accounts of the Paymaster of the Crown Works, preserved in the Audit Office By PETER CUNNINGHAM, Esq. . . . .	103
ART. XXIV.—On the word “Duedame,” in <i>As you Like it</i> By JAMES ORCHARD HALLIWELL, Esq, F.R.S., F.S.A., &c. . . . .	109
ART. XXV.—On the Signature of John Shakespeare. William Shakespeare’s Papers. By ROBERT BIGSBY, LL.D., F.S.A., &c . . . . .	111

THE  
SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY'S  
PAPERS.

---

ART. I.—*Dogberry and his Associates. Arrest of the Conspirators with Mary Queen of Scots.*

While I was composing the "Life of Shakespeare," Mr. Lemon, of the State Paper Office, favoured me with a communication amusingly illustrative of one of the comedies of our great dramatist; for which, however, as my work had proceeded so far, I could not conveniently find a place: it relates to "Much Ado about Nothing;" and if I had had what follows in my possession when I wrote the "Introduction" to that play, I should in all probability have there inserted it. As I had not the benefit of it at that time, I have thought that it would not form an inappropriate addition to the Papers of the Shakespeare Society.

It is an original letter, entirely in the handwriting of Lord Burghley, dated from Theobald's on the 10th August, 1586, only two months and a day before the meeting of the Commissioners at Rotheringay for the trial of Mary Queen of Scots. The letter, which is addressed to Secretary Walsingham, relates to some circumstances preparatory to this event, when a watch was set, and the "ways laid," according to the ordinary expression of that day, for the capture of conspirators

It illustrates Shakespeare in this manner: it gives us a curious account of the proceedings of the Dogberries of that day for the arrest of suspected persons, and shows in some degree how much to the life our great dramatist drew the characters he introduced. Lord Burghley was on his way to his house at Theobald's, "in his coach," when he observed at Enfield such inefficient and Dogberry-like arrangements made for the seizure of the parties implicated, one of whom was only to be recognized by having "a hooked nose," that, instantly on his arrival at home, he despatched the letter in question to Sir Francis Walsingham, complaining of the absurd mode in which the public service was to be executed, thereby enabling offenders rather to escape than to be brought to justice. The extreme speed with which he was anxious that his communication to the Secretary should be conveyed may be judged from the superscription, in the following singular form.

"To the R. Honorable my verie loving frend, Sir Francis  
Walsingham, Knight, Hir Ma<sup>ties</sup> Principall Secretary,  
at London.

	hast	} Post
	hast	
	hast	
"W. BURGHELEY."	hast	

We may presume, after this "post-haste" injunction, that the messenger lost no time in placing the letter in Walsingham's hands. In order to render its contents perfectly intelligible, we must premise (and here we are indebted to Mr. Lemon's research and acuteness) that by 10th August, 1586, the ministers of Elizabeth were in full possession of the details of a plot by Anthony Babington, in concert with the Queen of Scots, to murder the Queen of England; and they had just arrived at that point, when the arrest or escape of any of the conspirators would have been of the utmost consequence. Ballard, one of the principal

conspirators, had been taken up on the 4th of August, (six days before the date of Lord Burghley's letter) which instantly alarmed Babington and the rest, who therefore fled in all directions. These were the parties who, according to Lord Burghley, were "missing" on the 10th August, and to arrest whom the Dogberries of Enfield were upon the watch, all the means of identification they apparently possessed being that one of the accused individuals had "a hooked nose." It is worthy of note also that Babington and some of his co-conspirators were arrested on the very day that Lord Burghley's letter bears date; and hence we may infer, perhaps, that the description, however defective, was sufficient.

"Sir—As I cam from London homward, in my coche, I sawe at every townes end the number of x or xii, standyng, with long staves, and untill I cam to Enfeld I thought no other of them, but that they had stayd for avoyding of the rayne, or to drynk at some alehowse, for so they did stand under pentyces [penthouses] at ale howses. But at Enfeld fyndyng a dosen in a plump, whan ther was no rayne, I bethought my self that they war appointed as watchmen, for the apprehendyng of such as are missyng; and theruppon I called some of them to me apart, and asked them wherfor they stood there? and one of them answered, 'To take 3 yong men.' And demandyng how they shuld know the persons, one answered with these wordes: 'Marry, my Lord, by intelligence of ther favor.' What meane you by that?' quoth I. 'Marry,' sayd they, 'one of the partyes hath a hooked nose.'—'And have you,' quoth I, 'no other mark?'—'No,' sayth they. And then I asked who apoynted them; and they answered one Bankes, a Head Constable, whom I willed to be sent to me. Suerly, sir, who so ever had the chardge from yow hath used the matter negligently; for these watchmen stand so oppenly in plumps, as no suspected person will come neare them; and if they be no better instructed but to fynd 3 persons by one of them havyng

a hooked nose, they may miss therof. And thus I thought good to advertise yow, that the Justyces that had the chardg, as I thynk, may use the matter more circumspectly.

From Theobaldes, 10 Aug., 1586.

Your's, assuredly,  
W. BURGHLEY."

It will be observed that the constables are represented by Lord Burghley as standing *under penthouses, to avoid the rain*, and it will be recollected that there is in "Much ado about Nothing" a singular, but of course merely accidental, coincidence of expression :—

"Stand thee, close, then, under this penthouse, for it drizzles rain ;"

although these words are put into the mouth of Borachio to Conrade, and not assigned to any of the "watchmen."

The letter of Lord Burghley is, as we have remarked, entirely in his handwriting ; and as it has never yet been printed, and relates to an event of so much historical importance as the trial and execution of Mary Queen of Scots, it is on all accounts more worthy of insertion.

J. PAYNE COLLIER.

Kensington, 6 February, 1844.

N. B. The event to which this letter relates occurred at the very season when I have supposed Shakespeare first came to London from Stratford upon Avon.

---

•

ART. II.—*Remarks on the similarity of a passage in Marlowe's Edward II. and one in the First Part of the Contention.*

Malone, in his Essay on the Chronological Order of Shakespeare's plays, has given us a very imperfect argument in support of his latest opinion, that Marlowe was the author of the "True Tragedie," and probably also of the first part of the "Contention," merely adducing two passages of remote similarity, but sufficient, in his estimation, to overthrow his previous arguments in favour of attributing the authorship of them to Peele and Greene. The two well known lines—

"What, will the aspiring blood of Lancaster  
Sink into the ground? I thought it would have mounted."

are compared by Farmer to two others in Edward II.—

"———Scorning that the lowly earth  
Should drink his blood, mounts up to the air."

The same thought, it will be observed, though expressed in different language and under different circumstances. Malone also found the expression "aspiring Lancaster" in Marlowe's play; and on these coincidences, if they can be so called, he has at once jumped to the conclusion that Marlowe was the writer of both dramas, in opposition to the results he had arrived at with so much learning in his celebrated Essay on the three parts of Henry VI.

I have recently observed a far more important evidence than either of these, and as it seems to have entirely escaped the notice of the critics, it may be considered of sufficient importance for a short paper for the Shakespeare Society. In Marlowe's Edward II., act ii., sc., 2, occur the following lines—

"The wild Oneyl, with swarms of Irish kerns.  
Lives uncontroll'd within the English pale."

Now, in the first part of the "Contention," repr. p. 37, nearly the same lines occur, with merely an alteration to agree with the context—

"The wilde Onele, my Lorde. is up in armes.  
With troupes of Irish kernes, that, uncontrol'd.  
Doth plant themselves within the English pale."

This, it is evident, is far too near an approximation to the other to have been the result of chance, nor could we for a moment adopt such a supposition. It shows clearly enough, that there is some history attached to the authorship of these plays, I mean the first and second parts of the "Contention," that still remains to be unravelled; and it considerably strengthens the argument by which I endeavoured to prove, that the ground-work was not by Shakspeare, however unwilling we may be to believe that our poet was not the writer of a part of them. Taken in connexion with this last found evidence of the hand of Marlowe having been engaged in them, the similarities adduced by Malone are by no means devoid of weight. I may also add another, which occurs only a few lines afterwards—

"The haughty Dane commands the narrow seas."

In the "True Tragedie," 1595, repr. p. 124, we have—

"Sterne Fawconbridge *commands the narrow seas.*"

This may probably be of still less importance than those adduced by Malone, but I cannot help thinking that any reader who will regard these similarities impartially, more especially in connexion with the one just discovered, which could not by any possibility have been the result of chance, and who, by the bye, has not entirely eschewed verbal criticism, will come to the conclusion that the probabilities are now greatly in favour of Marlowe being the original author, or at least one of the original authors of the two dramas upon which Shakspeare

founded the second and third parts of Henry VI. If we take Marlowe's Edward II. in preference to his other plays, and, as Marlowe died in 1593, and the two parts of the "Contention" were probably not written much earlier, it is clearly right to do so, there will be less difficulty in believing him to be the author of many parts, I will not say all, of the last mentioned dramas. At all events, I believe I have materially assisted my previous theory concerning these plays, even against those who will allow no arguments but those which result from comparison, and no similarities of language that militate from their own opinions.

Malone pursued the plan of placing asterisks to all the lines which he considered Shakespeare's own additions in the two parts of Henry VI. When he so distinguished the following one in 2 Henry VI., act i., sc. 3—

"She bears a duke's revenues on her back,"

he had probably forgotten that Marlowe, in the above mentioned play, has—

"He wears a lord's revenue on his back."

And other similarities of language may be traced. This last coincidence is not found in the original play, and if we place reliance upon it, it considerably mystifies the argument.

J. O. HALLIWELL.

---

.



ART III.—*Letter from Ben Jonson to the Earl of Newcastle, and other matters relating to the Poet's family.*

The following letter from Ben Jonson to his “noble patron by excellence,” as he calls him, is now printed for the first time. Mr. Gifford refers to it (p. clxii) as “a petitionary letter written with some humour as well as spirit.” It is the best begging letter I remember to have read.

*A Letter to the Earl of Newcastle.*

[Harl MSS. No 4955, fol. 204 ]

“My Noble and most honor'd Lord,

“I myself being no substance, am faine to trouble you with shadows, or (what is less) an Apologue or Fable in a dream. I being stricken with the Palsy in the year 1628, had by Sir Thomas Badger some few months since a Fox sent me for a present, which creature by handling I endeavoured to make tame, as well for the abating of my disease as the delight I took in speculation of his nature. It happened this present year, 1631, and this very week, being the week ushering Christmas, and this Tuesday morning in a dream, (and morning dreams are truest) to have one of my servants come up to my bedside, and tell me—‘Master, Master, the Fox speaks!’ Whereat (no thought) I started, and troubled went down into the yard, to witness the wonder. There I found my Reynard, in his tennement—the Tub I had hired for him—cynically expressing his own lot to be condemned to the house of a Poet, where nothing was to be seen but the bare walls, and not any thing heard but the noise of a saw, dividing billets all the week long, more to keep the family in exercise than to comfort any person there with fire, save the paralytick master; and went on in this way as the Fox seemed the better Fabler of the two. I, his master, began to give him good words and stroke him, but Reynard.

barking, told me those would not do, I must give him meat. I angry called him stinking vermin. He replied, ‘Look into your cellar, which is your larder too, you’ll find a worse vermin there.’ When presently calling for a light, methought I went down and found all the floor turned up, as if a colony of moles had been there, or an army of Salt-petre men. Whereupon I sent presently into Tuttle Street for the King’s most excellent Mole-catcher to relieve me, and hunt them. But he, when he came, and viewed the place, and had well marked the earth turned up, took a handfull, smelt it, and said : ‘Master, it is not in my power to destroy this vermin ; the King, or some good man of a Noble Nature, must help you. This kind of Mole is called a WANT, which will destroy you and your family, if you prevent not the working of it in time. And therefore God keep you and send you health.’

“The interpretation both of the Fable and dream is, that I waking do find WANT the worst and most working vermin in a house, and therefore my noble Lord, and next the King my best Patron, I am necessitated to tell it you. I am not so impudent to borrow any sum of your lordship, for I have no faculty to pay ; but my needs are such, and so urging, as I do beg what your bounty can give me, in the name of Good Letters, and the bond of an ever grateful and acknowledging servant

“To your honour,

“BEN JONSON.

“Westminster, 20<sup>mo</sup> Dec<sup>bris</sup>. 1631.

“Yesterday the barbarous Court of Aldermen have withdrawn their Chandlerly Pension for Verjuice and Mustard, 33<sup>h</sup> 6 8.”

The maiden name of Ben Jonson’s wife has not transpired, and we know nothing more about her than the information preserved by Drummond : “He married a wyfe who was a shrew yet honest : 5 yeers he had not bedded with her, but

remained with my Lord Aulbanie." (*Conversations*, p. 19.)  
Epigram 22 is entitled "On my first daughter."

"Here lies, to each her parents ruth,  
Mary, the daughter of their youth."

(*Gifford*, viii., 163)

She was only six months old when she died :

"At six months end she parted hence."

Epigram 45 is entitled "On my first son :"

"Farewell, thou child of my right hand, and joy."

He died at the early age of seven :

"Seven years thou wert lent to me."

(*Gifford*, viii., 175.)

The poet's "eldest sone, then a child and at London," (*Conr.*, p. 20) died of the plague in 1603, when the father was in the country, at Sir Robert Cotton's. This, therefore, is the son the father has celebrated in enduring poetry.

In the parish register of St. Martin's in the Fields I discovered the baptism of Benjamin Jonson, the son of Ben, and what I believe to be the burial of the poet's daughter Mary. That the poet had a son named Benjamin was the belief of Whalley. I transcribe the entries as I found them :

"1593. *November 17. Septa fuit Maria Johnson peste.*"

"1610. *Aprilis 6. Bapt fuit Benjamin Johnson fil Ben :"*

Fuller's researches found the far-famed father "a little child, in Hartshorn Lane, near Charing Cross ;" and Gifford tells us (p. v.) that he was sent, "when of a proper age, to a private school in the church of St. Martin in the Fields."

The plague of 1603 committed fearful havoc in the then thinly populated parish of St. Martin's. Eight of the name of Jonson were buried in that year in the church or churchyard of St. Martin's. The christian name of the poet's eldest son

has not been ascertained ; it is believed to have been Benjamin, but on very insufficient grounds.

“Jonson’s wife,” says Gifford, p. xxiii, “was dead when he visited Scotland in 1618.” The following entry from the same Register may just possibly record her burial.

“8 December, 1617 *Sepult fuit Elizab. Johnson.*”

This is brief enough ; but the same Register records the burial of Farquhar with still greater obscurity :

“23 May, 1707. *George Falkware.*”

The entry would have defied recognition, but for the previous knowledge we possess of Farquhar’s dying in that month and year, and of his burial in the churchyard of St. Martin’s.

There cannot be a doubt, I conceive, that Ben Jonson had a son named Benjamin baptized at St. Martin’s on the 6th April, 1610. I may be wrong in my other conjectures, and could hazard more, but fear that I have already hazarded enough. Conjectures provoke inquiry, and occasionally elicit the truth.

The supposition of Malone and Gifford, that Ben Jonson’s mother was married at St. Martin’s on the 17th November, 1575, to Mr. Thomas Fowler, is completely overthrown by a note in Mr. Collier’s recent *Life of Shakespeare*, p. clxvi. It is a pity to disturb received opinions, and give the lie to a fact of fifty years’ standing. I almost regret the circumstance, and that I was the innocent author of so barren a discovery. To the information contained in that note I have now to add that the *supposed* mother of Ben Jonson was buried in St. Martin’s on the 2nd of April, 1590.

I have to tender my best thanks to the Rev. Sir Henry Dukinfield, Bart., the present Vicar of St. Martin’s in the Fields, for the free access allowed me to the valuable registers of that parish.

P. CUNNINGHAM.

4 June, 1844.

ART. IV.—*Ballad illustrative of Romeo and Juliet.*

In "Romeo and Juliet," act iv. sc. 5, Peter, after urging the musicians to play the tune of "Heart's Ease," assigns as a reason that he wishes it as a contrast to the ballad of "My heart is full of woe," which his own heart plays in consequence of the supposed death of Juliet. Steevens, in a note, informs us that "My heart is full of woe" is the burden of a ballad called "A pleasant new ballad of two Lovers;" but he quotes no more of it, and we look in vain for it in Percy's "Reliques," among the pieces illustrative of Shakespeare. Mr. Chappell, in his "Collection of National English airs, ii., 137, in reference to "Heart's Ease," and "My heart is full of woe," quotes the passage from "Romeo and Juliet," and adds in a note two lines with which the ballad begins, but I have met with no part of it elsewhere. As the whole of it is clearly worth preserving, both for its own sake and because it is mentioned by our great dramatic poet, and as a copy of it happens to be in my possession, I subjoin it as a small contribution to the Papers of the Shakespeare Society.

"Romeo and Juliet" having been first printed in 1597, the ballad must have been anterior to that date: the manuscript comedy of "Misogonus," written by a person of the name of Richards, (according to Mr. Collier, in his "Hist. of Engl. Dram. Poetry," ii., 470,) prior to 1560, contains a song "to the tune of Heart's Ease," and very possibly "My heart is full of woe" is as old, although my copy of it is of the commencement of the seventeenth century. It is in black letter, and was "printed by the assigns of Thomas Symcocke," who, I believe, had a patent for the publication of such productions early in the reign of James I. It is ornamented by two woodcuts, representing a gentleman and a lady of rank, both coarse in their execution, but one much inferior to the other.

*A pleasant new ballad of Two Lovers.*

To a pleasant new tune.

Complaine, my lute, complaine on him,  
That stayes so long away ;  
He promis'd to be here ere this,  
But still unkind doth stay.  
But now the proverbe true I finde,  
Once out of sight then out of minde.  
Hey, hoe ! my heart is full of woe !

Peace, lyer, peace ! it is not so,  
He will by and by be here ;  
But every one that is in love  
Thinkes every houre a yeare.  
Hark ! Hark ! me thinks one knocke.  
Run quickly, then, and turne the locke :  
Then, farewell all my care and woe !

Come, gallant, now, come, loyterer,  
For I must chide with thee ;  
But yet I will forgive thee once :  
Come, sit thee downe by mee.  
Faire lady, rest yourselfe content,  
I will endure your punishment,  
And then we shall be friends againe.

For every houre that I have stayd  
So long from you away,  
A thousand kisses I will give ;  
Receive them, ready pay.  
And if we chance to count anisse,  
Againe wee'le reckon every kisse ;  
For he is blest that's punisht so.

And if those thousand kisses, then,  
    We chance to count aright,  
We shall not neede to come againe  
    Till we in bed doe light.  
And then be sure that thou shalt have  
Thy reckoning just as thou shalt crave ;  
    So shall we still agree as one.

And thus they spent the silent night,  
    In sweet delightfull sport,  
Till Phœbus with his beames so bright  
    From out the fiery port,  
Did blush to see the sweet content  
In sable night so vainly spent,  
    Betwixt these lovers two.

And then this gallant did perswade,  
    That he might now begone.  
Sweet-heart, quoth he, I am afraid  
    That I have stayd too long.  
And wilt thou, then, begone, quoth she,  
And wilt no longer stay with me ?  
    Then, welcome all my care and woe.

And then she took her lute in hand,  
    And thus began to play :  
Her heart was faint, she could not stand,  
    But on her bed she lay.  
And art thou gone, my love ? quoth she,  
Complaine, my lute, complaine with me,  
    Untill that he doth come againe.

If I am not much mistaken, the Members of the Shakespeare Society will be obliged to me for perpetuating such a gracefully

written relic of antiquity, which in point of style and sentiment is hardly unworthy even of the great poet who has only quoted a part of the last line of the first stanza. No hint is anywhere given who might be its author, and it is only mentioned, that I am aware of, by Steevens and by Mr. Chappell, who does not state from whence he derived his information in this instance; perhaps from the very copy of the ballad now before me, for it was once in his hands. His two volumes are full of new and interesting matter relating to the old ballad literature of our country, and to the music to which ballads were sung.

ANDREW BARTON.

PS. I ought to add that the same broadside which contains the preceding ballad has another upon it, entitled "The Lover's Complaint for the Losse of his love," with a woodcut of a shepherd. It is also "To a pleasant new tune," but it has no connexion with Shakespeare or his works.

A. B.

Bristol, January 16, 1844.



ART. V.—*Additions to "The Alleyn Papers"*

In the Introduction to "The Alleyn Papers," printed by the Shakespeare Society, it is stated that, in consequence of the little value in the last century supposed to belong to the documents preserved at Dulwich College, many of them disappeared, and that, although most of them have found their way back again, there are, no doubt, some still in hands which hardly know they possess them. Such is precisely my case: the publication of "The Alleyn Papers," and the curious matters they contain, led me to search my own receptacles of "unconsidered trifles," in hopes of finding something that might answer the purpose, and be worthy of insertion among the proposed miscellany of the Shakespeare Society. My father and my grandfather had got a good many small manuscripts together, but generally relating to heraldry, or to some of "the six follies of science," as Mr. Pettigrew calls them, in his not less learned than amusing volume recently printed, on "the Superstitions connected with Medicine and Surgery." However, among them I discovered two or three of a different kind, relating to poets, poetry, and players, and copies of these I subjoin in order to contribute what I can to the general stock of information. The first is a scrap from Robert Daborne, the dramatist, whose name occurs so often in "The Alleyn Papers," and it appears to be connected in subject with the note on p. 63 of that work; and we may gather from it that Daborne had mortgaged his estate. The Mr. Benfield mentioned in it must have been Robert Benfield, the actor, of whom we hear frequently at about the time of Shakespeare's retirement from the stage. The note is upon a small square piece of paper, and to whom it was addressed is not stated, but we may perhaps conclude that it was to Henslowe, who had advanced small sums to Daborne

upon the security of his property, as well as of the plays he was to write for the company, in the receipts of which the old manager was a sharer. I copy it *literatim*.

"Sr, I hav bin befor the Doctor, and acknowledged the deed with the chardg of 13<sup>s</sup>. I pray, Sr, send me the 20<sup>s</sup> you promysed, and for the mans name, my cozin will carry it ouer himself without your trouble. Sr, the assurance is such as noe alderman can giv you better, and for M<sup>r</sup> Benfield, we hav made an absolute end with him to your content: so I rest,

"Yrs to command,

"ROB. DABORNE.

"The deed is acknowledged, and the end is made, and with M<sup>r</sup> Benfield: I pray you send him the monye.

"JHO FOSTER."

It is no where stated, that I am aware of, what "Jho. Foster" had to do with the transaction: he was possibly the scrivener who had drawn the deed; but the whole, with the exception of that name, is in the handwriting of Daborne.

The next scrap is subscribed by William Rowley, the dramatist and actor, by Joseph Taylor, the very celebrated performer, who until lately was supposed to have been the original Hamlet, (see "The Alleyn Papers," p. 86,) and by Robert Pallant, also a player of great repute. Other names of members of the company no doubt followed these three, but they have been torn away, and even the signature of Pallant is not entire: the address is also wanting, but it seems to relate to some transaction between either Henslowe and the company, or Alleyn and the company, respecting the purchase of the wardrobe or part of it, for the payment for which the

members of the association were to give bond : it runs precisely thus :—

“ Wee are well contented with that agreement which was concluded betweene you and our fellow Tailor, which was five and fiftye pounds. Wee desire that the clothes may be here to morrow morning, and bondes shall be scalde for the paiement of it.

“ WILLIAM ROWLEY.

“ JOSEPH TAYLOR.

“ ROB<sup>t</sup> PALLANT.”

The body of the paper is in the handwriting of Rowley, who puts his name first, while Pallant's name, which comes first in the fac-simile in “The Alleyn Papers,” p. 87, is only third. The location was perhaps merely accidental.

A third paper in my hands is a copy of verses, in the form of an acrostic, addressed by John Day, the distinguished dramatic poet, author of various extant plays, to Thomas Dowton, who had been an actor as early as 1597, whose name stands second among the players of Prince Henry, in 1603, and who was at the head of the players of the Elector Palatine, in 1612. These dates I take from the “History of English Dramatic Poetry and the Stage,” i. p. 351, 381, 395; and from the tenor of what follows we may believe that while the actor had grown rich, the poet had continued poor, and by means of these lines had made some charitable appeal to him. Every fact that has come to light serves to shew that the profession of an actor in the reigns of Elizabeth and James I. was very profitable; but the dramatists of that time, either from the low price at which they sold their productions, or from habitual carelessness, did not generally partake of the riches acquired by mere actors: this is pretty much the case in our own times. Day's lines are as follows :—

Among those many Monuments his Quill  
 Has so reviv'd, helping now to fill  
 A place (with those) in his *Survey* : in which  
 He has a Monument, more faire, more rich,  
 Than polisht Stones could make him, where he lies  
 Though dead, still living, and in That, nere dyes.

*Obiit Anno Ætatis suæ 80. Domini 1633.*

*Augusti 10."*

We derive the preceding from "The Survey of London, by Stow, A. M., H. D., &c." 1633, folio, p. 869;<sup>1</sup> so that not only was the subject of it dead, but his monument had probably been put up, and inscribed, before that edition of the work was published.

Of Munday's private life, when he married, (if indeed, he married at all) or how many children he left behind him, we know nothing; and it is remarkable, considering his celebrity, and the number of works he published, how rarely he is mentioned by his contemporaries.

<sup>1</sup> The Editor is indebted for it to his accurate and learned friend, Mr. Bolton Corney, who has also enabled him to append to the present Introduction some important and well-digested information respecting the impressions of Stow's "Survey" in 1618 and 1633.

## LIST OF ANTHONY MUNDAY'S WORKS.

ARRANGED ACCORDING TO DATES.

I. The Defence of Povertie against the Desire of worldly Riches, dialogue-wise: collected by Anthonie Mundaye.

[Only known from the Registers of the Company of Stationers, where it was licensed, precisely in this form, to John Charlwood on 18th November, 1577. See "Extracts," ii., 49.]

II. Galien of France.

[Mentioned in the preliminary matter to the "Mirror of Mutability," 1579, as having been already printed, and dedicated by Munday to the Earl of Oxford. Not entered at Stationers' Hall, but probably printed by John Alde, or John Charlwood.]

III. The Mirrour of Mutabilitie, or principall part of the Mirrour for Magistrates. Describing the fall of divers famous Princes, and other memorable Personages. Selected out of the Sacred Scriptures by Antony Munday, and dedicated to the Right Honourable the Earle of Oxenford. Imprinted at London by J. Alde, and are to be solde by Richard Ballard, at Saint Magnus Corner. 1579. 4to.

[Licensed 10th October, 1579: see "Extracts Stat. Reg.," ii., 100. Only two copies seem to have been preserved.]

IV. The pain of Pleasure. In Verse. By Ant. Munday. The Rev. Dr. Farmer, Master of Emanuel Coll., Camb. 1580. 4to.

[This title is from Herbert's "Ames," iii., 1337, as the first work printed by Henry Car, or Carre. Entered in the Stationers' Registers

on 9th September, 1578, as "compiled by N. Britten:" see "Extracts," ii., 67. Herbert must have seen Dr. Farmer's copy.]

V. Zelauto. The Fountaine of Fame erected in an orcharde of amorous adventures, by Ant. Munday. 1580. 4to.

[From Ritson, ("Bibl. Poet.," p. 282) where it is again inserted, under the title of "Zelauto. The fountaine of Fame. 1580." It was not entered in the Stationers' Registers; but no doubt Ritson had good authority for his statement.]

VI. A ballat made by Anthony Munday, of then-couragement of an English soldior to his fellowe mates. 1580.

[Thus licensd in the Stationers' Registers to John Charlwood, on 8th March, 1579-80: "Extracts," ii., 109. No copy, in print or in MS., is known, but it was doubtless a broadside.]

VII. A view of sundry Examples. Reporting many straunge murthers, sundry persons perjured, Signes and tokens of Gods anger towards us. What straunge and monstrous Children have of late beene borne:—And all memorable murthers since the murther of maister Saunders by George Browne, to this present and bloody murther of Abell Bourne, Hosyer, who dwelled in Newgate Market. 1580. Also a short discourse of the late Earthquake, the sixt of Aprill. Gathered by A. M.—Imprinted at London for William Wright, and are to be sold at the long shop, adjoyning vnto S. Mildreds Church in the Poultrie. 4to.

[Not hitherto known, nor inserted in any list of Anthony Munday's productions. It was not entered in the Stationers' Registers. The murder of Abel Bourne occurred in 1580.]

VIII. A breefe discourse of the taking of Edm. Campion and divers other Papists in Barkeshire. Gathered by A. M. Imprinted at London for William Wright, and are to be solde at his shoppe in the Poultrie: the middle shoppe in the rowe, adjoyning to Saint Mildreds Church. 1581. 8vo.

[Not entered in the Stationers' Registers; but several copies of it are extant. Its statements were disputed by George Elliot.]

IX. A Discoverie of Edmund Campion and his Confederates, their most horrible and traiterous practises, against her Majesties most royall person, and the Realme. Wherein may be seene, how thorowe the whole course of their Araignment: they were notably convicted in every cause. Whereto is added, the Execution of Edmund Campion, Raphe Sherwin, and Alexander Brian, executed at Tiborne the 1 of December. Published by A. M., sometime the Popes Scholler, allowed in the Seminarie at Roome amongst them, &c. Seene and allowed. Imprinted at London for Edward White, dwelling at the little North doore of Paules, at the signe of the Gunne, the 29 of Janua., 1582. 8vo.

[Entered in the Stationers' Registers to Edward White, on 12th March, 1582, although dated on the title-page six weeks earlier. "Extracts," ii., 162.]

X. A breefe and true reporte of the Execution of certaine Traytours at Tiborne, the xxviii and xxx dayes of Maye. 1582. Gathered by A. M., who was there present. *Honos alit Artes*, &c. Imprinted at London, for William Wright, and are to be solde at

his shop, adjoyning unto S. Mildreds Church in the Poultrie, the middle shop in the rowe. 1582. 4to.

[Entered in the Stationers' Registers on 31st May, 1582, where Anthony Munday's name is inserted at length, as the author of it. "Extracts," ii, 164.]

XI. The English Romaine Lyfe: Discovering the Lives of the Englishmen at Roome, the orders of the English Seminarie, the dissention betweene the Englishmen and the Welshmen, the banishing of the Englishmen out of Roome, the Popes sending for them againe: a reporte of many of the paltrie Reliques in Roome, their Vautes under the grounde, their holy Pilgrimages, &c. Written by A. M., sometime the Popes Scholler in the Seminarie among them. *Honos alit Artes*.—Seene and allowed. Imprinted at London by John Charlwood for Nicholas Ling, &c. 1582. 4to.

[Entered in the Stationers' Registers to J. Charlewoode and N. Lynge, on 19th June, 1582: "Extracts," ii, 168. One of the least rare of Munday's productions.]

XII. A breefe Aunswer made unto two seditious Pamphlets, the one printed in French, and the other in English. Contayning a defence of Edmund Campion and his complices, their most horrible and unnaturall Treasons against her Majestie and the Realme. By A. M. *Honos alit artes*. Imprinted at London for Edward White, dwelling at the little North doore of Paules, at the signe of the Gunne. 1582. 8vo.

[Some copies purport to have been "Imprinted at London by John Charlwood:" see Bridgewater Catalogue, 4to., 1837, p. 202. Entered in



the Stationers' Registers to Edward White on 12th March, 1582; but Charlwood no doubt had an interest in it. "Extracts," ii., 161.]

XIII. The sweete Sobbes and amorous Complaints of Sheppardes and Nymphes, in a fancye composed by An. Munday. 1583.

[Entered in the Stationers' Registers to John Charlwood, on 19th August, 1583, but not known to exist. "Extracts," ii., 182.]

XIV. Fidele and Fortun[io]. The deceipts in love discoursed in a Comedie of two Italyan gent[lemen], translated into English. 4to.

[Two copies only known, one with a dedication subscribed A. M., but the title-pages wanting in both. Entered in the Stationers' Registers to Thomas Hackett, on 12th November, 1584: "Extracts," ii., 193. The heroes of this drama have sometimes, by mistake, been called Fidele and Fortunatus.]

XV. A Watch-woord to Englande to beware of traytors and tretcherous practises, which have beene the overthrowe of many famous kingdomes and common weales. Written by a faithfull affected freend to his country, who desireth God to blesse it from Traytours and their secret conspiracyes. Seene and allowed, &c.—London, Printed for Tho. Hacket, and are to be solde at his shop in Lumbard streete, under the signe of the Popes head. 1584. 4to.

[Dedicated by A. M. to Queen Elizabeth; but not entered at Stationers' Hall. This work is well known.]

XVI. Ant. Monday, his godly Exercise for Christian Families, containing an order of Praiers for Morning and Evening, with a little Catechism betweene the Man and his Wife. London. 1586. 8vo.

[This title is derived from Andrew Maunsell's Catalogue, 1595: the

work is not now extant, nor does it appear to have been entered in the Registers of the Stationers' Company.]

XVII. A Banquet of Daintie Conceits. Furnished with verie delicate and choyse inventions, to delight their mindes who take pleasure in Musique, and therewithall to sing sweete Ditties, either to the Lute, Bandora, Virginalles, or anie other instrument, &c. Written by A. M., Servaunt to the Queenes most excellent Majestie. *Honos alit artes.* At London. Printed by I. C. for Edwarde White, and are to be sold at the signe of the Gunne, at the little North doore of Paules. Anno 1588. 4to.

[The dedication is signed, Anthony Monday. Entered in the Stationers' Registers to Thomas Hacket, on 6th July, 1584, and perhaps there was an earlier edition than any now known. See "Extracts," ii., 187; and "British Bibliographer," ii., 137.]

XVIII. Palmerin d'Oliva. Translated by A. M. John Charlwood. 1588. 4to.

[Bridgewater Catalogue, p. 204. On the 10th March, 1595, William Leake entered "The third book of Palmerin of England, to be printed in English." see the Stationers' Registers. Two parts of "Palmerin of England" were entered by Tho. Creede, assigned to him by W. Wright, on 9th August, 1597.]

XIX. The famous, pleasant, and variable Historie of Palladine of England. Discoursing of honorable Adventures of Knightly deedes of Armes and Chivalrie: enterlaced likewise with the love of sundrie noble personages, &c. Translated out of French by A. M., one of the messengers of her Majesties Chamber. *Patere aut abstine.* At London, Printed by Edward Allde for John Perin, &c. 1588. 4to.

[See the Bridgewater Catalogue, 4to., 1837, p. 203, for a notice of a

copy of this edition. An intended reprint was entered at Stationers' Hall on 12th November, 1596, by Valentine Symys, as "The history of Palladine of England," provided that no other Stationer had a right to it "by former entrance."]

XX. The famous History of Palmendos, son to the most Renowned Palmerin d'Oliva, Emperour of Constantinople, and the Heroick Queen of Tharsus, &c. John Charlwood. 1589. 4to.

[This work is promised in a postscript to Munday's "Palladine of England," 1588: see Bridgewater Catalogue, p. 204. It was entered at Stationers' Hall on 9th January, 1588-9, in the following manner:—

"John Charlwood. Entred for his copie The honorable histories of Palmendos and primaleon of Grece, sonnes to the famous emperor Palmerin d'Olive of Constantinople, devided into vij several bookes or partes."]

XXI. The defence of Contraries. Paradoxes against common opinion, debated in forme of declamations, in place of public censure: only to exercise yong wittes in difficult matters. Wherein is no offence to Gods honour, the estate of Princes, or private mens honest actions: but pleasant recreation to beguile the iniquity of time. Translated out of French by A. M., one of the messengers of her Majesties chamber. *Patere aut abstinere*. Imprinted—by John Windet for him. 1593. 4to.

[From Herbert's "Ames," ii., 1222. See No. xxv. in this list.]

XXII. Amadis de Gaule, the first booke translated by Anthony Munday. 1595. 4to.

[The late Mr. Rodd had an imperfect copy of this impression. It was entered at Stationers' Hall as follows, under date of 15th January, 1588-9, and probably then printed, though no edition so early seems to be known:—

"Edw. Aldee. Entred unto him, the first foure bookes of Amadis de Gaule. To be translated into English"

The second, third, fourth, and fifth books, were entered by John Wolf, on 10th April, 1592; but nothing is said of the first book. The twelve books were entered by Adam Islip and William Morynge, on the 26th October, 1594.]

XXIII. The Second Booke of Amadis de Gaule, containing the description, wonders, and conquest of the Firme-Island. The triumphs and troubles of Amadis, his manifold victories obtained, and sundry services done for King Lisuart: the Kinges ingratitude, and first occasion of those broiles and mortall wars that no small time continued between him and Amadis. Englished by L. P. London, Printed for C. Burbie, and are to be sold at his shop at the Royal Exchange. 1595. 4to.

[L. P. is Lazarus Piot, a name assumed by Anthony Munday, who in 1619 reprinted the translation in his own name. Mr. Rodd had an imperfect copy of this book: see also "Notes and Queries," iv., p. 85, where the preceding title is given, though not with literal accuracy, and a question put, which we have endeavoured to answer.]

XXIV. The Book of John a Kent and John a Cumber. A Comedy.

[Now first printed from the original MS., dated December, 1595.]

XXV. The Orator: Handling a hundred severall Discourses, in forme of Declamations: Some of the Arguments being drawne from Titus Livius and other ancient Writers, the rest of the Authors owne invention: Part of which are of matters happened in our Age. Written in French by Alexander Silvayn, and Englished by L. P. London Printed by Adam Islip. 1596. 4to.

[The dedication is signed, Lazarus Piot. Possibly this is only a reprint, or, more probably, an enlargement of a former work by Anthony

Munday: see No. XXI. The following is an entry in the Stationers' Registers of what appears to be another, and an earlier, translation of the same work, by E. A., (*i.e.*, Edward Aggas) one of the booksellers who sent it for license: the date is 25th August, 1590:—

“Edward Aggas.

“John Wolf. Allowed for their copie, &c., certen Tragicall cases, conteyninge LV histories, with their severall declamations, both accusative and defensive, written by Alexander Vandenbush, alias Sylven, translated into Englishe by E. A.”

Edward Aggas translated other books from the French. The preceding may possibly be the entry of No. XXI.; and Munday's version, in 1596, consists of a hundred Declamations and Answers.]

XXVI. *Mother Redcap*, a play, by Anthony Munday and Michael Drayton.

[Philip Henslowe, in his “Diary,” p. 106, mentions this drama under the dates of 22nd December, 1597, and 3rd January, 1598. On 10th March, 1595, Tho. Creede entered at Stationers' Hall “a book intituled *Mother Redd Capp*, her last will and Testament.” Perhaps the play was founded upon this “book,” or it might be the play itself.]

XXVII. The first part of *Robin Hood*, a play, by Anthony Munday.

[So called by Henslowe, in his “Diary,” p. 118, under date 15th February, 1598. It was printed in 1601, under the title of “*The Downfall of Robert Earle of Huntington*,” &c : see the Supplementary Volume to “*Dodsley's Old Plays*.” “A pastorall plesant Comedie of *Robin Hood and Little John*” was licensed at Stationers' Hall to Edward White, on 14th May, 1594; but it may have been merely a re-publication of “*The playe of Robyn Hode*,” printed by Copland.]

XXVIII. The second part of *Robin Hood*, by Anthony Munday and Henry Chettle.

[See Henslowe's “Diary,” p. 119, where it is inserted under date 28th February, 1598, and imputed to Chettle as well as Munday. It is reprinted from the edition of 1601, in the Supplementary Volume to “*Dodsley's Old Plays*.”]

XXIX. The Funeral of *Richard Cordelion*, a play

by Anthony Munday, Henry Chettle, Robert Wilson, and Michael Drayton.

[In Henslowe's "Diary," p. 124, this play is mentioned under date of 13th June, 1598.]

XXX. Valentine and Orson, a play, by Anthony Munday and Richard Hathway.

[See Henslowe's "Diary," p. 128, where this drama is introduced under date of 19th July, 1598. A play (called in the entry "an enterlude") with this title was licensed at Stationers' Hall on 23rd May, 1596, as having been performed "by her Majesty's players." It may have been produced on the stage while the company under Henslowe was acting in conjunction with the Queen's actors.]

XXXI. Chance Medley, a play, by Anthony Munday, Robert Wilson, and Thomas Dekker.

[Mentioned in Henslowe's "Diary," p. 132, under date of 19th August, 1598.]

XXXII. The first part of the Life of Sir John Oldcastle, a play, by Anthony Munday, Michael Drayton, Robert Wilson, and Richard Hathway.

[Printed in 1600, some copies being with, and some without, the name of Shakespeare on the title-page, without the mention of any other authors. It is assigned to the true writers in Henslowe's "Diary," pp. 158 and 235, under date of 16th October, 1599.]

XXXIII. Owen Tudor, a play, by Anthony Munday, Michael Drayton, Richard Hathway, and Robert Wilson.

[Henslowe, in his "Diary," p. 163, attributes it to the above authors, under date of 10th January, 1599.]

XXXIV. Fair Constance of Rome, a play, by Anthony Munday, Richard Hathway, Robert Wilson, and Michael Drayton.

[Assigned to them by Henslowe's "Diary," p. 171, under date of 14th June, 1600.]

XXXV. The Rising of Cardinal Wolsey, a play, by Anthony Munday, Michael Drayton, Henry Chettle, and Wentworth Smith.

[See Henslowe's "Diary," p. 202, under date of 10th October, 1601.]

XXXVI. The strangest Adventure that ever happened: either in the ages passed or present. Containing a discourse concerning the successe of the King of Portugall, Dom Sebastian, from the time of his voyage into Affricke, when he was lost in the battell against the infidels in the yeare 1578, unto the sixt of January this present 1601. All first done in Spanish, then in French, and now lastly translated into English, &c.—London, Printed for Frances Henson, dwelling in the Black-Friers. 1601.

[Anthony Munday puts his initials at the end of the dedication to the Lord Mayor, (Rider) &c., of London. On 3rd February, 1598, John Wolf had a license at Stationers' Hall for "a booke called Straunge Newes of the Retourne of Don Sebastian, Kinge of Portugall, &c., together with a terrible deluge in Rome at their Christmas last." It was doubtless a different work on the same supposed event.]

XXXVII. Palmerin of England. Translated by Anthony Munday. 1602.

[This translation was entered as early as 13th February, 1581, (see "Extr. from Stat. Registers," ii., 138) and perhaps then printed, but no edition earlier than 1602 appears to be now known. The history was in three parts, and the full title of "the third and last part" may be seen in the Bridgewater Catalogue, p. 205.]

XXXVIII. The two Harpes, [Harpies?] a play, by Anthony Munday, Thomas Dekker, Thomas Middleton, John Webster, and Michael Drayton.

[Henslowe's "Diary," p. 222, assigns this play to the above authors, under date of 29th May, 1602.]

XXXIX. The Widow's Charm, a play, by "Anthony the poet."

[Henslowe gives no surname to the author; and another Anthony, viz., Anthony Wadeson, was a dramatist in his employment: see "Diary," p 224. Malone (Shakespeare by Boswell, iii, 327) supposed that "The Widow's Charm" might be the same play as "The Puritan, or the Widow of Watling Street," which was printed in 1607, with the initials W. S. (Wentworth Smith) on the title-page.]

XL. The Set at Tennis, a play, by Anthony Munday.

[Mentioned by Henslowe as Munday's work, under date of 2nd December, 1602. See "Diary," p. 228.]

XLI. The Triumphs of reunited Britania. Performed at the Cost and Charges of the Rt. Worshipfull Company of the Merchant Taylors, in Honour of Sir Leonard Holiday, Knt, to solemnise his Entrance as Lorde Mayor of the Citty of London, on Tuesday the 29th of October, 1605. Devised and written by A. Mundy, Cittizen and Draper of London. Printed at London by W. Jaggard.

[The title-page of this Pageant, the first extant composed by Anthony Munday, is no where given with accuracy. We transcribe it from a copy belonging to the Duke of Devonshire. In the prefatory matter to his edition of Stow's "Survey," printed in 1618, Munday states that he had been "six and twenty years in sundry employements for the City's service".]

XLII. A briefe Chronicle of the successe of Times, from the Creation of the World to this instant. London, W. Jaggard, 1611.

[A mere compilation, of sufficiently common occurrence. Munday alludes to it in his edition of Stow's "Survey," 1618.]



XLIII. Chryso-thriambos: the Triumphes of Golde. At the inauguration of Sir James Pemberton, Knight, in the dignity of Lord Maior of London, on Tuesday the 29 of October, 1611. Performed in the harty Love, and at the Charges of the Right Worshipfull, worthy, and ancient Company of Goldesmithes. Devised and written by A. M., Cittizen and Draper of London. Printed by William Jaggard, Printer to the City.

[The note that William Jaggard was "printer to the City," seems new. A copy of the above Pageant is in the library of the Duke of Devonshire.]

XLIV. The Triumphs of Old Drapery, or the Rich Cloathing of England. At the charge of the Right Worshipfull Company of Drapers, at the Installation of Thomas Hayes. By A. Munday. 1614. 4to.

[We have not been able to meet with a copy of this Pageant, and the title, as given by Mr. J. G. Nichols, in his "London Pageants," p. 102, and in other authorities, reads as if it might possibly be the same piece as that next mentioned.]

XLV. Metropolis Coronata, the Triumphes of Ancient Drapery; or Rich Cloathing in England: in a Second Yeeres Performance. In honour of the advancement of Sir John Jolles, Knight, to the high office of Lord Maior of London, and taking his Oath for the same Authoritie on Monday, being the 30 day of October, 1615. Performed in heartie affection to him, and at the bountifull Charges of his worthie Brethren, the truely honourable Society of Drapers; the first that received such dignitie in this Cittie. Devised and written by A. M., Citizen and Draper of

London. — Printed at London by George Pursloe. 1615.

[This title is from the Duke of Devonshire's copy: it is one of the least common of Munday's Pageants. The words, "in a second years performance," may have reference to No. XLIV., which we have never had an opportunity of inspecting.]

XLVI. Chrysanaleia, the Golden Fishing; or the Honour of Fishmongers: applauding the Advancement of Mr. John Leman, Alderman, to the dignity of Lord Maior of London; taking his Oath in the same authority at Westminster on Tuesday, being the 29 day of October, 1616. Performed in hearty love to him, and at the charges of his worthy Brethren, the ancient and right worshippfull Company of Fishmongers. Devised and written by A. M., Citizen and Draper of London. Printed at London by George Pursloe. 1616.

[Four copies of this Pageant are known, and it is the last that came from the pen of Munday, as far as we are at present informed, although he was living seventeen years afterwards.]

---

[Mr. Bolton Corney has kindly furnished the following particulars respecting the editions of Stow's "Survey" in 1618 and 1633.]

XLVII. "The svrvay of London . . . Written in the yeere 1598 by Iohn Stow, Citizen of London. Since then, continued, corrected and much enlarged, with many rare and worthy Notes, both of Venerable Antiquity, and later memorie; such as were neuer published before this present yeere 1618. London, printed by George Purslowe, 1618." 4to. pp. 12 + 980 + 4 = 996.

This volume was edited by Anthony Munday, under his initials only. It is inscribed as follows: "To the right honorable, George Bolles, Lord Maior of the Citie of London, Sir Anthony Benn, Knight, Recorder of London: and to all the Knights and Aldermen, Brethren-Senatours in the State of so Famous a Citie: all of them being my honorable and worthy Masters: A. M. wisheth the fruition of all temporall felicities in this life; and the neuer-failing fulnesse of blessednesse in the life to come."—The editor received the command of the corporation of London to proceed with this work as early as 1606. In the dedication, he calls Stow "the first painefull searcher into the reuerend antiquities concerning this famous citie," and gives various particulars of his own career, which his biographers have omitted to notice. He was assisted by Mr. Humphrey Dyson, a notary public, and by others. As to the additions made to "The Survey" at this time, it may be sufficient to state that the volume exceeds that of 1603 to the extent of four hundred pages.

"The survey of London . . . Begunne first by the paines and industry of Iohn Stow, in the yeere 1598. Afterwards enlarged by the care and diligence of A. M. in the yeere 1618. And now completely finished by the study and labour of A. M. H. D. and others, this present yeere 1633. London, printed by Elizabeth Pvrslow—sold by Nicholas Bovrne, 1633." Folio. pp. 16 + 944 + 28 = 988.

A. M. denotes Anthony Munday, as before; H. D. denotes Humphrey Dyson, whose name appears in

the catalogue of authors consulted. The *Epistle dedicatorie*, which is in substance the same as that of the former edition, is addressed to the Right Honourable Ralph Freeman, Lord Mayor, and the other members of the corporation. Munday died about four months before the volume was published, and the advertisement *To the Reader* is signed C. I.

This volume, independently of the labours of Stow, contains the only history of London for the thirty years preceding its publication. It was not reprinted till 1720. The additions made by Munday and his coadjutors to the edition of 1603, consist of two chapters on the Thames and its conservancy; accounts of the rebellion of Wat Tyler, the riots of the apprentices, and the fatal vesper; of the observances of the lord mayor and aldermen, and of the laws and customs of the city; of the charitable bequests of citizens; of the twelve livery companies; of the companies of merchants, and of the minor trade-companies; of the boundaries of parishes; of the repair of churches, with a *vast number of important monumental inscriptions*; of the Charter-House, Chelsea College, and Dulwich College; of the manors of Finsbury, Stepney, and Hackney; with a perambulation, or circuit-walk, four miles round London, and *rich in epitaphs*. The volume is embellished with more than three hundred and sixty woodcuts of the armorial bearings of the mayors, and of the livery and mercantile companies. It was almost three years in the press.

An epitaph on Sir James Pemberton, in the church

of St. John Zachary, Aldersgate, is signed A. M. We may safely consider it as the composition of Munday. It describes the various charitable deeds of the worthy knight, and concludes with fifty-six lines of encomiastic verse. Ob. 1613.

Of the identity of A. M., the dramatist, and A. M., the topographer, there can be no doubt. It is a remarkable circumstance, therefore, that our author should give no information on theatrical affairs, even when describing the *sports and pastimes* of the citizens—the *Bankside*—and the *Blackfriars*! Had he been more communicative on those subjects, he might have received the honours of quotation as often as Philip Henslowe.

•

THE BOOK

OF

J O H N A K E N T

AND

JOHN A CUMBER.

•



# JOHN A KENT AND JOHN A CUMBER.

---

## ACTUS I. SCENA I.

*Enter Sir GRIFFIN MERIDDOCK, of South Wales, and  
JEFFREY POWESSE.*

*S. Griffin.* Powesse, in vayne perswadste thou  
patience;

In vayne thou dreamste of lykely remedies;

In vayne thou telst of this or that conceit;

Winde breathed woordes are vayner than the winde:

Only our weapons must effect our weale.

*Powesse.* As hitherto, my lord, I have entreated,  
So for a whyle, I pray ye, be advise.

*S. Griffin.* Advise? Why, what advise can Powesse  
yeeld?

Is not Sidanen, with the Earle's consent

And Prince Llwellen's graunt, affyed to Moorton?

*Powesse.* Yea; so Pembroke hathe their graunt for  
Marian. But——

*S. Griffin.* But what? Even while we thus stand  
wasting idle woordes,

Pembroke and Moorton shall possesse our looves.

Our looves exclaime against our cowardise;

Our cowardise, to our eternall shame,



In England, Wales, and Scotland, shall be sung  
By every jygging mate our foes among.

*Powesse.* Nor English, Welshe, nor Scottish, shall  
reproove

Lord Jefirey Powesse with base cowardise.  
As much, Prince Griffin, as the proudest dare,  
Dares Powesse for his Marian's libertie;  
Yet not with rashnes, or unbrideled heat.  
Discretion must be usde; the cause is great.

*S. Griffin.* Great cause, indeed, when fayre Sidanen's  
eyes

Dimde with the sourse of her continuall teares,  
Mixing those teares amongst the mournfull ynnck  
That writ the cause of her lament and mine,  
Seemes in this paper weeping to intreat;  
And then no mervayle, though the cause be great.

[*He shewes a letter.*]

*Powesse.* But greater cause, our countreyes cause  
I meane,

If we should manage armes, as you still urge,  
And so by force from noble Chester's Courte,  
Agaynst his will, fetche our well-willing looves,  
We may be held as traytours to the King,  
That durst invade his townes in time of peace.

*S. Griffin.* To see how Powesse casts beyond the  
moone!

As if the King would deale in these affayres;  
Or if he did, is 't like his majestie  
Would suffer fathers by compelling awe  
To force their children from their soules affect!

*Powesse.* But if his highnesse subjects should be  
slayne,

As in rough rescue it must needes fall out,  
He will not have the meanest guiltlesse dye,  
But blood for blood shall duely be repayde.

*S. Griffin.* Then, Powesse, least such daunger should betyde,

You are content the Ladyes shall be lost?

*Powesse.* Not so, Prince Griffin: then, I would haue stayd,

And not have come so neere to Chester's Courte.

*S. Griffin.* Bir lady, sir, and we are much the neere.  
We two, belyke, by your complotting wit  
Shall front the Earle of Chester in his Court,  
And, spight of Chester's strong inhabitants,  
Thorow West Chester mekely in our handes  
Lead my Sidanen and your Marian,  
While bothe our rivalles, and their following traynes,  
Sheeplyke stand shivering at our wrathfull lookes.  
Beshrewe me, but you have a passing head!  
All natrall are your reasons, full of sence.

*Powesse.* If we obtayne them, youle leave jesting then.

*S. Griffin.* Yea, that I will; but can ye tell me when?

*Enter Sr GOSSELEN DENVYLE, Sr EVAN GRIFFIN, and JOHN.*

*Gosselen.* What! \* \* \* \* \*

\* \* \* \* \* shall have company

\* \* \* \* \* trust will purge your melancholly.

*John.* Welcome, gentlemen; you seeme no lesse:  
Be not offended at my salutations,  
That bid ye stand before I say God speed;  
For in playne tearmes, speed what your speed may be,  
Such coyne you have bothe must and shall with me.

*S. Griffin.* How now, Lord Jeffrey! what companion have we heere?

He seemes some theefe.

*John.* No theefe, sir, but an honest bon companion.  
Nere drawe your weapons; rather trust your fecte.

And yet ye cannot hence, but at my pleasure.  
What needes all this? Yeeld, if I bid ye yeeld.

*Powesse.* Thou shouldst be John a Kent, thou art so  
peremptorie;

For John a Kent is a bolde, merry knave.

*John.* 'Tis happie, then, he is no very knave.

I am the man: what say ye to John a Kent?

*Powesse.* I am Jeffrey Lord Powesse, thy maister's  
freend,

And this Sr Griffin Merriddock, Prince of South Wales.

*John.* Why, then, I knowe ye bothe and welcome  
bothe.

Mr., these are the guests you looke for, whom, had I  
not well gest,

They had for welcome got a cudgelling.

*Gosselen.* Welcome, my Lord; and welcome, noble  
Prince.

*Powesse.* Thankes, good Sr Gosselen Denvyle, and  
Sr Evan Griffin.

I trust the men you promise me are readie.

*Gosselen.* For my parte, seven score bowemen, wight  
and tall,

Have I lodgde in the wood nere to the river Dee.

*Evan.* And I three score as strong, with hookes and  
billes,

That to three hundred will not turn their backs.

*Powesse.* But can ye tell us any newes from Chester?

*John.* Colde newes for you, my Lordes. There is at  
Chester

The Earle of Pembroke and the Scottish Moorton:

The one shall have Llwellen's fayre Sidanen,

The other Marian, good olde Chester's daughter,

And bothe these weddinges finished to morrowe.

*S. Griffin.* No more of that, my freend; thou sleyst  
me with these newes.—

Hear'st thou this, Powesse? This did I foredoome:  
Now all your wise devises come too late.

*Gosselen.* Content ye, good my Lord; no whit too late.

Heere is a lad on whom we doo relye  
For slye conveyance of the Ladyes hither.  
Full of conceit he is, and deeply seene  
In secret artes to worke for your avayle.

*S. Griffin.* Canst thou, my freend, from foorth the  
vaultes beneath

Call up the ghostes of those long since deceast,  
Or from the upper region of the ayre  
Fetche swift wingde spirits to effect thy will?

*John.* Can you, my Lord, and you, and you, and you,  
Goe to the venson for your suppers drest,  
And afterward goe lay ye downe to rest?

*Powesse.* How then, sweet John? All this thou  
knowest we can,

And what thou canst we haue no doubt at all;  
But what thou wilt, that gladly would we learne.

*John.* I will to morrow bring you Marian;  
And you, Prince Griffin, your beloovde Sidanen.  
Will this content ye?

*S. Griffin.* As all the world cannot content me more.

*John.* Why then, I pray ye, be content to goe  
And frolick checrely, for it shall be so.

*Gosselen.* I warrant ye, my Lords. Come, let us in.  
[*Exeunt.*]

*John.* So, they must banquet; I unto my busines.  
But let me muse a little on this loove,  
Full of [so] many feares, so sundry joyes;  
Now peace, now plagued, diversly distract.

\* \* \* \* \*

But John a Kent won't leese them: \* \*  
Rather minde thou the pleasing joyes of loove,

And since so good a subject they present,  
 Uppon these loovers practise thou thy wit.  
 Help, hinder, give, take back, turne, overturne,  
 Deceive, bestowe, breed pleasure, discontent,  
 Yet comickly conclude, like John a Kent. [*Exit.*

*Enter at one doore* RANULPHE, *Earle of* CHESTER,  
 OSWEN, *his sonne, young* AMERY, *Lord* MORTAIGUE ;  
*with them the Countesse, her daughter* MARIAN, *and*  
*faire* SIDANEN. *At another doore enter the Earles of*  
 PEMBROOKE, MOORTON, *and their trayne.*

*Moorton.* All health be to the noble Earle of Chester,  
 His Countesse, and these honorable Ladyes,  
 Whom one by one I humbly gratulate,  
 Wishing to them their happy hartes content.

*Pemb.* The lyke dooth Pembroke to this goodly  
 trayne.

*Chester.* Earle Moorton, and my noble Lord of Pem-  
 brooke,

Whose presence brings contentment to my soule,  
 And adds true honor to your noble names,  
 For having kept your vowes inviolate,  
 How you are welcome, woordes shall not explaine,  
 But such as best beseemes your entertaine —  
 Your father, madame, will be heere this night,  
 Or early in the morning, well I woot,  
 For such provision hath he sent before,  
 As shewes him selfe will not be farre behind.<sup>1</sup>—  
 And sith it is our auncient Englishe guyse,  
 The bridegroomes should uppon the wedding day  
 Come from some distant place to fetche their brydes,  
 My house at Plessye is for you preparede.

<sup>1</sup> This and the three preceding lines, addressed to Sidanen, are inserted in the margin, with an asterisk.

Thence to the Castell shall you walke along,  
 And at St. John's shall be solemnized  
 The nuptialles of your honors and these virgens;  
 For to that Church Edgar, once England's king,  
 Was by eight kinges, conquerd by him in warres,  
 Rowed royally on St. John Baptist day.  
 In memory of which pompe, the earles our auncestours  
 Have to that Church beene noble benefactours.

*Moorton.* Eight kinges rowe one? That was great  
 pompe, indeed!

*Pemb.* One of them was of Scotland, as I read;  
 The Irishe and the Dane two more besyde,  
 And five of Brittain, all subdued by him.  
 To see that Church will greatly joy my minde,  
 Because I there a greater joy shall fynde.

*Moorton.* Why lookes Sidanen sad? Why sighes  
 she so?

*Sidanen.* Pardon, my lord; such thinges you may  
 not knowe.

*Moorton.* She not mislykes her choyse, I hope, of me?

*Sidanen.* No, God forbid. Although you are not he.  
 [Asyde.]

*Moorton.* Why, then, looke cheerly, as Sidanen should.

*Sidanen.* I doo, my Lord. And better if I could.  
 [Asyde.]

*Pemb.* Madame, the Scottish Lord hath got a gracious  
 looke;

But Pembroke is not halfe so happy yet.

*Oswen.* Sister, you wrong the noble Earle with frownes.

*Amery.* My Lord, content ye: women fayne dislyke,  
 Where their affections beare the highest regard.

*Marian.* You are too young, my Lord, to judge so  
 soundly.

*Amery.* I finde it writ by them that judgde pro-  
 foundly.

*Marian.* Bookes may beguyle ye.

*Oswen.* My Lord, that cut came roundly.

*Pemb.* Your sadnes tell, if I may knowe the cause.

*Marian.* Me thinkes, my Lord, the custom is too hard,

When loovers meet so suddenly to parte.

*Pemb.* To morrowes joy will end that bitter smart.

*Marian.* To see ye no more, how would it ease my hart!  
[*Asyde.*

*Chester.* Well, noble Lorde, for this time break we off.  
Sonne, and Lord Amery, you will be their guyde.

*Oswen.* Yea, my good Lord. Then, goe we, gentlemen.  
[*Exeunt. Manent SIDANEN, &c.*

*Countesse.* [My gentle] Cossen, now we are alone,  
Let me entreat to know the secret cause  
That mooves these passions more then over pensive,  
Which were not wont in you to woorke such chaunge?  
If in my power to counsell or prevent  
There rest a meane, let me but knowe your mindes,  
And what I may shall surely be effected,  
To either of your longing harts content.

*Sydanen.* Madame, your tender care and kinde affect  
Assures Sidanen of your honor's faith.  
In breefe, my noble Aunte, this is the cause  
Why poore Sydanen is disconsolate;  
That she must leave her countrey and her kinne,  
And passe to Scotland with the Earle of Moorton.

*Countesse.* Cossen, his kindnesse soone will calme this greefe,  
And, therefore, cast these cares behinde thy back.  
But what olde man is this comes toward us?

*Enter JOHN A KENT, like an aged Hermit.*

*John.* Ladyes, if crooked age and homely weedes  
Breed not contempte, vouchsafe, I humbly pray,

Your charitable comfort, to sustayne  
 A little longer these spent, withred limbes,  
 That, numbde through chilnesse of my frost-bit blood,  
 Which six score winters hath resisted stormes,  
 And just so many times the summer's heate,  
 Now quaking lyke the winde-blown bough for strength,  
 Witnesse that all thinges yeeld to time at length.

*Countesse.* How much I greeve, that these thy silver  
 hayres

Should in extreamest age feele taste of want,  
 And this thy furrowed face with tears distaynd,  
 Shall well appeare, for thou shalt in with us.  
 These feeble limbes, with age so overworne,  
 Shall fynde repose, and not be left forlorne.

*Marian.* Father, receive this little gyft of me.

*Sydanen.* And heere, olde man, take this to comfort  
 thee. [*Give him some mony.*]

*John.* As many blessings light uppon you three,  
 As cares and crosses have befallne to me.  
 But much I feare, if arte may judge aright,  
 Some ill is toward these twayne this present night.

*Sydanen.* What sayst thou, father? art thou a man  
 of skill?

*John.* Lady, in youth I studyed hidden artes,  
 And proffited in Chiromancie much.  
 If sight be not obscurde, through nature's weaknesse,  
 I can, for once I could discourse, by favour  
 And rules of palmestrie, ensuing chaunces.

*Marian.* Good father, tell my fortune, if thou canst.

*Sydanen.* Nay, mine, I pray thee, first: I askte thee  
 first.

*John.* Strive not, fayre ladyes; shewe me bothe your  
 handes,

For your complexions seeme to be alyke.

[*He sees their handes.*]



Nay, let me see: bothe your affections are alyke.  
Blush not, but tell me, are ye not bothe betrothde  
To two great Lordes, without your parents knowledge?

*Countesse.* They are betrothde, indeed; but with their  
parents knowledge,

And bothe to morrow must be maryed.

*John.* Now, God forbid! Woes me to thinke theron.

*Countesse.* Why, father? I pray thee, speake.

*John.* Good madame, pardon me: let me be gon,  
And leave the God of heaven to woorke his will.

[*He offers to depart.*

*Sydanen.* Nay, stay, good father. I pray thee, tell  
the wourst.

*Marian.* My hart dooth throb.—Sweet father, then  
resolve us.

*John.* Sith you compell me, Ladyes, I will speak;  
And what I say, beleewe it on your lives.  
If ere thou \* \* sorrowe cheere the harts

\*                      \*                      \*

You washe not at Saint Winifredes fayre spring  
Your lilly handes, and list the holy voyce,  
Which will resolve ye of your loove's sweet choyse,  
I may not say what shall ye bothe betyde;  
But harder fortune nere befell fayre Bryde.

*Countesse.* Alas! the spring is three myles hence, at  
least,

And now thou seest the night approacheth on.

*John.* Let not the distaunce hinder them to goe,  
Least they and you wishe that ye had doone so.

*Countesse.* Father, I have some reason to beleewe thee,  
By what I must keep secret to my selfe;  
And but my Lord condemnes these auncient rules,  
Religiously observed in these partes,  
I would crave leave for them to travell thither;  
For many have misdoone that did it not.

*Sydanen.* Rather then hard mishap should us befall,  
Twere good we were acquainted therewithall.

*Marian.* Good mother, this fayre evening let us  
goe :

Weele come agayne before my father knowe.

*Countesse.* Well, goe ye shall, and I along with ye,  
Had we some trusty freend to be our guyde.

*John.* Ladyes, although my limbes be not so strong,  
My bones neere marrowlesse, bloodlesse my veynes,  
Yet use hath made me perfect in the way,  
And if your honors deigne so olde a guyde,  
So speed my soule as shall to you betyde.

*Countesse.* None better. But what houre of night is  
best?

*John.* When twise two houres the daughters of the  
night

Have driven their ebon chariot thorow the ayre,  
And with their duskie winges breathde calmie rest  
Upon the eye liddes of eche living thing,  
The silver shyning horned lamp dooth rise,  
By whose cleere light we may discern the pathe,  
Wherin, though lamely now I seeme to plod,  
Yet will I guyde ye safely to the spring,  
And for your comming at the back gate wayte.  
Till when God's benison protect ye all.

*Countesse.* Well, father, we will come, uppon mine  
honor.

*Sydanen.* The houre is one, at midnight. Fayle us  
not. [*Exeunt.*]

*John.* Fayle ye? In faith, that were a sillie jest:  
Our sporte would fayle, if I should fayle mine houre.  
[*He pulles [off] his beard.*]

But husht! Heere comes my hotspurre, and Lord  
Powesse.

*Enter S<sup>r</sup> GRIFFIN and Lord POWESSE.*

*S. Griffin.* Lord Powesse, heer's John a Kent, dect in  
a Pilgrimes weede.

*Powesse.* Why, how now, John! Turnd greene to  
Fryer's gray?

*John.* What madnes makes ye come so farre this  
way?

The town's beset, our purpose is descride,  
And now I see your comming made all spyde.

*S. Griffin.* Help us to scape unto thy maister's cave.  
Yet, ere we goe, tell me, sawest thou Sydanen?

*John.* I sawe her; but you shall never see her more.

*S. Griffin.* Why so, sweet John? What! is Sydanen  
dead?

*John.* No.

*S. Griffin.* Is she fled?

*John.* No.

*S. Griffin.* Is Moorton and Sydanen maryed?

*John.* Neither.

*S. Griffin.* Wherefore, then, shall not I agayne be-  
holde her?

*John.* Because your honor is too full of heate,  
And by your rashnes will discover all.  
Wherefore, shift as ye can, for I will leave ye.

*Powesse.* Nay, I pray thee, John, tell us the trueth  
of all.

*John.* The troth is, if ye meane to have the ladyes,  
Be bolde, and goe along where I shall leade ye;  
And as I shall appoynt, so followe my directions.

*S. Griffin.* But will they come?

*John.* They will, if you will goe.

*S. Griffin.* But how?

*John.* Why, on their feet: I know no other way.

*S. Griffin.* But when?

*John.* Nay, then, we shall be troubled. When, how, where?

*Powesse.* I pray thee tell us, John, without delay.

*John.* Content ye, Lordes; He tell ye on the way.  
Come, let us goe.

*S. Griffin.* John, He renowne thee, if it fall out so.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter TURNOP, with his crewe of Clounes, and a Minstrell.*

*Turnop.* Nay, never talke of it. Hugh the Sexten stutters: let him read the first lyne, or see if he can say the speche that Dawes, our Churchwarden, made in prayse of his mill horsse.

*Hugh.* It makes no matter. I think my selfe the wisest because I am Sexten, and being Sexten, I will say the speche I made my selfe.

*Tom Tabrer.* Heare ye, Hugh. Be not so forward: take a little vise of your minstrell.

*Omnes.* And well sayd, Thomas Tabrer: you haue scression; speak on.

*Tom.* One of the wisest of us must speak, and either he must be Hugh, or Turnop. Now, Hugh is Sexten, an office of retoritie, I tell ye.

*Turnop.* Yea; that's when he is in the belfrie, not else.

*Omnes.* Hugh! Hugh! Hugh shall speak the speache to the Lordes.

*Tom.* But Turnop being my Lordes man, his hogheard, his familiaritie servaunt, he in my minde is not only fit, but also accessary for the ration making. Then, Turnop say I.

*Omnes.* Turnop! Turnop! Wele have none but Turnop!

*Turnop.* Well, for your wisdomes in chusing me, I rest quoniam dygnitatis vestrum primarion, as the Poet

Pediculus sayth; and the next vestrie bound to deferre ye to severall locall places.

*Spurling.* How now, Hugh? are ye put downe, in faith?

*Hugh.* That's because he has a little more learning, and has borrowed the ushers olde coat to grace him selfe withall.

*Tom.* O! take heed of learning while ye live: it is a goodly matter.

*Turnop.* Frater meum amantissime, Hugo the Bel-ringer; the hebrew epitheton Barra cans, as much as to say, no man can barre him. Chaunce perswadeth you to remit, or submit, or admit your selfe to the crye of your bretheren. How say ye, then, fellow men in armes, in this our showe who shalbe the speaker?

*Omnes.* Turnop! Turnop! Weele have none but Turnop!

*Turnop.* Then, let us set forward, for now it is uppon the Lordes comming. Thomas, firk it with your fiddle. Spurling, you play the Moore, vaunce up your Tun; and Robert, holde your porrenger right, least you spill the conceit, for heere they come.

*Enter PEMBROOK, MOORTON, OSWEN, AMERY: to them this crewe marching; one drest like a Moore, with a Tun painted with yellow oker; another with a porrenger full of water, and a pen in it. TURNOP speaketh the oration.*

Lyke to the Cedar in the loftie sea,  
 Or milke white mast uppon the humble mount,  
 So, hearing that your honors came this way,  
 Of our rare wittes we came to give account.  
 For when as princes passe through pettie townes,  
 They must be welcomd, least they tearme us clownes.  
 Our presentes precious; first the golden Tunne,

Borne by that monstrous murrian black-a-moore,  
 Mortonus Earlus, in thy prayse is doone.  
 This flowing brook, hemd in with this tierce shoare,  
 That hath \* \* \* \* \*  
 Is peerelesse Pembrook, that I have not \* \*  
 As for the two last rymes, right woorshipfull and not  
 other-wise, by the error of the Authour ouerslipped, is  
 thus by Timothie Turnop, the oratour, newly corrected,  
 to wit,  
 This princely pen up prauncing by the sydes,  
 And so we wishe ye bothe two blessed brydes.

*Oswen.* My Lordes, my father's tennants, after their  
 homely guyse,  
 Welcome ye with their countrey merriment:  
 How bad so ere, yet must ye needes accept it.

*Pemb.* Else, Oswen, were we very much to blame.—  
 Thanks, gentle freendes: here, drinke this for my  
 sake.

*Moorton.* And this for me; commending your great  
 paynes,  
 Which in more liberall sorte we will requite.

*Amery.* May it please ye, Lordes, to walk into the  
 Castell,  
 And there at full weele see their other sportes.

*Pemb.* With all my hart. Goe; we will followe ye.  
 [*Exeunt Lordes.*]

*Turnop.* Before you goe, in name of all this trayne,  
 Turnop accepts your golde, and thanks you for your  
 payne.—

Thomas, lead the vawward with your easement: you,  
 with our hiperbolicall devises, marche in the midst.  
 And if the Lordes will see us make them merry,  
 Ere we will want devise, weele make them weary.

Marche on! [*Exeunt.*]

## ACTUS SECUNDUS. SCENA PRIMA.

*Enter at one doore JOHN A KENT, hermit-lyke, as before :  
at another, enter the Countesse, SYDANEN, and MARIAN.*

*John.* Promise is kept: the ladyes are come forth;  
The ambush readie that shall soone surprise them.—  
See, madame, I am readie to attend ye.

*Countesse.* Gramercyes, father. Lead thou on the  
way,

And give good counsell to my sweet young Cossen.

*John.* Madame, I warrant ye, sheele take none bad.

[*SYDANEN and he conferre.*

*Marian.* Or good or bad, she taketh all from me.

Madame, would you vouchsafe me so much favour  
As she, so I would gladly talke with him.

*Countesse.* Let them alone: ye shall have time enough.

*Sydanen.* Nay, forward, father; let me heare the rest.

*John.* Then, Madame, to omit all ambages,  
I knowe it, for mine Arte assureth me,  
You are contracted to the Southwales Prince,  
And wronging him, you wrong your selfe much more.

*Sydanen.* For God's sake, softly, least the Countesse  
heare.

True hast thou sayd; but by my father's graunt  
The Earle of Moorton must Sydanen wed.

*John.* That's as Sydanen will, as I suppose.

*Sydanen.* Will I, or nill I, all is one to him:  
He is a Prince, and he hath promisd it.

*John.* You are a Princesse, and have promisd no.

*Sydanen.* Earle Moorton with my father is in favour,  
And hath his woord that I shalbe his wife.

*John.* But hath he yours?

*Sydanen.* Never, in all my life.

*John.* I knowe not, lady, how the world is chaungde:

When I was young, they wooed the daughter first,  
 And then the father, when they had her graunt;  
 Which could they get, why so; if not, why, then  
 Her woord was woorth the meeting, where and when.

*Countesse.* Why, how now, daughter! why drawe  
 you so neere?

*Marian.* She talkes too long, and somewhat would I  
 heare.

*Countesse.* Byde you with me, till she have made an  
 end.

*Marian.* Pray God, this talke to our desyre may tend.

*John.* But would you goe with him, if he were heere?

*Sydanen.* Would I desyre to be accompted chaste?

Reverenst for vertue, as for naturall giftes?

Would I aske strength for these my feeble limbes,

If some fierce tiger had me in pursuite?

Would I shun feare? would I require content,

Or wishe the endlesse happines of heaven?

If these I would, then, that as much I would.

For what is fame, health, joy, or ought to me,

Except with him that gives them all to me.

*John.* Madame, enough. Is Marian of your minde?

*Sydanen.* Yea, father. She to Powesse, I to Prince  
 Griffin writ;

But when no answer either could receive,

Resolvedly thus we set downe our rest.

To morrow, when the nuptiall feast is past,

And that the Bridegroomes doo expect their Brydes,

A strong confection bothe we have preparde,

Of deadly Aconite with them to drinke;

Besydes a letter drawen, to shewe the cause

Why so revendgefully we sought their deathes,

And so despairingly lost our owne lives.

This made us both holde thee in such regarde,

When thou foretoldste of daungers to ensue.



*John.* This resolution dooth renowne ye bothe;  
But your fayre starres affoordes ye better fortune.  
And for my woordes may yield but dallying hope,  
See what is doone in twinckling of an eye.

[*Windeth horn.*]

*Enter DENVYLE, GRIFF., POWESSE, EVAN and trayne.*

Those Lordes, for whom you twayne would loose your  
lives,

Come boldly heere to challendge their faire wives.—

Madame, dismay not; heere no harme is meant:

Bothe they and you welcome to John a Kent.

[*He puts of his disguise.*]

*Countesse.* Vilde sorcerer! hast thou betrayde us  
thus,

Hyding thy treason with so good pretence?—

Prince Griffin and Lord Powesse, be assurde

If otherwise then nobly you intreate

My princely cossen and my noble childe,

It will be wreakte on your presuming heades.

*John.* You wrong them, madame, if you misconceite  
That you or they shall be unnobly usde.

You are brought hither to no other end

But that their haviour you might all commend.

Aske but the ladyes if they will departe,

Ile bring ye where I had ye; yea, with all my hart.

*Countesse.* Then goe, sweete cossen: daughter, let us  
hence,

For feare wursse happen on this foule offence.

*S. Griffin.* The wurst is past: let happen now what  
shall,

Ile keep Sidanen, or loose life and all.

*Sydanen.* And if Sydanen willingly departe  
From her Prince Griffin, joy nere have her hart.

*Powesse.* I hope my Marian is of selfe-same minde.

*Marian.* Else were thy loove requited too unkinde.—  
Now, mother, would you were at home agayne!  
We both are where we wisht our selves full fayne.

*Countesse.* Then, questionlesse, this fiapt by your consent;

And well I wot these noble gentlemen  
Are honor'd in your hartes before the other.  
Sith your endeavours, then, so happy proove,  
Never let me be hinderer of true loove.

*John.* Madame, now speake ye lyke a looving mother,  
And lyke Sydanen's honorable Aunte.  
Oppose this question, and be judge your selfe:  
Say you were troth plight where you lyke best,  
Could you, infaith, so great a wrong digest,  
As, but for me, had happened to these ladyes?  
In to the Castell, then, and frollique there;  
And what should have beene doone to these sweetes  
sorrowe

Shall to their joy be finishte heere to morrowe.

*Gosselen.* Come, madame, favour me to be your  
guyde:

You shall finde all thinges heere to your content;  
And though my Lord, the Earle, holde off aloofe,  
And may dislyke what we doo for his honor,  
Be you but pleasde, wee le never seek no other.  
For though we want [the sire,] we have the mother.

*Sydanen.* Let it be so, good aunte, and I shall praye  
For this good walke you may live many a day.

*John.* These speeches are in vayne: I pray ye be  
gon,

And entertaine them as their kindnes merits.  
Leave me awhyle, to gratulate your feast  
With some rare merriment or pleasing jest.  
Will you be gon? Ye doo the ladyes wrong,  
Heere in the ayre to chat with them so long.

*S. Griffin.* Come, sweet Sydanen, I will be thy guyde.  
Moorton shall looke him now an other bryde.

*Powesse.* And so shall Pembroke, now I am possest  
Of Marian, whom I ever looved best.

[*Exeunt. Manet JOHN.*

*John.* Heers loove and loove: Good Lord! was  
nere the lyke!

But must these joyes so quickly be concluded?  
Must the first Scene make absolute a Play?  
No crosse, no chaunge? What! no varietie?  
One brunt is past. Alas! what's that, in loove?  
Where firme affection is most truely knit,  
The loove is sweetest that moste tryes the wit.  
And, by my troth, to sport my selfe awhyle,  
The disappoynted brydegroomes, these possest,  
The fathers, freendes, and other more besyde,  
That may be usde to furnishe up conceite,  
He set on woorke in such an amorous warre,  
As they shall wunder whence ensues this jarre.  
O! that I had some other lyke my selfe,  
To drive me to sound pollicyes indeed.  
There's one in Scotland, tearmed John a Cumber,  
That overwatchte the Devill by his skill,  
And Moorton brought him to haue sped his loove:  
I would have tryde which should the maister proove.  
But since my selfe must pastime with my selfe,  
He anger them, bee't but to please my selfe.—  
Sirra! Shrimpe!

*Enter SHRIMP, a boy.*

*Shrimp.* Anon, sir. What is your will with me?

*John.* Thus, sirra. To Chester get you gon.

[*Round in his eare.*

They are yet asleep that shall be wakte anon.

*Shrimp.* I goe, sir.

[*Exeunt severally.*

*Enter* TURNOP, HUGH, TOM TABRER, WILL *the boy*,  
and SPURLING, *with their consort.*

*Tom.* Nay, either let it be as Mr. Turnop will have, or, by my troth, faire and softly, I will goe no further. Either let us haue credit, or no credit.

*Hugh.* You haue sayd as much as [can] be sayd, neighbour Thomas, and that not learnedly, but loovingly, withall. Maister Turnop, the Lordes were so pontiffically pleased with your roration, that the ladyes p[ersons] to morrow remayneth altogether at your disposition.

*Turnop.* Why, then, thus my muse hath magestically, or minstricallically, written in prayse of fayre Sydanen; and shee beeing appointed to be maryed this [day], she ought to have the maydenhead of my muse before she loose the benefit abselutidico; as much [as] to say, in Welsh or English, as her rosemary braunche.

*Spurling.* But has Will learned it perfectly? I tell you, she is a lady of some scression, and lookes that the song of Sydanen should be well performed.

*Turnop.* Goodman Spurling, though you be purblinde, and thereby are favoured for the grosse errors committed in your vocation, yet, I pray ye, commit your selfe to your musique: as for the song, let it passe uppon my prerogastride, with this addition, He mihi quod domino non licet ire tuo.

*Tom.* When then, tune all; for it drawes toward day, and if we wake not the bryde, why, then it is woorth nothing. [*They play: the boy sings the Welsh song.*]

*Turnop.* To add one good morrowe to your bed sydes, Timothie Turnop bids good morrow [to] bothe the brydes.

Now to the brydegroomes, and then, my harts, looke for a largesse.

*Enter SHRIMPE, the Boy.*

*Shrimpe.* Why, now is Shrimpe in the height of his  
bravery,  
That he may execute some parte of his maister's knavery.  
Sound foorth your musique to the brydegroomes sor-  
rowe,  
For I will sing them but a sower good morrowe.

*[Song of the Brydes loss.*

*[They play, and the boy sings, whearat the  
Bridegroomes come foorth in their night-  
gounes, and breeches on their heades. To  
them OSWEN [and] AMERY, making them  
selves ready.*

*Moorton.* What song is this, to flout me to my face?  
Is fayre Sydanen gon, and left me in disgrace?

*Pemb.* Peasants, what mean ye, to delude us so?  
Is Marian and Sydanen gon? Say yea, or no.

*Shrimpe.* Are ye so hot? chafe ye so suddenly?  
Nay, pause awhyle; He fetche ye company. *[Exit.*

*Turnop.* Why, my Lordes, do ye aske if the Ladyes  
be gon or no?  
If they be not in their beddes, it is more then we  
knowe.

\* \* \* theyr rest, thou sungst a song of sorrowe.

*Turnop.* My Lord, you lye: we playd ye but a good  
morrowe;  
And seeing for our good willes ye do us this wrong,  
Let's to the Brydes, to have mony for our song.

*Heere enter AMERY and OSWEN rubbing.*

*Oswen.* How now, my Lords! what sudden noysc is  
this?  
Is fayre Sydanen and my sister fled?

*Pemb.* These wretches, that so sung, doo now deny it.

*Turnop.* Let's talke a woord or two: awhyle I pray  
ye be quiet.

Did ye not yesternight disturb your head  
With winum vinum, ere ye went to bed?  
That makes ye in your sleep to rise and walke,  
Or at the least thus idiot-lyke to talke.

*Enter the Earle of CHESTER, in his night-gowne, and  
SHRIMPE following aloofe of: some serraunts with him.*

*Chester.* Can their departure be to all unknowne?  
Villaines, why speake ye not? Did no one see them?

*I Serrant.* Not any one, my Lord, that we can  
heere of.

Belyke they went foorth at the garden gate:  
We found it open; therefore, we suspect it.

*Oswen.* My Lord and father, are you up so soone?  
Where is my sister? where is fayre Sydanen?

*Chester.* Nay, where's thy mother, boy? aske that  
withall,

For she, thy sister, and my loovely niece,  
This night are gon, and no one can tell whether.  
As I lay slumbring, well neere halfe awake,  
Under my window did I heare a voyce,  
Saying, rise, Chester, for this wedding day  
Is disappointed now another way.

*Mooiton.* And in a song the lyke was tolde to us  
By these base slaves, that now deny the same.  
But yet, my Lord, I hope it is not so.

*Chester.* That they are gone, my Lordes, tis true, I  
knowe.—

But came these newes from you? Why speake ye not?

*Hugh.* Thomas, you are the auncient'st man: I pray  
ye, make answer for us.

*Thomas.* My Lord, I hope it is not unknowen to your  
woorshipps, that I have liv'd a poore professor of musique

in this parish this forty year, and no man could ever burden me with the valewe of two pence: that ye should now lay three wenches at once to my charge, I will not say howe much it grieves me, but betweene God and your conscience be it.

*Turnop.* Nay, but heare ye, my Lord. Doo ye, as it were, seeme, in good sober sadnesse, to tell us for a certaintie that the brydes are gon, and that we, as it were, should have some occasion to knowe thereof?

*Chester.* So say these Lordes: they lay it to your charge.

*Turnop.* Why, then, my Lordes, both great and small, Knowe that ye wrong, not one, but all.

Which way so ere they haue betooke them,

If they be gon, you may goe looke them;

And if they be not to be found,

You have lost your wives, Ile holde ye a pound.

*Chester.* Away, then, villaynes! rayse up all my men;  
Bid them take horsse and post foorth every way.

By some foule treason are they led from hence;

My wife else would not with this faulte dispence.

Away, I say, and trouble me no longer.

[*Exeunt clounes and seruaunts.*]

*Shrimp.* Why, now this geere doth cotton in righte kinde.

These newes, I wot, will please my maister's mynde.

[*Exit boy.*]

*Enter LLWELLEN, his trayne, and JOHN A CUMBER a loofe of.*

*Moorton.* But heere comes one whom this concernes  
so neere,

That he will searche the depth of this bolde wrong.

Princely Llwellen and my noble freend,

Hither thou comnest, by loyall promise bound

To solemnize thy daughter's nuptiall rightes ;  
 But fayre Sydanen and Earle Chester's daughter  
 Are, with the aged Countesse, parted hence,  
 Whether or how as yet we cannot learne.

*Llwellen.* Why, then, my freend, thy tydings are too  
 true.— [To JOHN A CUMBER.

Unhappy man ! is this thy welcome hither ?

*Pemb.* My Lord, can he say any thinge of their  
 departure ?

Speak, gentle freend, and ease our doubtfull mindes.

*Cumber.* Ease them I cannot, but disease them  
 more :

They are where you shall never see them more.

*Moorton.* How meanste thou, freend ? Dally not, I  
 beseeche thee.

*Cumber.* Prince Griffin of Southewales hath got  
 Sydanen ;

Lord Powesse hath your daughter Marian ;  
 And at St. Gosselen Denvyle's Castell, not farre hence,  
 Before your Countesse, who went with them thither,  
 This day their mariage must be consumate.

*Chester.* What say'st thou ? Hath my Countesse  
 wrong'd me so ?

And is this trecherie by her consent ?

*Cumber.* No, my good Lord. Knowe ye one John a  
 Kent,

A man whom all this Brittishe Isle admires  
 For his rare knowledge in the deepest artes ?  
 By pollicye he traynd them from this place,  
 They simply thinking no such hidden guyle :  
 But at Saint Winifrides fayre hallowed spring,  
 To pay last tribute of their mayden vowes,  
 Went with the Countesse and that subtill guyde.  
 So each of you may now goe looke his bryde.

*Llwellen.* Let us to horsse, and gather able troopes,



That may engirt the Castell round about.  
Proud Griffin, Powesse, and the rest, shall knowe  
I will not pocket this injurious wrong,  
Which I will rate at price of their best blood,  
And his that hath so overreachte us all.

*Cumber.* Fye, my good Lord! nay, now ye growe  
too hot.

Talke ye of horse, of men, and multitudes,  
When rayse the very powerfulst strength ye can,  
Yet all's too weak to deale with that one man.  
Had ye a freend could equall him in Arte,  
Controll his cunning, which he boasts so on,  
Then were there hope of their recoverie:  
What else ye doo will help but slenderly.

*Moorton.* He poste to Scotland for brave John a  
Cumber,

The only man renownde for magick skill.  
Oft have I heard he once beguylde the Devill,  
And in his Arte could never finde his matche.  
Come he with me, I dare say John a Kent,  
And all the rest shall this foule fact repent.

*Cumber.* Were he heere now, my Lord, it would doo  
well;

But if he come when every thing is doone,  
No credit by the matter can be wun.

*Chester.* My Lord, goe you and fetch that famous  
man.

The Prince and I will forthwith to the Castell,  
Where, calling them to parle on the walles,  
Wee'le promise that they shall enjoy the Ladyes,  
With our consent, if but a sennight space  
They will adorne the day of mariage.  
Sound reasons wee'le alleadge, to urge them to it;  
Then, you returnd with him that never faylde,  
You have your wishe, and John in cunning graylde.

*Pemb.* Be it so, my Lord. Ile beare ye company,  
Not doubting but to speed successsefully.

*Cumber.* Ile save my Lord that labour. Heer's John  
a Cumber,

Entiste to England by the wondrous fame  
That every where is spread of John a Kent.  
And seeing occasion falleth out so well,  
I may doo service to my Lord heerby,  
I make him my protectour in this case.  
What he hath doone for many dayes together  
By Arte I knowe, as you have seene some prooffe.  
Ile make no braggess, but we two Johns together  
Will tug for maistrie: therfore came I hither.

*Moorton.* The welcomste man that ever came to me;  
[*All embrace him.*

And this kinde loove will Moorton well requite.  
For God's sake, let us loose no time in vayne:  
Tis broad day light. Sweet John, bestirre thee now,  
For nere thy help could come in greater need.

*Cumber.* All you to horsse: Ile meet ye on the way.  
My Lord, some of those merry lads gave you good  
morrowe

Comaund to followe ye: I must imploy them.  
So, get ye gon, and leave me to my selfe.

*Chester.* We goe, John.—Come, gentlemen, away!  
[*Exeunt: manet CUMBER.*

*Cumber.* Now, John a Kent, much have I heard of  
thee:

Auncient thy fame \* \* \* \*

What art thou doinge? Very seriously

[*Look in his glasse.*

Plotting downe pastimes to delight the Ladyes.  
Then, have amongst ye: you, sir, have begun,  
My turne is next before your spoortes be doone.

[*Exit.*

## ACTUS TERTIUS.

*Enter Sr GRIFFIN, POWESSE, GOSSELEN, and EVAN.*

*Gosselen.* I cannot blame ye, Lordes, to stirre so early,  
Considering what occasions are in hand :  
Love's long pursuit at length to be requited  
With the due guerdon to continued hope.  
And such, by meanes of freendly John a Kent,  
Shall yeeld you bothe your severall harts content.

*Evan.* Yea, but the Countesse and the other Ladyes,  
I doubt, were wearied with so late a walke,  
For, as it seemes, they are not stirring yet,  
And little kindnesse were it to disease them  
Before them selves think best to leave their chamber.  
But say, Prince Griffin, wheron doo ye muse ?  
You not mislyke Sydanen is so neere ;  
Nor you that Marian beares her company ?

*S. Griffin.* Sir Evan, Ile be playne, and tell ye what  
I thought.

I deeply did conceit within my selfe  
Lord Moorton's passions he will act this morning,  
When newes is brought him that his bryde is gon.  
Think ye he will not curse the fatall houre  
Began so sweete, and now falles out so sower ?

*Powesse.* Nay, let my rivall beare him company,  
And good olde Chester, for his forwardnes  
In seeking to deceive me of my wife.  
But what will he imagine of his Countesse ?  
Shee's gon from Courte, and no man can tell whether,  
And colde their sute, should they pursue them hether.

*Powesse.* Therof you may be bolde. But much I  
muse

Where John a Kent bestowes him, all this whyle.  
He is so carefull of his coy conceites,

To sute this sollemne day, as it should be,  
 That for your sakes I knowe it shall excell.  
 At least, he labours all thinges may be well.

*Enter JOHN A CUMBER, lyke JOHN A KENT.*

*S. Griffin.* See where he comes, deep pondering with  
 him selfe

Important matters. We must not disturb him,  
 But give him leave till his owne leysure [serve] him.

[*Musique.*

Silence ! me thinkes I heare sweet melodie ;  
 And see, he sets the Castell gate wide ope.

[*Musique whyle he opens the door.*

Stand we aloofe, and note what followeth.

*From one end of the Stage enter an antique, quaintly disguised, and coming dauncing before them, sings.*

1 *Antique.* When wanton loove had walkte astray,  
 Then good regard began to chide,  
 And meeting her uppon the way,  
 Says, wanton lasse, thou must abide.  
 For I have seene in many yeaeres  
 That sudden loove breedes sullen feares.

Shall I never, while I live, keep my girle at  
 schoole.

She hath wandred to and fro,  
 Furder then a mayde should goe.

Shall she never, while she lives, make me  
 more a foole.

[*Into the Castell: a ducking curtesy. Exit.*

*Cumber.* You little thinke who it is that sung this  
 song.

*S. Griffin.* No, John. I pray thee, tell us who it is.

*Cumber.* Why, Prince Llwellen, come to his daughter's wedding.

Is he her father, and not woorth the bidding?

*S. Griffin.* Thou doost but jest, John. I hope it is not so.

*Cumber.* I say it is. Heere comes another: let's see if him I knowe.

*From the other end of the Stage enter another antique as the first.*

2 *Antique.* In a silent shade, as I sate a sunning,  
There I heard a mayd greevously complayne.

May mones she sayde, amongst her sithes still  
comming,

All was \* \* \* \* \*

Then her aged father counceld her the rather  
To consent where he had plaste his mynde;  
But her peevish mother brought her to another,  
Though it was agaynste bothe course and kynde.

Then like a father will I come to check my filly,  
For her gadding foorth without my leave;  
And if she repent it, I am well contented  
Home agayne my darling to receive.

*[Exit into the Castell.]*

*Cumber.* Lord Powesse, you may guesse by the song  
who this is.

*Powesse.* If thother was Llwellen, as thou saydst,  
I doubt, then, this [was] Ranulphe Earle of Chester,  
Or some devise figurd by thee for them,  
To fright us when we are in surest safetie.

*Cumber.* Content ye, Lordes, the fathers beeing by,  
You may be sure nothing shall goe awry.  
Heere comes another: listen what he is.

*From under the Stage, the third antique.*

3 *Antique.* You that seek to sunder loove,  
 Learne a lesson ere you goe;  
 And as others paynes doo proove,  
 So abyde your selves lyke woe.  
 For I fynde, and you shall feele  
 Selfe same turne of Fortunes wheele:  
 Then if wrong be repayde,  
 Say deserved mends it made.

*[Exit into the Castell.*

*Cumber.* What say ye to Earle Moorton, Prince Griffin? lyke ye his company or no?

*S. Griffin.* Come, John, thou loov'st to jest. I perswade me it is not so.

*Gosselen.* Tush! no such matter: this antique disguise  
 Is but to give the Brydes a good morrow so soone as  
 they rise.

*Evan.* And to make you despaire in the course of his  
 arte,  
 He gives these names to every severall parte.

*Cumber.* What! another yet? Who should this be?

*The fourth out of a tree, if possible it may be.*

4 *Antique.* You stole my loove; fye uppon ye, fye.  
 You stole my love, fye, fye a.  
 Guest you but what a paine it is to proove,  
 You for your loove would dye a;  
 And hencefoorth never longer  
 Be such a craftie wronger:  
 But when deceit takes such a fall,  
 Then farewell sly devise and all.  
 You stole my loove; fye uppon ye, fye.  
 You stole my loove, fye, fye a.

*[Exit into the Castell.*

*Cumber.* My Lord of Pembroke! may it be possible?  
By my faith, we lookte for no such guests. Nay,  
then, Ile in to make up the messe.

*[Exit into the Castell, and makes fast the dore.]*

*Evan.* What meaneth John by this mad merrie  
humour?

He namde the Prince Llwellen and the Earle of  
Chester,  
The Earles of Moorton and of Pembroke, bothe your  
rivalles.

It seemes he would entise us to beleewe  
That in these antique shewes of quaint devise  
They severally are entred in the Castell.  
Tis hard for us to judge of his intent.

*Enter JOHN A KENT, talking with his boy.*

*S. Griffin.* Heere now he comes agayne; but not from  
foorth the Castell!

Ile be so bolde as break his serious talke,  
For these devises make me much misdoubt  
Further then I as yet will seeme to speak on.—  
Now, gentle John, shall we intreat to knowe  
The meaning of your merrie antique showe?

*John.* What showe, my Lord? what meaning should  
I tell?

*Powesse.* Why, John, those antiques went into the  
Castell.

Foure was there of them, and eche severally  
Bothe dauncste and sung heere very pleasantly.  
The first thou toldst us was the Prince Llwellen;  
The second, noble Ranulphe Earle of Chester,  
Whom thou hadst brought to grace this day withall.  
Moorton and Pembroke were the other twayne;  
In all which, John, I knowe thou didst but fayne.  
Then now at large \* \* \* \*





Some sly magitian hath usurpte thy shape,  
And this day made us all unfortunate.

*John.* What ere thou be, I charge thee tell thy name.

*Cumber.* My name is John: what sayst thou to the same?

*John.* I would thou wert the John that I could wishe!

*Cumber.* If John a Cumber, then, the same it is.  
In thy proud thoughtes. John, did I heare thee say  
Thou wantedst one to thwart thy deep desseignes,  
Layd cunningly to countercheck this loove,  
Because it should not take successe so soone;  
And me thou namdste, freendly or how, I care not:  
Heere am I now; and what those Lordes have tolde  
thee

Is very true: thine eyes shall witness it.—

Sound musique, while I shewe to John a Kent

[*Musique.*

Those hither come, for whom he never sent.

*Whyle the musique playes, enters on the walles* LLWELLEN,  
CHESTER *with his Countesse,* MOORTON *with* SYDANEN,  
PEMB. *with* MARIAN; OSWEN, AMERYE.

*S. Griffin.* Ah, John! if these be not illusions,  
But the same partyes, all our hope is dashte.  
Llwellen, Ranulphe, and our hatefull foes!  
Help, John, or now afreshe beginnes our woes.

*Llwellen.* And are ye taken tardy in your shames,  
Proude Southwales Prince and overdaring Powesse?  
See, now, the issue of your enterprise  
Requites ye with your well deserving merits;  
And my Sydanen, thus restord agayne,  
Shall with Earle Moorton safely now remayne.

*Chester.* Madame, I judgde you guiltie in this wrong,  
Till John a Cumber heere resolvde the doubt.  
Now, Powesse, brag of thy late gotten conquest:

Let John a Kent, with all the witte he hath,  
 Restore thee Marian, if he can, from me.—  
 Heere, Earle of Pembrook; take her, she is thine,  
 And thank kinde John, whose cunning is divine.

*Pemb.* Thankes unto him, and you, most noble Lord,  
 And shame to them such as their deedes deserve,  
 That would have severd me from my sweet choyse.  
 I hope heeres one hath met with John a Kent,  
 To teache him how true love he dooth prevent.

*Moorton.* Was there no way to yeeld your love suc-  
 cesse,

But by that fellowes sillie practises?  
 Let him heerafter meddle with his mates:  
 Heeres one hath given me Marian back agayne;  
 Let him attempt to fetch her, if he dare.

*Sydanen.* Was never lady wronged thus before!  
 Marian, thou knowest my minde; I say no more.

*Marian.* Sweet Cossen, what we may not now impart,  
 Heere let us bury it, closely in our hart.

*Countesse.* This sudden chaunge hath altred quite your  
 hope.

What was at first concluded now must be:  
 Cossen and daughter, help none else ye see.

*Cumber.* Now, John without, listen to John within.  
 The mariage thou appoynted for those Lordes  
 Shall be effected now with these two Lordes;  
 And for they would not let us be their guests,  
 They nor thy selfe gets any of our feastes.<sup>1</sup>  
 In mockerie wishe for me another day.  
 So, fare ye well: we have no more to say.

*John.* Good John within, heare John without a little.  
 Winners may bragge, losers have leave to speak.  
 Under my shaddowe have you doone all this:  
 Much greater cunning had it beene thine owne.

<sup>1</sup> This and the preceding line are struck out in the MS.

As yet thou doost but rob me of my selfe.  
 Good, honest Jhon, let me beholde thy selfe :  
 Perhaps my shape makes thee thus boldly vaunte,  
 And armes thee with this ablenes of skill,  
 Wheras thine owne, beeing insufficient,  
 May make thee feare to deale with John a Kent.

*Cumber.* Lordes and fayre Ladyes, goe, disporte your  
 selves

About the walkes and gardens of this Castell.  
 And for thou ween'st so gayly of thy selfe,  
 Within this hower, John, Ile meete with thee,  
 In mine owne shape, uppon this Castell greene,  
 Where I will dare thee, and out dare thee too,  
 In what soever John a Kent can doo.

*John.* I take thy woord.—Ladyes, to you alone  
 Wish I all good, but to the others none. [*They descend.*]

*S. Griffin.* Why, say, sweet John, what shall betyde  
 us now?

Now are we wursse than ere we were before.

*John.* Sirra, get ye to the back gate of the Castell,  
 And through the key hole nimbly wring thee in.  
 Marke well, and bring me woord what stratageme  
 This cumbring John meanes next to enterprise,  
 For I am sure he will not leave me so,  
 At least, I meane not him. Away then! goe.

*Shrimp.* I fly, sir; and am there alreadye. [*Exit boy.*]

*Powesse.* No comfort, John? What! standst thou  
 all amort?

Tis only we that have the greatest cause.  
 Thou canst, I knowe, cope with this John a Cumber,  
 And maister him, maugre his utmoste skill,  
 If thou wilt searche into thy deepe conceites.

*Gosselen.* John, I myselfe have oft times heard thee  
 wishe

That thou mightst buckle with this John a Cumber.

Come is he now, to all our deep disgrace,  
Except thou help it ere he scape this place.

*John.* Maister, what ! he that went beyond the Devill,  
And made him serve him seaven yeares prentiship ?  
Ist possible for me to conquer him ?  
Tis better take this foyle, and so to end.

*S. Griffin.* Why, then, our Ladyes this day shall be wed,  
If or thou canst, or wilt not, stand us now in sted.

*John.* Nay, there's no wedding toward, that I can see,  
And when tis doone, yet heere it must not be.  
Content your selves, and walke the woodes about :  
Heere is no getting in, we are fayre lockt out.  
I cannot tell, but if I hit aright,  
For walking heere all day, I make some walke all night.  
Be gon, I pray ye ; youre but \* \*

[*Exeunt, præter JOHN.*]

*Enter SHRIMPE, skipping.*

Come on, sirra ; tell me, now, what newes ?

*Shrimpe.* Sir, yonders great preparation for a play,  
Which by the shaddowes of the Lordes and Ladyes  
Heere, on the greene, shall foorthwith be enacted ;  
And John a Cumbers whole intent heerein  
Is that your selfe shall see before your face  
His arte made currant, to your deep disgrace.

*John.* But where's the Countesse, Marian, and Sy-  
danen ?

They are not in the Castell ; that I knowe.

*Shrimpe.* Earle Chesters sonne and young Lord  
Amerye

Are merily conducting them to Chester ;  
And thither will the Lordes them selves this night,  
When they have seene this play in your dispiht.

*John.* Be gon, and bring the Ladyes back agayne,  
With them, likewise, are sent to be their guydes.

Stay with them at the Chesenut tree hard by,  
Till I come for them.—Now bestirre thee, John,

[*Exit boy.*

For in thy play I purpose to make one. [*Exit.*

*Enter JOHN A CUMBER in his owne habit; with him  
TURNOP, HUGH, and THOMAS the Tabrer.*

*Turnop.* Doo ye heare, sir? We can be content, as it were, to furnish ye with our facilitie in your play or enterlude. Marie, where ye would us to flout, scoff, and scorne at John a Kent, for my part, let Hugh Sexten and Thomas Tabrer doo as they see occasion, I am not to mock him, that is able to make a man a munkey in lesse then halfe a minute of an houre.

*Hugh.* Ile tell ye what, sir. If it be true that is spoken, marie, I will not stand to it: a man were better deale with the best man in the countrey then with maister John a Kent. He never goes abroad without a bushell of devilles about him, that if one speak but an ill woord of him, he knowes it by and by, and it is no more but send out one of these devilles, and wheres the man then? Nay, God blesse me from him.

*Thomas.* Harkeye, sir: you are a gentleman, and wee doo as much for my Lord the Earle, as poore men may doo, if it be to doo or say any thing agaynst him selfe or any other, wee doo it. Marie, Thomas Tabrer will never meddle with Mr. John; no, not I.

*Cumber.* Why, sillie soules, Ile be your warrantise: John shall not touch ye, doo the best he can. Ile make ye scorne-him to his very face,  
And let him venge it how he will or dare.

*Turnop.* By my troth, sir, ye seeme an honest man, and so, faith, could ye be as good as your woord, there be that, perhaps, would come somewhat roundly to ye. Indeed, sir, maister John hath dealt but even so so with

me in times past. Harke ye, sir, I never besorted or played the good fellowe, as sometimes ye knowe fleshe and blood will be frayle, but my wife hath knowen on it, ere I came home, and it could not be but by some of his flying devilles.

*Cumber.* Nay, I could tell ye other thinges besyde,  
What dayly wronges he dooth unto ye all;  
Which, for they aske some leysure to reporte,  
Ile urge no more but that ye joyne with me  
In such an action as I have in hand,  
When you shall see him so disabled,  
Not daring to offend the wurst of you,  
As hencefoorth will he hyde his head for shame,  
Weele make him such a scoffing, jesting game.<sup>1</sup>

*Hugh.* But shall he neither send his devilles to pinche us, nor doo any more harme, if wee doo as you bid us?

*Cumber.* Harke me. Ile make him fret him selfe to death

With very anger that he cannot touche ye.  
Bob, buffet him, doo him what wrong ye will,  
And feare not, Ile defend ye by my skill.

*Thomas.* Well, sir, Ile stand by and give aime; and if I see them speed well, Ile bring ye such a crewe of wenches, on whom his devilles have told lyes and tales, that your hart would burst to heare how they will use him.

*Cumber.* Why, this is excellent! you fit me now.  
Come in with me, Ile give you apt instructions,  
According to the purpose I entend,  
That John a Kent was nere so courst before.  
Our time is short; come, lette us in about it.

\* \* \* \* \*

[*Exeunt.*

*John.* Poore John a Kent! Heeres making roddes  
[for] you:

<sup>1</sup> This speech is struck out with a pen, in the MS.



Be made by Poet for Sydanen sake.

Her fine trim day is turn[d] to black cole night,  
And she hath lost her sweetest loove[s] delight.

*Shrimp.* But let Sydanen cast away this care;  
Comfort is neerer her then shee's aware.

[*To her, asyde.*]

*Sydanen.* What say you, Cossen? did you speak  
to me?

*Marian.* Not I, Sydanen: I with you complayne  
On fortunes spight and over deep disdayne.

*Shrimp.* But Marian with Sydanen may rejoyse,  
For time will let them have their owne harts choyse.

[*They look about.*]

*Sydanen.* Pray God, amen. O, cossen! did you heare?  
A voyce still buzzeth comfort in mine eare.

*Marian.* And so in mine; but I no shape can see.  
Tis John a Cumber mocks bothe you and me.

*Sydanen.* Cursse on his heart, for cumber[ing] true  
loove so,  
Which else had made full end of all our woe.

*Enter S<sup>r</sup> GOSSELEN, GRIFFIN, POWESSE, and EVAN.*

*Gosselen.* How say ye, Lordes? now credit John a  
Kent.

See where they are, and at the selfe same tree  
Where he assurde us all of them would be.

*S. Griffin.* Sweetest Sydanen, how thy happie syght  
Makes me forget all former sorrowe quyte!

*Powesse.* The lyke dooth Marians presence yeeld  
to me:

For all greefes past assurde felicitie! [*Musique chimes.*]

*Evan.* Listen, my Lordes! me thinkes I heare the  
chyme, [*A dayn[ty fit] of musique.*]

Which John did promise ere you should presume  
To venture for recoverie of the Ladyes.



*Gosselen.* The very same. Stay till the power therof  
Have layd the sleepe charge on bothe their eyes,  
That should have gyuded them from hence to Chester.

[*The boy trips round about OSWEN and AMERY,  
sing[ing in] chyme, and they, the one after the  
other, lay them [down] using very sluggish ges-  
tures: the Ladyes amazedly [looke] about them.*

[*Sing to the musique within.*

Sleep, sweetly, sleep sweetly, sweetly take rest,  
Till eche goe with her choyse, where she likes best.  
Ladyes, cheere up your despayring mindes,  
For your freendes are neere,  
That will answer true loove in due kinde,  
Then never more feare.

*Shrimp.* Lordes, take advauntage, for they bothe are  
fast.

Bid John a Cumber mend this cunning cast.

*Gosselen.* Feare not, good madame, for you must  
with me,

To one that joyes these loovers love to see.

[*The chyme playes, and GOSSELEN with the  
Countesse goes turning out.*

*S. Griffin.* And fayre Sydanen, I dare boldly say,  
Rather with me will goe, then heere to stay.

[*The chyme agayne, and they turne out in lyke  
manner.*

*Powesse.* I not misdoubt but Marian beares lyke  
mynde.

This is the way our sweet content to fynde.

[*The chyme agayne, and so they.*

[*Exeunt.*

*Shrimp.* Sir Evan, follow you the way they take,  
For now I must these sleepe Lordes awake.

[*Exit EVAN.*

Fye, gentlemen! what means this slothfulnes?

You sleep securely, while the subtill foe

[*They start up.*]

Hath got your charge, and bred a greater woe.

*Oswen.* Lord Amerye, how fell we thus asleep?

My mother, sister, and Sydanen's gon!

*Amery.* Canst thou, my boy, tell which way they  
have tane,

Or by what meanes they are thus gon from hence?

*Shrimp.* When as my maister, John a Cumber, sawe  
How carelessly you did respect your charge,  
And lay asleep, while as Sr Gosselen Denvyle,  
Prince Griffin, Powesse, and another Knight,  
Bare hence the Ladyes toward proud John a Kent,  
He sent me posting thorow the duskye ayre,  
To wake ye, and to cause ye followe me,  
To fetch them back ere they have got too farre.  
If then, youle speed, follow me presently.

*Oswen.* Thankes to thy maister: we will followe  
thee,

To make amends for our fond negligence.

*Shrimp.* And I will lead ye such a merrie walke,  
As you therof shall at more leysure talke.  
Come, gentlemen.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter* JOHN A KENT, *lyke* JOHN A CUMBER: *with him*  
LLWELLEN, CHESTER, MOORTON, *and* PEMBROOK,  
*foorth of the Castell.*

*John.* Lordes, take your places as you are appoynted.  
Though once I minded but to use your shaddowes,  
Pardon me, now I may imploy your persons,  
Because that your delight shall be the greater,  
And his disgrace the more to you apparant,  
That durst attempt so bolde an enterprise.  
Now shall ye see, if famous John a Kent  
Be able to avoyde disparagement.

*Llwellen.* But shall Sydanen and Earle Chester's daughter

Be here in person lykewise, as we are?

*John.* No, my good Lord; their figures shall suffice,  
Because you see they are disconsolate,  
And, to speak trueth, beare more affection  
To Griffin of Southwales and the Lord Powesse,  
Then to Earle Moorton and the Earle of Pembroke;  
Whose shaddowes when those other Lordes shall see  
So farre estraunged from their former course,  
How it will quayle their hope your selves shall judge,  
And make poor John a Kent mad to beholde it.

*Chester.* But long ere this I hope they are at Chester,  
And bothe their guydes in safetie at my house.

*John.* I warrant ye, my Lord, they'r safe enough  
From John, and all the utmoste he can doo.—  
See, my good Lord, what I doo for your sake,

[*To MOORETON.*

Who only may dispose of me and mine.

*Moorton.* I knowe it, John; and should I not confesse  
Thy kyndnes to exceed in my behalfe,  
And guerdon it, I greatly were to blame.

*Pemb.* The lyke say I, wherof \* \* care \* \*  
My thankfulnes shall more at large assure thee.

*John.* Needlesse, my Lordes, are all these ceremonyes;  
For as I further you in looves affayres,  
So I expect some credit by mine Arte.  
Now, silence, Lordes, for all the sportes begin:  
And see where John a Kent is first come in.

*Enter JOHN A CUMBER, lyke JOHN A KENT.*

*Cumber.* As he that with unsatiate thirst of fame  
Pursues an action of some high applause,  
To conquer his usurping enemye,  
And add renowne for ever to his deedes,

So John a Cumber followes his intent  
To conquer. Sit, and laugh at John a Kent.

*Llwellen.* What sayes he? Will he laugh him selfe  
to scorne?

*John.* My Lord, you little thinke the scope of his  
intent.

He dooth imagine he hath tane my shape,  
And you shall heare him speak as he were John a  
Cumber.

Note all his actions, and let it suffice,  
Heele proove him selfe a foole before your eyes.

*Chester.* And yet imagine that he scorneth thee?

*John.* Why, that is all. For God's sake, sit and  
see.

*Cumber.* Alreadie are my shaddowes set in order,  
For Prince Llwellen, Chester, Pembroke, Moorton.

[*He poyntes to them.*

And see, poore John a Kent is walking by  
As one, that cannot yeeld a reason why.

*Moorton.* He poyntes to thee, and tearmes thee John  
a Kent.

Let him heerafter brag with John a Cumber.

*Pemb.* When men of Arte thus strive in merriment,  
It needes must rayse in meaner wittes some wunder.

*John.* Begin your scene; and if he be not vext,  
I doubt not but he shalbe with the next.

*Llwellen.* Fye, John a Kent! what injurie is this

[*He riseth and goeth to JOHN A CUMBER.*

That thou hast offered to this noble man?  
Sydanen, my fayre daughter, whom I loove,  
Wouldst thou have wedded to the Southwales Prince,  
And broughtst her hither to thy maisters Castell,  
From whence she was recovered, to thy shame.  
Fye, John a Kent! for this most sillie parte,  
Heerafter tearme thy selfe no man of Arte.

*Chester.* Thy subtill wandring in an Hermit's weede,  
 [*Suddenly starting to him, after the other hath done.*]  
 Wherby thou didst seduce my aged wife  
 To let her daughter, and my loovely niece,  
 Walke with her to Saint Winifrydes fayre spring,  
 To offer up theyr latest mayden vowes,  
 And thou, like to an hippocrite, their guyde,  
 Say, foollish man, what hast thou wun heerby,  
 But such dishonor as will never dye?

*Moorton.* John, John, call thou to minde the antiques  
 That in thy absence got into the Castell, [*He suddenly.*]  
 And ore the walles returnd unto thy face,  
 The only argument of thy disgrace.  
 Alas! good John, account it then no wunder,  
 Such is thy luck to deale with John a Cumber.

*Pemb.* Well, John a Kent, wilt thou be rulde by me?  
 [*He suddenly.*]

Leave Wales, leave England, and be seene no more.  
 This monstrous blemish, graven uppon thy browe,  
 Will be but greefe to us, thy countrey men.  
 Then, seeing that so tardy thou art catcht,  
 Yeeld him the bucklers that thee overmatcht.

*Cumber.* How now! What's this? My shaddowes  
 taught to speak  
 That to my face they should unto my foe?

*Llucellen.* Shaddowes proove substaunce. John, thou  
 art too weak;  
 Then, like a sillie fellowe, pack and goe.

*Cumber.* Speak heere to John a Kent. Speak ye to me?

*Chester.* We speak to John the foole, and thou art he.

*Cumber.* Spirits, Ile to [punish] ye for this abuse.

*Moorton.* Fret not thy selfe \* \* \* \* \*

\* \* \* \* \* appoynted ye?

*Pemb.* Alas! poore sillie soule, thou mayst appoynt,  
 And all thy poynting is not woorth a poynt.

*Cumber.* Whence am I crost? may it be John a Kent

Hath overwatchte me in myne owne devise?

The more I strive to knowe, the further off

I am from compassing what fayne I would.

He sit awhyle and meditate heeron. [*He sits downe.*]

*John.* What! in a study? Nay, I must awake him;  
With other thinges more angry yet must make him.

*Enter Sr GOSSELEN DENVYLE, GRIFFIN, POWESSE,  
the Countesse, SYDANEN, and MARIAN.*

*Gosselen.* Alas, alas! why droupeth John a Kent?

[*To CUMBER.*]

Looke cheerely, man; for see, Earle Chester's wife,

Through power of thine incomparable skill,

Is back returnd from devillish John a Cumber,

And no man hath the shame but he alone.

[*JOHN A CUMBER stamps about.*]

*S. Griffin.* I knowe this sadnes is but thy conceite,

Because he crost thee ere thou wast aware;

But may not this cheere up thy minde agayne,

That thou hast brought me sweet Sydanen backe?

*Powesse.* And heere is Marian, too, my soules delight,  
Who, but for thee, had beene Earle Pembrookes bryde.

Let John a Cumber's foyle, then, be of force,

Sithe we enjoy what we can moste desyre,

To make thee leave this discontented humour.

*Cumber.* Sleep I, or wake I? dreame I, or doo I  
dote?

Looke, what I poynted all these shapes to doo

Agaynst the man that I doo envye moste,

They doo it to me; and he sits laughing by,

As if there were no John a Kent but I.

*Countesse.* Why, frollique, John: thy arte proves  
excellent.

Let not one simple foyle make thee dismay;  
 Thou art revendge unto thine none content:  
 Let John a Cumber doo the wurst he may.

*Sydanen.* And will sweet John a Kent not look so sad,  
 Sydanen will intreat all Brittain's Poets  
 To write large volume of thy learned skill  
 For bringing her where she desyre[s] to be,  
 And from that John a Cumber set her free.

*Marian.* Look, what my cossen sayth, the lyke doo I,  
 And will extoll thy fame continually.

*Evan.* Into the Castell, then, and frollique there.  
 I knowe that John will not stay long behinde,  
 Since your successe dooth answere thus his mynde.

[*Exeunt into the Castell.*]

*John.* How say ye now, my Lord? Did not these  
 shaddowes

Make him halfe thinke they were the same indeed?

*Llucellen.* What ere they did in him, beleeve me,  
 freend,

But that I more relye uppon thine arte  
 Then the opinion this hath raysde in me,  
 I should have sworne that that was my Sydanen.

*Moorton.* In sooth, my Lord, I jump with your counte-  
 ceite.

And trust me, I was not a little moovde,  
 Prince Griffin's shape so led her by the hand,  
 But that I credit arte more then mine eye.

*Powesse.* Will ye beleeve me, but that John is by,  
 And dooth all this to plague yon John a Kent,  
 These semblaunces would make me much misdeeme.—  
 Pardon me, John, for loove is full of feare,  
 And such illusions neither please eye nor eare.<sup>1</sup>

*Chester.* Then well fare me, that differ from you all.  
 Should I have tooke that shaddowe for my Countesse,

<sup>1</sup> This speech is struck out in the MS.

Or else the other for my daughter Marian?

Nay, what he did already so resolves me,  
That I am dreadlesse now of John a Kent.

*John.* I thanke ye, good my Lord: so holde ye still,  
For John's no John, I see, without good skill.  
There's one fit more of merriment behinde,  
That if't hit right will serve him in his kinde.

*Enter TURNOP and his trayne.*

*Turnop.* A pause, maisters, a pause. We are not  
come only \* \* \* \* to doo somewhat else besyde, for  
we are of the Qu \* \* \* \* nick nock John a Kent, if  
the honest gentleman [be as good as his] woord.

*Thomas.* As good as his woord? Why, looke ye  
yonder, where he standes \* \* \* honors woorschip, even  
as he sayd he would, he noddess his head \* \* \* as one  
would say, maisters, fall to your busines, or doo that ye  
come for.

*Hugh.* Good Lord! looke you how John a Kent sits  
in a browne study, as it were. Who shall begin now?  
Come, lets knowe that.

*Turnop.* Who shall begin? what a question is that!  
Let mayde Marian have the first flurt at him, to set an  
edge on our stomacks, and let me alone, in faith, to  
jerke it after her.

*Spurling.* Now, by my troth, well advise, good  
neighbour Turnop. Ile turne her to him, if he were a  
farre better man then is.—Too him, too him, touch him  
roundly.

*Boy.* What! think ye I am afrayde of him? In  
faith, sir, no.—Precise, John, or rather peevish, peeld,  
paltrie John; doost thou remember how many in-  
juries from time to time thou hast doone me? First in  
sending thy devilles to tell lyes and tales of me; then,  
making my dame to cudgell me; and after to pinche me



black and blewe, when I never offended thee: for which I defye thee to thy face, and dare thee to meete me in any place.

*Turnop.* Heare, ye sir. You, sir, as one would say, good man; you sir, because brevitie is best in such a queazie action, it is concluded or conditioned among us that have some authoritie in this case, that because our Morris lackes a foole, and we knowe none fitter for it then you, Mr. John, heeres a coat, spick and span new: it never came on any man's back since it was made. Therefore, for your further credit, we will give you haunsell of it; and where we took you for a wise man before, we are contented to account of ye as our foole for ever heerafter.

*Hugh.* In wisse wherof, we, the youthes of the parishe, put it on ye with our owne handes.

[*Put it on him.*

Nay, never strive or wunder, for thus we are appoynted by great John a Cumber.

*Turnop.* At it now, Thomas, lustily; and let us jerk it over the greene, seeing we have got such a goodly foole as Mr. John a Kent.

*Chester.* Why, this will make poore John a Kent stark mad;

And, questionlesse, heele nere more shewe his face  
To be reprooved with this deep disgrace.

*John.* Lordes, sit ye still: Ile come agayne anon.—  
I am prettely revengde on Cumbring John. [*Exit.*

*Enter SHRIMPE, leading OSWEN and AMERY about the tree.*

*Oswen.* Were never men thus led about a tree;  
Still circling it, and never getting thence!  
My braynes doo ake, and I am growen so faynt,  
That I must needes lye downe, on meere constraynt.

[*He lyes downe.*

*Amery.* This villayne boy is, out of doubt, some spirit.  
Still he cryes follow, but we get no further  
Then in a ring to daunce about this tree.  
In all my life I never was so wearie:  
Follow that list, for I can goe no longer.

[*He lyes downe.*]

*Shrimp.* There lye and rest ye, for I think your walke  
Hath not beene altogether to your ease.—  
Now I must hence: I heare my maister's call.  
It standes uppon the push of opening all. [*Exit boy.*]

*Oswen.* Lord Amery, is not yon my father,  
The Prince Llwellen, Moorton, and Earle Pembrook?

*Amery.* 'Tis they, indeed. O! let us call to them,  
To trye if they can get us from this tree.—  
Help, Prince of Wales! ah! help us, Earle of Chester,  
Or else thy sonne and I are lyke to perishe!

*Chester.* Oswen, my sonne? and young Lord Amery?—  
Shaddowes they be not, for tis they, indeed.

[*Then [go to] them.*]

Tell me, ah! tell me, wherfore lye ye heere?  
Where are the Ladyes that you had in charge?

*Llwellen.* Ah, speak, young Lordes! my hart dooth  
dread some ill,

Ye looke so gastly, and so full of feare.

*Oswen.* Lend us your ayde, to rayse us on our feete,  
That we may get from this accursed tree.

[*They help them.*]

\* \* \* \* \* the unhappy newes.

No ill to my Sydanen, then I can not.

[*Powesse.*] Be Marian well, be what it may besyde.

*Oswen.* Where is the villayne boy that thus misled us?  
Boy was he not, but questionlesse some fiend,  
That hath tormented us as nere was lyke.

*Llwellen.* Aske for no boyes, aske for no fiends or  
furies,

But tell me quickly where is my Sydanen?  
Living or dead, or how is she bereft ye?

*Oswen.* Breefely to answeere all of ye together,  
Nor of my mother, Marian, or Sydanen,  
Lyes it in us to tell ye what's become;  
Other than this, as it was tolde to us,  
That Griffin, Powesse, and S<sup>r</sup> Gosselen Denvyle  
Reskewed them from us: how or when we knowe not.  
So sayd a devill, or boy, sent to us from John a Cumber.

*Enter JOHN A CUMBER, pulling of his foole[s] coat, lyke  
KENT still.*

*Cumber.* From me, young Lordes? alas! you were  
deceiv'd,  
As you, likewise, and all have beene together.—  
Looke not so straunge, Lordes; deeme not me John a  
Kent,  
That in his sted have beene so much misusde:  
Scorned by you, then flouted by the Ladyes;  
Last made a foole heere in a morris daunce,  
And all, preparede gaynst him, turnd on my selfe.  
In breefe, then, to abridge all further wonder,  
Yonder is John a Kent, heere John a Cumber.

*[Enter] JOHN A KENT in his owne habit, DENVYLE,  
GRIFFIN, POWESSE, Countesse, SYDANEN, MARIAN,  
and SHRIMP, on the walles.*

*John.* Now John within may speak to John without,  
And, Lordes, to you that frumped him so finely.  
Once you were heere, and shut us out of doore;  
You had these Ladyes, but ye could not keep them.  
Where are those twayne that daunc'st about the tree?  
Look on your minstrell heere, sirs: this was he.—

*[To SHRIMP.*

But as for you, John, that usurpte my shape,

And promise you would meet me on the greene,  
 O! you were busied too much with your play;  
 But you knowe best who went the foole away.  
 That I am quit with thee thou wilt confesse.

*Cumber.* I doo, John, for twere shame to yeeld thee  
 lesse;

But I may live to meet with thee heerafter.  
 I pray thee, John, shall we have one cast more?

*John.* So thoulst deale wyser then thou didst before.  
 Promise me one thing, Lordes, and you shall see  
 Ile offer him more oddes then he dare me.

*Llucellen.* Lets heare it, John; and as we like wee  
 answeere.

*John.* It is so reasonable, you cannot deny me.  
 Fayne would ye that your daughters were combinde  
 In sacred wedlock with those noble Lordes:  
 Promise me that it shall be doone this day,  
 Without more dallying, Ile deliver them [*The Ladyes.*  
 To John a Cumber, so he will bestowe  
 His very deepest skill to make it sure.  
 But if he fayle, and be my luck to speed,  
 To ceasse contention, and confesse him foyld,  
 As I will doo the lyke if he prevayle.

*Llucellen.* I am agreed: what sayes my Lord of  
 Chester?

*Chester.* The motion is so good that I consent.

*Cumber.* Lordes and fayre Ladyes, you likewise agree  
 To take your fortune, how so ere it be?

*Omnes.* We doo.

*John.* Then, not so churle-like as when you were  
 Lordes

Of this our Castell, to allow no favour,  
 But even to hunger starve us at the doore,  
 Enter all freely, and take parte with us  
 [In our] good cheere, for some of you have need.

The \* \* \* \* \*

And afterward are right welcome to try  
Who shall have conquest, either he or I.

*Cumber.* Bravely resolvde, John; I must needes  
commend thee.

Thould have the wurst, if fortune but befriend me.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACTUS QUINTUS. SCENA PRIMA.

*Enter the Abbot of Chester, reading a letter, and one of  
[the Earl of Chester's Servants.]*

*Abbot.* My honest freend, this letter from thy Lord  
Shewes that the mariages, so long deferd,  
Betweene the Ladyes and their severall suters,  
Must now at length be finished this day;  
And at this Abbey is the place appoynted.  
Further he sayth, that all the Abbey gates  
Not only must be fast, but strongly mand  
With his owne guard, appoynted for the purpose,  
That none may issue foorth, or enter in,  
But such as first must by him selfe be seene.  
What! is there daunger of prevention,  
Or that resistaunce will be offered?

*Servant.* Daunger there is, but what, in sooth, I  
knowe not.

Lord Abbot, I have performde my charge to you;  
I must goc warne his garde in readines,  
And then returne to certefye my Lord.

*Abbot.* Assure his honor what he hath referd  
Unto my trustie care and secrecie  
In every poynt shall answer his content.  
Our Lord forbid, but he should heere commaund,  
That is our patrone, and so good an Earle.

*Servant.* His honor will be thankfull for this kindnes,  
Which Ile not fayle at full to let him knowe.

[*Exit Servant.*]

*Abbot.* Farewell, my freend.—He bout my busines  
strayte,  
And gaynst his comming give my due attendaunce.

[*Erit Abbot.*

*Enter JOHN A KENT, DENVYLE, GRIFFIN, and  
POWESSE.*

*S. Griffin.* Would any man but you have beene so  
fond,  
To yeeld the Ladyes, when we might have kept them?  
Poore soules, with what unwillingnes they went!  
Pray God this rashnes all we not repent.

*Powesse.* What though that once you proovde too  
harde for him,  
Still are ye certaine of the like successe?  
Remember how he crost us at [the] first;  
Once warnde dooth make a man to dread the wurst.

*Denvyle.* I will suspend my judgement in this case,  
And rather hope then feare what may befall.  
Once this I knowe, it will goe wondrous hard  
Ere John a Kent be in his purpose bard.

*John.* Feare you; hope you: for my parte, He doo  
neither,  
But track his steppes that treads the way before,  
To doo the thing he can undoo no more.  
These weddings, then, must be at Chester Abbey,  
The gates wherof moste strongly will be mand:  
Entraunce there is allowed at none but one,  
And John a Cumber there must be the porter.  
Tis very lyke, then, none of you get in;  
And yet, in faith, it would be very prettie  
To proove his eye sight, whether he doo knowe  
The men that should be let in, yea or no.  
Would not you laugh to see him let you in,  
And keep them out that should his wager winne?

*S. Griffin.* Oh! that were excellent, might it be so;  
And if thou list, doubtlesse it shall be so.

*John.* Lord Powesse, what think you?

*Powesse.* Even as Prince Griffin, so, sweet John,  
say I.

Thou art the man mayst make us live or dye.

*Dencyle.* If it should fall out so successfully,  
Besyde the endless [fame] that thou shalt wynne,  
Proud John a Cumbers foyle will be therin.

\* \* \* \* \* it shall be so,

Though John a Cumber, even him selfe, say no.

[*Griffin.*] But how can we disguyse our selves so  
soone,

In every poynt lyke Moorton and Earl Pembroke?  
For otherwise we must, of force, be knowen.

[*John.*] Tush! wele no shapes, nor none of these  
disguysings:

They heertofore servde bothe his turne and mync.

As now ye are so shall ye passe the gate;

And for the blame shall not relye alone

On poore John Cumber, when the faulte is spyed,

Albeit his skill will be the lesse therby,

The Prince Llwellen and the Earle of Chester

Shall bothe be by, and graunt as much he:

Nay, more, them selves shall bring ye to the Chappell,

And at their handes shall you receive your Brydes.

If this I doo not, ere two houres be spent,

Never let me be called more John a Kent.

*Powesse.* Ah, peerelesse John! with loove, with life,  
and landes,

Will we requyte this kindnes at thy handes.

*S. Griffin.* And sing sweet Sonnets in thy endlesse  
prayse,

While our fayre looves and we enjoy our dayes.

*John.* Let us away: it is uppon their comming.

For they think long untill the deed be doone,  
 Wherby John hopes his credit will be wun.<sup>1</sup>

[*Exeunt.*

*Enter* LLWELLEN, CHESTER, *Countesse*, SYDANEN,  
 MARIAN, OSWEN, AMERY, JOHN A CUMBER, *and*  
*Abbot.*

*Chester.* Feare not, my Lordes: my selfe have beene  
 about,

And seene the gates mand as they ought to be,  
 With spyes besyde that shall regard the walles;  
 And with the Abbot have I tane this order,  
 Only this gate shall serve for enteraunce.

*Llwellen.* But, by your leave, my Lord, we will  
 entreat

That John a Cumber, till it be dispatchte,  
 Will sit as porter: then we may be sure,  
 That practise John a Kent what ere he dare,  
 While he is there the lesse need be our care.

*Cumber.* Alas! my Lordes, I see what he intends:  
 To come in person like this reverend Abbot,  
 Therby to get in Griffin and Lord Powesse;  
 But therin Ile prevent him, feare ye not.—  
 Father, take you the Ladyes to your charge,  
 And with the Countesse lead them to the Chappell.—  
 You twayne will stay untill the Brydegroomes come,  
 Then, afterward, let all the charge be mine.

*Countesse.* Come, loovely niece, and Marian, wend  
 with me.

This day will end the greefes wherin you be.

*Sydanen.* But may it proove as poore Sidanen wish,  
 Else her hart cares will farre surmount her blisse.

<sup>1</sup> The three last speeches are struck out in the MS.



*Marian.* Now, John a Kent, if ever thou shewedst skill,

Doo it this instant, and our joyes fulfill.<sup>1</sup>

[*Exeunt Count., SYDANEN, &c.*

*Lhcellen.* I wunder that these Lordes doo stay so long.

So soone as we they sayd they would be heere.

*Enter JOHN A KENT a loof off; GRIFFIN and Lord POWESSE.*

*John.* Goe on, and feare not. Now, John, we shall see If ye can help your eyes infirmitie.

*Chester.* O! heere they be.—Fye, Lordes! why stay ye so?

The others would have made more haste, I knowe.

*Cumber.* Be you their guyde.—Goe, quickly make an end,

And then let John a Kent my skill commend.

[*Exeunt.*

[*John.*] O, rare magitian! that hast not the power  
To beat asyde a sillie dazeling mist,  
Which a meere abce scholler in the arte  
Can doo it with the least facilitie.  
But I will ease them when the other come,  
To see how then he will bestirre him selfe!

*Enter MOORTON and PEMBROOKE.*

\* \* \* doe my Lord that there \* \* \*  
\* \* \* me \* \* \* they \* be \* \* \*  
I had not parted with them but \* \* \*  
By thy leave, John, say are the \* \* \*

*Cumber.* Alas, alas! hath cunning John \* \*

<sup>1</sup> The three last speeches are struck out in the MS.

No wiser way than this to find \* \* \*

Goe aske of him whether the \* \* \*

And he will say they are wed. \* \* \*

*Moorton.* Wedded? to whom? I hope \* \* \*

*Cumber.* To them whose counterfeite \* \* \*

To noble Earle of Pembroke \* \* \*

*Pemb.* Are not we they? what! a \* \* \*

*Cumber.* How ere I am, no passage w \* \* \*

For you or him, although he d \* \* \*

*John.* Why, gentlemen, can ye thus \* \* \*

Is this the man whose know \* \* \*

To face ye downe ye be not \* \* \*

*Enter* CHESTER, LLW. \* \* \*

*Cumber.* Why, how now, Lordes! joy \* \* \*

*Llucellen.* At that which now is to \* \* \*

Prince Griffin and \* \* \*

Unto our daughter \* \* \*

We tooke them \* \* \*

*Chester.* Heere you my Lord \* \* \*

While you ha \* \* \*

You come to \* \* \*

*Moorton.* Oswen sp \* \* \*

*Oswen.* Jest th \* \* \*

Earle \* \* \*

You w \* \* \*

for \* \* \*

*E.*

*Amery.* \* \* \* \* \*

\* \* \* me or you \* \* \*

\* \* \* had beene to haue wrongde them.

\* \* \* doo the lyke confesse,

\* \* \*   nd Sydanen nere the lesse.  
\* \* \*   ld as toward me you mean.  
\* \* \*   thanke thee, John a Kent  
\* \* \*   must yeelde her towards the  
\* \* \*   you had so much to doo.  
\* \* \*   make ye waste the time in vayne,  
\* \* \*   as this day requires  
\* \* \*   ter be not thou displeasde,  
\* \* \*   feast these amorous cares hath easde.  
\* \* \*   so disgraste by thee,  
\* \* \*   bothe of mine and me.  
\* \* \*   des and ever more heerafter  
\* \* \*   vow continuall loove.  
\* \* \*   fortune was not evill  
\* \* \*   overmatchde the Devill.

*[Exeunt.]*

[FIN]IS

ANTHONY MUNDY.

\* \*   Decembris, 1595.

# NOTES

## TO

### JOHN A KENT AND JOHN A CUMBER.

---

Page 5, line 11, Thorow *West* Chester.] Chester was formerly commonly called West Chester. See various instances in a note to Dyce's *Webster's Works*, iii., 140.

Page 6, line 21, *Wight* and *tall*.] *Active* (sometimes *stroag*) and *able*, words of frequent occurrence in these senses. "Hooks and bills," in the next line but one, are the weapons with which Sir Evan Griffin has armed his three hundred men.

Page 7, line 34, But John a Kent won't *leese* them.] Will not *lose* them. In many parts of England, gleanings are called *leesings*; perhaps collecting what the men employed in cutting the corn *lose*.

Page 9, line 21, No, God forbid; although you are not he.] This is marked in the MS. as spoken by Sydanen "*asyde*," a direction seldom found in other manuscript, or printed, copies of old plays.

Page 10, line 13, *Exeunt. Manent Sidanen, &c.*] The Lords go out, and leave Sydanen, Marian, and the Countess, on the stage. The names of the two last may have been originally inserted, but have been obliterated in the MS.

Page 10, line 31, But what olde man is this comes toward us?] The MS. shows by a line with the pen and the word "Enter," in the margin, that John a Kent was, in fact, to make his appearance to the ladies just as the Countess had said, "And, therefore, cast these cares behind thy back." The regular direction, "Enter John a Kent, like an aged Hermit," is inserted exactly where we have placed it.

Page 13, line 33, But husht! Heere comes my hotspurre, and Lord Powesse.] Meaning Sir Griffin, who had counselled such precipitate measures of open hostility to the Earl of Chester.

Page 14, line 5, Turnd greene to Fryers gray.] Showing that John

a Kent had worn a green dress before he assumed the disguise of a grey Hermit, or, as he is here called, in the text, a Pilgrim.

Page 17, line 1, Borne by that monstrous *murrian* black-a-moore.] *i.e.*, monstrous *morian*, or *moorish* black-a-moor.] The Moors are often called Morians by Fairfax, in his translation of Tasso.

Page 21, line 12, *Oppose* this question.] So the MS., for *Appose*, or put this question.

Page 22, line 32, *Round* in his eare.] *Whisper* in his ear.

Page 23, line 17, As her rosemary braunche.] It is not easy, nor perhaps was it intended, to make much sease out of this nonsense. Rosemary was used at weddings.

Page 23, line 27, *When* then, tune all.] So the MS.; but perhaps "when" was miswritten for *Well*.

Page 24, line 8, Song of the Brydes loss ] This and "the Welsh song" are both wanting in the MS. Perhaps they had been written and composed separately for the singers, and it was considered not necessary to insert them here.

Page 24, line 12, Making them selves ready.] *i.e.*, *dressing* themselves Oswen and Amery, though here mentioned, do not, in fact, come in until afterwards.

Page 24, line 29, Heere enter Amery and Oswen rubing ] *Rubbing* their eyes, we may suppose, as just awake; but the MS. leaves the stage-direction imperfect.

Page 25, line 11, 1 Serrvaunt.] This speech is struck through with a pen in the MS., perhaps as unnecessary.

Page 26, line 24, Why, now *this geere doth cotton* in righte kinde.] A very common proverbial expression, indicating agreement and success.

Page 28, line 35, And John in cunning *graylde*.] *Gravelled*, from *graille*, which is used by old writers for gravel.

Page 29, line 31, *Look in his glasse*.] His perspective glass, common to magicians, by which they saw whatever was passing, at any distance.

Page 30, line 1, Actus Tertius.] This division (without any note of the Scene) is only marked in the margin of the MS.

Page 33, line 22, The fourth out of a tree, if possible it may be.] *i.e.*, if the properties belonging to the theatre would allow the use of such a contrivance. We are not told what was to be done, if it were not possible for the fourth Antique to come out of a tree.

Page 38, line 27, What! standst thou *all amort*.] An expression—meaning dispirited, or dead and heavy—found in Shakespeare, and in nearly all our old dramatists.

Page 39, line 15, *Exeunt.*] A stage-direction, wanting, and probably once existing, in the MS, but worn away at the bottom of the page. "Enter Shrimpe" is in the margin, three lines anterior to where his formal entrance is noted: he, no doubt, was intended to be seen "skipping" about, before John a Kent had finished his speech.

Page 39, line 33, With them, likewise, are sent to be their guydes.] *i.e.*, with them, likewise, *who* are sent to be their guides; viz., Oswen and Amery.

Page 41, line 22, Ile stand by and *give aime.*] To *give aim* generally means to direct, and to *cry aim* to encourage. both phrases occur in Shakespeare: see vol. i., 167, 224; iv., 24; and vi., 361, Edit. Collier. The expression was very frequently employed by writers of that period.

Page 41, line 33, *John.* Poore John a Kent.] Perhaps John a Kent here re-entered, but the MS. is so worn away, that no such stage-direction can be read. When he made his *exit*, on the preceding page, possibly he only withdrew to listen.

Page 42, line 13, One of us Johns must play besyde the booke.] "The book" refers to the prompter's book;" and to "play beside the book" must mean to play some part, or passage not found in the prompter's book.

Page 43, line 18, For *cumber* true loove so.] Sic in MS.: but, probably, we ought to read *cumbering*, or *cumb'ring*.

Page 43, line 32, A dayn[ty fit] of musique.] We presume that what we have placed between brackets is what has been here worn away from the margin of the MS. The same circumstance has rendered the next stage-direction and part of the text imperfect, though it is still intelligible.

Page 44, line 20, To one *that* joyes.] "To one *the* joyes," in the MS.; a mere clerical error.

Page 44, line 22, goes turning out.] *i.e.*, turning or dancing to the music, as Sir Gosselen and the Countess leave the stage.

Page 48, line 22, *Yeeld him the bucklers* that thee overmatcht.] An expression signifying the abandonment of a contest, in consequence of defeat. So Benedick, in "Much Ado about Nothing," act 7., sc. 2, says to Margaret—"I give thee the bucklers"

Page 51, line 8, Enter Turnop and his trayne.] Perhaps in the MS., as it originally stood, the names of Hugh, Thomas Tabrer, &c., were given; but, owing partly to the corner of the leaf having rotted away, they are not now legible. what they say is also imperfect, as our asterisks denote. It is very clear that they are dressed like morris-dancers, and that a boy played Maid Marian in the performance.

Page 53, line 19, They [go to] them ] “They \* \* them” is all that can be read in the MS.

Page 53, line 28, \* \* \* the unhappy newes ] This imperfect speech evidently belongs to Prince Griffin, but his name has disappeared from the MS. The next speech has been assigned to Powesse, and the sense informs us that it can only be his.

Page 56, line 10, [the Earl of Chester’s servants.] These are clearly the words wanting, and we have ventured to supply them between brackets.

Page 58, line 8, Besyde the endless [fame] that thou shalt wyne.] In the MS., by a clerical error, *fame*, or some equivalent word of one syllable, is omitted.

Page 58, line 15, We must, *of force*, be knowen.] “Of force” was often used by our old writers for *of necessity*, or *of course*. Instances are needless.

Page 60, line 19, [John.] O, rare magitian, &c.] The margin of the MS. having been torn away, the name of “John” has been supplied conjecturally. There can be no doubt that the speech belongs to him.

Page 60, line 21, Which a meere *abce* scholler in the arte.] i.e., a mere A B C scholar, or beginner, in the art.

Page 61, line 28, *Amery*.] What he says, and all that follows, down to the bottom of the page in the MS., is unfortunately wanting, the paper having been torn away. The letter E is visible just above Amery, and, no doubt, was part of the stage-direction for his entrance. It will be observed that the ends of many preceding lines are deficient, and hereafter, on turning over the leaf of the MS, we are without the commencements of any of the speeches.

•

A VIEW OF SUNDRY EXAMPLES.

BY

ANTONY MUNDAY.

•





To the worshipfull Maister William Waters, and  
 Maister George Baker, Gentlemen, attendaunt  
 on the Right Honourable, his singuler good Lord  
 and Maister, the Earle of Oxenford, A.M.,  
 wisheth what happines in this life is  
 to be gained, and in the life to come,  
 an immortall Crowne of glorie.

The Souldier having once ventured and tryed the favour  
 of Fortune in bloody fight among his enemies, (speeding  
 well) hazardeth his hap the bolder the second time. The  
 Merchaunt making one lucky voyage, presumeth on the next  
 with greater affection. So I (worshipfull and my approved  
 freendes) having once found freendly entertainement to my  
 booke received, am the more encouraged to present this also,  
 referring the good meaning and freendly affection of the  
 Author to your discretions, construed at leysure. I know  
 that in gathering these reports I shall offend the curious  
 eares of some daintie devisers; and I consider againe that  
 the wise will allowe my labours to good end; so that, pleasing  
 your Woorships and the mindes of well disposed persons, I  
 shall thinke my labours well bestowed, and my time not ill  
 spent. Cicero, I remember, reporteth how there  
 appeared unto Hercules two Maidens, the one  
 attired base and simple, the other decked in sundry sutes of  
 very gorgeous and gallant apparell, promising, eche of them,  
 such rewards as their habilitie might suffer  
 them to bestowe, if according to their mindes he  
 made his choyse. Fyrst quoth she so simply  
 attired:—

A proper dis-  
 course of the  
 choyse of  
 Hercules.

The simple  
maiden,  
named Ver-  
tue

If thou choose me, consider what may fall:  
thou in this life shalt be of wretched state,  
And of account thou shalt be very small,  
But last of all thou shalt proove fortunate.  
Eternall ioy so much shall vauntage thee,  
That thy good fame then honoured shalbe.

The other gallant Girle, shining like the Sunne, glistering  
in her golde, sweating in her silkes, brave in her beautye,  
The brave comely in complexion, finely featured accord-  
Maiden ing to fancy, every lim gallantly joynted, and  
named, pounsed up in her perfuming and odiferous  
Vayne Plea- smels, sayde—  
sure.

Loe here the  
golden pro-  
mises that  
Vaine Plea-  
sure maketh  
to such as are  
easy to be in-  
tised.

If thou like me, and wilt make me thy wife,  
So long as life within me dooth remaine  
All wordly pompe with thee shalbe so rife,  
That none but thou the golden daies shall  
gaine.

Thy riches shall aboundantlie exceede;  
All thy desires shall graunted be with speede.

Thou in this world shalt be of rare renowne,  
And Glorie shall attendaunt on thee stand:  
No labour shal once seeme to pul thee downe,  
But thou shalt live at ease upon the Land.  
How saist thou now? consider what these be;  
Then goe to her, or els come unto me.

Hercules hearing the fine forged eloquence of this delicate  
Dame, and how her offers were so good that he  
Hercules re- cared not for them, ran and embrased the sim-  
posed greater creadit in the plest, which he found most to his contentation.  
the simpler then Heereby (woorshipfull) what is meant? I  
in the braver, knowe you are not iguorant: the simplenesse  
and therefore

he chose her; and therefore we may heereby see that all is not golde that glistereth, nor all are not freends that avouche freendship. of my capacitie, the meanesse of my learning, with the lack of eloquence, causeth my booke to sound nothing pleasaunt to the daintie eare. But as the newest Vessels holde not the sweetest wine, the tallest tree not the pleasantest fruite, nor the biggest Vine the best grapes, so perhaps the largest labour containes not so much methode of matter, as a small volume may sufficiently unfold, nor the most learned Preacher edifie not so much as one that professeth lesse learning.

Even so, some tymes may bee couched more promptnesse of wit, and more cunning conveyances under a plaine countrey cap, then perhaps under a hat of velvet. I speake not this that your affection should bee ever the more mooved to this simple gift, or that you should refuse larger proffers to prefer so meane a trifle; but this I may (under correction) boldly say, and also sufficiently discharge, that the quantitie and quallitie of good wyll may aswell be manifested in a sheete of paper, as in a booke of greater estimation. For surely, if his affection be not to that man, or on whom so ever he bestoweth so small a present, hee will not (you may be sure) commend to him the greater.

*Munera sunt  
estimanda  
non pretio  
suo, sed ani-  
mo donantis.*

So that by this you will judge that I make as much account of my sheete of paper, as other do of a larger volume: I answer, that if I loove my freend a little, and little, and loove him long, it is better then loove him a love me long. great deale at the first, and never a whit after.

Thinke not hereby (woorshipfull) that I envye any way gainst writers of large and auncient volumes, for thereby I should condemne my selfe of meere folly, and displease a number that have delight therin. Only this is my meaning, that this small pamphlet I offer with as free good will, as if I could present you with a bigger booke, and that in this little

labour is contained as much affection, and as liberally bestowed, as any hee whatsoever that offreth a greater gift. The poore Widdowes mite pleased Christe better then the riches that the other offred; and the cup of water Luke, 2, 1. presented to Zerxes was as princely received as a greater present. Then am not I in doubt but that I shall like you with this little, and please you with this poore pamphlet: if so it may chaunce, I have my choise; and if it like you wel, I have my will. Thus hazarding on your courtesyes, and trusting to your clemencies, with the

*Baso les manos*, I bid you  
farewell hartely.

Yours to commaund, in greater  
affaires then he mindes to make  
his boast,

ANTONY MUNDAY.

To the courteous company of Gentlemen,  
whose good will and freendly affection  
is my wished desire to  
obteyne, Greeting.

But that my want of learning and eloquence, to beautifye my stile withall, is so great a blemish to my bolde attempt, I should (courteous Gentlemen) thinke that this my booke would be gratefully accepted. But finding my self nothing acquainted with the one, and farre unlike to gaine the other, I perswade my self that I were better to shrowde in silence my simplicitie, then to let it passe, beeing nothing woorthy. Yet finding my selfe so greatly bound in duty to your courtesyes so liberally bestowed, I thought (though I were unable to requite with the very uttermoste of my power) yet your courtesyes would accept of my good wil, sygnified any way; and that though I am the simplest (yet since mightie and puissant Emperours haue vouchsaved to heare the meane stile of unlearned Oratours) Gentillitie adorned with clemencye, (though they are usually frequented with the woorks of famous and worthy writers) they would (if it were but for pleasures sake) attend the homely note of a countrey Coridon, and among the rest be content to heare so rude a Chaos as I. Thus leaving at large your courtesyes to conster my good intent, and to rewarde as shall like you best, praying for your continuall prosperitie, to God

I commend ye.

Your affectioned freend,

A. *Munday*, servaunt to the  
right Honorable the Earle  
of Oxenford.

¶ *To the Reader.*

Good Reader, suffise thee  
with this my good will,  
Till I may devise thee  
things woorthy of skill.

If thou doo content thee  
with this my poore wish,  
Ere long shalbe sent thee  
a delicate dish :

Where thou shalt have plentye  
fine toyes for thy pleasure :  
Then, seeme not too daintie,  
but judge this with measure.



A view of Examples, meete  
to be perused of all faythfull  
Christians.

IOB 14.

Man that is borne of a Woman hath but a short tyme to lyve, and  
is full of miserie: he commeth up, and is cut downe like a flower;  
he flyeth as it were a shadowe.

Whereas we see (by perfect experience) that man is sub-  
jecte to many misfortunes, multitudes of my-  
series, yea, many and sundrie mischaunces; so  
that in this terrestriall vale of myserie, he beeing  
so fiercely assaulted by the mischevous motions  
and sharpe assaultes of his olde and auncient enimie, no suc-  
cour is lefte him, nor no comfort to cure him, but onely in  
hart and minde to flye to his sweete Saviour and redeemer,  
Jesus Christe, to annimate him with continuall constancie,  
to uphold him by his grace and mercie, and  
to arme him bodily with pure and sincere fayth,  
which is able to confound al his usurping eni-  
mies. For fayth is the victorie of this world,  
as witnesseth John, saying, *And this is the vic-  
torie that overcommeth the world, even our fayth: who is it that  
overcommeth the world, but he which beleeveth that  
Jesus Christe is the sonne of God.* Then, since  
our fayth is the onelie weapon wherewith we may wholly  
vanquish and subdue all the enormities of this  
lyfe, all the troubles, vexations, temptations,

Man subject  
to many and  
sundry mise-  
ries.

Hisonly hope  
in Christ Je-  
sus, which  
confoundeth  
all his foes.

Faith the  
onely weapon



to vanquishe illusions, and all enemies whatsoever, let us imbolden our selves uppon our Captaine Christe; let us cast all our care on him, and hee wyll goe to feelde with us; he wyll sheelde us from our enimies; his mightie arme shall so dyrect us, that all our fooes shall runne on theyr owne confusion. *It is God that gyrdeth us with strength of warre, and maketh our wayes perfect.*  
 Psa, 18, 32

Then, mortall man, never boast so much of thy terrestriall strength, which is but a shadowe, *But cast up thine eyes to heaven, from whence commeth thy helpe:* the helpe that is alway forceable, and wyll strike all thy enimies downe to the ground.  
 Psa., 131, 1.

Beholde how the world is given to wickednesse; for one disdayneth that his neyghbour should thrive by him; another coveteth his neyghbours goodes unjustly; some one is bent to this vice, some to that. Some care not so they lyve in their jollitie and pleasure, who goeth to wracke, whome they murder, whome they spoyle; the prooffe whereof is evident.

*Example of George Browne, who murdered maister George Saunders.*

Not long since, one George Browne, a man of stature goodly and excellent, if lyfe and deedes thereto had beene equivalent; but as the auncient adage is, goodly is he that goodly dooth, and comely is he that behaveth him selfe comely, so may it be witnessed in this man, who more respected a vaine pride and prodigall pleasure, which remayned in his person, then commendation and good report that followeth a godlie and vertuous life.

But nowe a dayes everie courageous cutter, everie Sim Swashbuckler, and everie desperate Dick, that can stand to his tackling lustely, and behave him selfe so quarrelously that he is ashamed of all  
 A view to vaine vaunters.

good and honest company, he is a gallant fellowe, a goodly man of his handes, and one, I promise you, that as soone comes to

A fellowe Tyburne as ever a one of them all. This is a  
worthy of vaine-glorious vertue, (which some tearme it)  
commendation. but it can be called no vertue, because it de-  
pendeth not uppon any goodnesse.

This George Browne, (before named) addicted to the voluptuousnesse of this vaine world, to unlawfull lyking, to runne at his libertie in all kinde of lewde behaviour, mured

A report of cruelly maister George Saunders, an honest,  
maisterSaun- vertuous, and godly Cittizen, well knowne, of  
ders. good name and fame; among his neighbours

well thought of; abroade and every where well esteemed; of wealth well stored; of credit well allowed; of lyving Christianly disposed; and of those that knewe him well beloved.

This man being met by this George Browne, (who by the consent of maister Saunders wife was appoynted  
George to kyll him) after he perceived what was his  
Browne intent, and howe he sought to bathe his handes  
meeting him in his guyltles blood, fell to entreatance, that  
by S. Mary pittie might take place in his bloody brest.  
Cray.

But he, a wretch, more desirous of his death then wylling his welfare, more mindfull of murther then  
His develish intent and  
perverse practises. savegard of his soule, so bent to blindness, that he expected not the light, strooke the stroke that returned his shame, dyd the deede that drove him to destiny, and fulfilled the fact, that in the end he found folly.

O, minde most monstrous! O, heart most hard! O, intent so yrksome! whome neyther preferment might  
A hard heart that could  
doo so cruell a deede. perswade, rythes move to regard, affection cause to respect, former freendship force to  
fancie, nor no vertue of the minde seeme to  
satisfie. Where was the bonds of loyaltie? where was the regard of honestie? where was the feare of the Almighty?

All feare of God cleane layde aside. where was the care of Christianitic? or where was the hope of eternall felicitie? and last, where was thy duty to God, thy Prince, and countrey? Alas! each of these seemed cleane vanquished in thee: they were smally regarded; yea, little or none accompt made of. It is yet evidently seene in that common crew that give them selves to boasting and bravery, to swearing, fighting, quarrelling, and all such divelish practises. But what sayth Esai? *Shall the axe boast it self against him that heweth therewith, or shall the sawe make any bragging against him that ruleth it? That were even lyke as if the rod did exalt it self against him that beareth it, or as though the staffe should magnify it self, (as who should say) it were no wood.*

And Solomon sayth: *Make not thy boast of to morrowe, for thou knowest not what a day may bring forth.*

The Prophet David lykewise sayth: *How long shall all the wicked doers speake so disdaynfully and make such proude boasting? They smite downe thy people, O Lord, and trouble thine heritage. They murder the widdow and the straunger, and put the fatherlesse to death.*

With many places more that I might alleadge of the Scripture, of such as brag in their braverie, and boast in their owne strength. But this example passed may seeme somewhat to terrifie our stony hearts to consider through the misbehauour of one man six lost theyr lyves, as is evidently knowen to all men; for in Smithfeeld they payed the price of their lyves for consenting to that odious fact.

It shall not be amisse in this place to call to minde the wyfull perjurie of certayne persons, whose wycked lyves at their death were perfectly wytnessed.

Examples of  
perjury.

*Example of widdowe Barnes, in Cornhyll, in London. 1574.*

Let us remember the widdow Barnes, beeing an auncient woman, and dwelling in Cornhyll, in London, who frequented much swearing, and neither freendly rebuking, good instructions, nor divine perswasions, could turne her heart from this wicked and detestable exercise, but thereby laboured to defeat

She threw her self into the streete and brake her neck.	an Orphant of her right: the Divell, who urged her to such cruell abuse, caused her to cast her selfe out at her window into the streete, and there brake her neck.
---	--

*Example of Arthur Myller, at Hackney. in 1573.*

One Arthur Miller lykewise, dwelling at Hackney, a very lewde talker, a common blasphemer and swearer, in the tyme of his sicknesse, casting all Christianlike care from him and all feare of God and his lawes, vehemently cryed out, the Divell! the Divell! yet felt he the omnipotency of Gods power, as he himself confessed; but for grace he could not pray, the cause whereof was known to him self, but he would not utter it to any. And so kissing oftentimes his hand, wherein he sayd he held the Divell, and calling only for helpe to the Divell, this wretched lyfe he ended most miserably.

*Example of one Berry, who cut his owne throate in the Counter, in the Poultry. 1575.*

In the Counter, in the Poultry in London, also, there was one Berry, who in some one cause had wilfully perjured him selfe, and beeing brought therefore to the prison to sustayne what punishment thereto was due, he, despayring of Gods mercie, and giving him selfe to the Divells temptations, cruellie cut his owne throte.

*Example of Anne Averies, that bought the Towe. 1575.**Febru. 11.*

Anne Averies, likewise a widdowe who dwelled in Ducke Lane, without Aldersgate, comming to the house of one Richard Williamson in Woodstreete, whose wife used to dresse flax and towe, she tooke up there six pound of towe, and departed without paying therefore, when she was required eyther to send the towe agayne, or to pay money therfore: by and by she rapt out two or three terrible oathes, that she had payd for it, and beeing come back to the shoppe, she desired vengeance at Gods handes, that she might presently sinck where she stooode, if she payde not the money before she went out of the shoppe. Gods judgement so just, seeing her unjust dealing, presently accorded thereunto, and before the face of all the standers by, she was immediately stroke to

Gods iust  
judgement  
fell on this  
wicked per-  
son.

A notable and  
straunge ex-  
ample to ter-  
rify all wick-  
ed and cruell  
blasphemers.

the earth, not able to rise without help, nor yet to blaspheme the name of God as she had done, but holding out her hand, wherein she held thirteene pence, which she should before have payed for the towe withall; and her mouth beeing put to such a vyle office, that from thence issued that which should have discended at the lower partes. So was she carried from thence, where she was fayne to lye in a styinking stable, and few dayes after yeelded her life.

*Example of Father Lea. 1577.*

Father Lea, a man almost of foure score yeares, in Foster Lane, in London, meeting with the party against whome he had perjured him selfe, held up his hands, desiring him to forgive him, for that he had falsly forsworn himself against him. The man replied that the offence against him might be easily forgiven; but the offence against God was ten

tymes more. So after a while this Father Lea, with a rusty knife, rypped his owne belly, and griped his guts with his owne handes, and so ended his life the xxi of January, 1577.

Loe! deere Christians, what examples we can fetch of our selves, what neede we to looke after other countryes? these we know to be true, and we cannot deny it: but alas! how long shall we remaine in this wickednes, when we heare God himself say

*If a soule sinne and trespasse against the Lord, and deny unto his neighbour that which was taken him to keepe, or that was put in his handes, or dooth violent robbery or wrong unto his neighbour;*  
 Levit., 6, 2.

*Or if he have found that which was lost, and denieth it, and sweareth falsely upon whatsoerer thing it be that a man dooth, and sinneth therein:*

*If he so sinned and trespassed, he shall restore againe that he tooke violently away, or the wrong which he did, or that which was delitered him to keep, or the lost thing which he found.*

*And all that about which he hath sworne falsely, he shall restore it again in the whole sum, and shall adde the fift part more therto, and give it unto him to whom it appertayneth, the same day that he offreth for his trespasse.*

*Thou shalt not sweare by my name, neither shalt thou defile the name of thy God: I am the Lord.*  
 Levi., 19, 12.

The wise and famous Solomon lykewyse sayth. *Let not thy mouth be accustomed with swearing, for in it are many falles: let not the naming of God be continually in thy mouth.*  
 Eccl. 29, 9.

*For like as a sercaunt that is much beaten cannot be without some sore, even so whatsoeuer he be that sweareth and nameth God, shall not be cleane purged from sinne.*

*A man that useth much swearing, shalbe filled with wickednes,*

11. *and the plague shal never go from his house: if he beguyle his brother, his faulte shalbe upon him:*

*if he knowledge not his sinne, he maketh a double offence; and if he sweare in vaine, he shall not be found righteous, for his house shalbe full of plagues.*

12. *The words of the swearer bringeth death, (God graunt that it be not found in the house of Jacob)*

*but they that feare God will eschew all such, and lye not weltring in sin.*

13. *Use not thy mouth to dishonest and filthy talking, for in it is the word of sinne.*

15. *The man that is accustomed with the words of blasphemy wyl never be reformed all the dayes of his lyfe.*

Zacharias the Prophet also sayth. *Behold a flying book of Zach, 5, 2. twenty cubits long and ten cubits broad.*

3. *This is the curse that goeth forth over the whole earth, for al theeves shalbe judged according to this book.*

4. *And I will bring it forth, (sayth the Lord of hostes) so that it shall enter into the house of the theefe, and into the house of him that falsly sweareth by my name, and shal remayne in the middest of his house and consume it, with the timber and stones therof.*

And further list what God sayth. *And thou shalt speake unto thy children of Israel, saying, Whosoever curseth his God shall beare his sinne.*

16. *And he that blasphemeth the name of the Lord, let him be slayne, and all the multitude shall stone him to death; whether he be borne in the land of the straunger, when he blasphemeth the name of the Lord let him be slayne.*

Thus, deerely beloved, are we warned by the sacred Scripture to take heede and to be circumspect in our deal-yngs, not for every tryfling thing to rappe out oathes; for

*Example of Paule Green, that slew Maister Temple.*

Now I will return to my former matter again, as touching  
 Hee return- murder, which is a hainous and abhominable  
 eth to his for- offence in the sight of God and man. I must  
 mer matter. not forget the committed crime of Paule Green,  
 who desperatly slew Maister Thomas Temple neer the Royal  
 Exchaunge, in London, the which Maister Temple was a  
 sober, wise, and discreet Gentleman, one of goodly living,  
 and taking a house to save him self from the unsatiabie malice  
 of this Paul Green, could not so appease his ire, for he thrust  
 over the stall at him, and at length gave him that he long  
 Paul Green looked for. But what became therof? Hee  
 hanged at Ti- for his paines, condemned by law and justice,  
 burn. end[ed] his desperat dayes at Tiburn.

*Example of the two Sheriffes that hung themselves at  
 Glocester. 1579.*

It is commonly reported, and is in every mans mouth, how  
 this last yeere at Glocester two men, in yeers ancient, sup-  
 posed to be very goodly livers, and were called to the bearing  
 authoritie in the Citie, as to wit bothe of them hath been  
 Sheriffes, yet, for want of firme and faithful trust in God,  
 they bothe hanged them selves.

*Example of John Morgan, who slew Maister Turbervile in  
 Somersetshire. 1580.*

Likewise in Somersetshire, one John Morgan, by common  
 report a lewd and wicked liver, and given to swearing, royst-  
 ing, and all wickednes abounding in him, slew his brother in  
 law, Maister Turbervile, a gentleman of godly life, very  
 sober, wise, and discreet, whose wife lying in childebed, yet  
 arose and went to have law and justice pronounced on that



cruel malefactor. So, at Chard, before the Lord Chief Justice, hee was condemned and suffered death for his offence. 1580.

*Example of Richard Tod, that murdered Mistresse Skinner at Saint Katherins. 1580.*

Then, let us rehearse the bloody parte of Richard Tod, who murdered and cruelly massacred an auncient and honest woman dwelling at Saint Katherins, named Mistres Skinner, a woman of godly disposition, of life inferiour to few, for freendly neighbourhood beloved of all, in yeeres wel passed, of credit wel accounted, and of mony and riches sufficiently instored; to whome this bloody Butcher came with his entrenching knife, and for the minde hee bare to her money, more then good will to her welth, caused her to forsake this earthly life.

<p>Hee beeing apprehended for the same, condemned by the Hee first led to the place, then brought back and ex- ecuted at Ti- bourn.</p>	<p>law, and judged to dye, was led to the place where he committed this murderous offence, which beeing found not so convenient, was re- ducted back, and in the after noone was exe- cuted at Tibourn, the xxix of March.</p>
---	--

*Example of Marmeduke Glover, who slew Sergeant Grace. 1580.*

And should I seem to be oblivious of the great and greevous offence of Marmeduke Glover, who beeing arrested by Sergeant Grace, drew out his weapon, and there presently murdered him: nay, sure his crime is to be accounted a moste vile and hainous offence, in that hee resisted where of duty he should have obeyed; and more better had it been for him, for then had he saved both his life and his owne. But following his owne will and cruel intent, made her become a

widowe, who might els have lived longer in joy with her  
 Glouer exe- mate and husband. So likewise (as blood re-  
 cuted in quireth blood) hee was executed in publique  
 Cheapside. view in Cheapside on a Jibbit, the xxviii of  
 March. 1580.

*Example of a Maid that buried her Childe quick.*

A maid, also, who had abused her body with unchaste  
 living, and beeing delivered of a sweet and tender infant,  
 casting all motherly and naturall affection from her, buried  
 the same alive. What hardned hart had shee, to play so  
 vile a parte to the frute of her owne body! Alas! it causeth  
 to relent eche Christian hart that heareth therof, first to con-  
 sider how wickedly shee violated the commaundements of our  
 God, wheras by his owne mouth he hath pronounced, *Thou*  
 Exod., 20. *shalt not commit Adultrie*: then, what wicked

wretches are wee, which abuse our bodies with  
 voluptuous pleasures, with carnall delights, with wicked  
 inventions, and with sin out of measure, yet not contented  
 therewith, but to dispoyle the frute of our owne bodyes,  
 to hide our sin to the world, to run hedlong to the Devil;  
 yet can wee not so hide our sinne but God seeth it, and no  
 wilful murther will hee suffer unrevealed, though we collour

it for a time, though wee think it cleane out of  
 God wil not suffer wilful remembrance, and that the brunt is gon and  
 murder to be past: yet wil hee cause the very fowles of the  
 conceled. aire to bewray it; our owne consciences shall

cause us to open it, our lookes wil bewray us, our deeds wil  
 deceive us, so that wee shall need no more evidences then  
 our owne selves.

Acts, 15, 20. *(Saint Paule saith) wee write unto them that they*  
*abstayne them selves from fornication; every sinne*  
*that a man dooth is without his body, but hee that committeth*  
 I Cor., 6, 18. *fornication sinneth against his owne body: Let*  
*every Christian be mindefull that his body is the*

*Temple of the Lord, and ought not to be defiled, but be kept pure and holy, even that our bodies may be a quick sacrifice to GOD.*

*An Example of the Gentlewoman that kild her maid at S. Giles in the feeld.*

At Saint Giles in the feeld, also, dwelt a gentle woman named Mistres Amy Harrison, (alias) Midleton, who was a very wicked liver, an unjust dealer, a bewrayer of fortunes, and one who was wholly inclined to vice, abandoning vertue. This woman had a godchilde of hers in the house with her, whom shee kept to doo such necessary busines about the house as was commaunded her by her Mistres, or as her yeers might sufficiently reach unto, but sometime was constrained to more; so that often her inhabilitie caused her to be whipt, beaten, tirannically tormented, and very Jewishly intreated, sometime with big cudgels, sometime with a girth; so that, from the crown of the hed to the soles of the feet, was left no member unmartired. At length the  
 A woman                      void of all                      reason.  
 Girle dyed by such excess of correction, and shee therefore suffered death against her owne house, for an example to all Mistresses and Dames, how they misuse their servants in such unmerciful manner.

These Examples, witnessed apparent in our eyes, may warne us how wee lead such careles lives, for feare of displeasing the Almightie, to hasten his anger upon us, and so utterly to reject us.

*Examples of blasing Starres and other Accidents.*

Wee have had manyfold motions, sundrye signes, yea, and exceeding examples of his wrath and displeasure, by commets and blasing stares, as lately hath been seen over this Citie of London, as also great flames and flashing of fire issuing out of the North parts in the Ellement.

Two great Tides. Likewise two great tides in one houre, contrary to Nature. Besides this there hath been  
 Straunge Flyes. seen straunge flyes, which on their wings bare the Example of Gods justice.

*Example of the Childe in Gelderland.*

And furthermore, what monsterous shapes! what straunge births! and what alteration of Nature have wee seen! In Gelderland a childe borne of proportion very ongly, with a long bil and the belly like a swan, feet with clawes, and as soone as it was borne ran under the bed.

Example of a Childe in Italy. In Italy, also, of an ancient woman was borne a deformed creature, the which spake many words, as the book in print dooth witnes, which was printed by Thomas East.

Likewise at Lutsolof, in Dutchland, was a straunge and monsterous childe borne, which in one hand had a rod, in the other a swoord, which demaunded if the warres of men were not as yet fully finished, and cryed to make peace, and that the time should come that one should say to another, Oh, Brother! why art thou not dead? with other woords moste straunge, as the printed booke dooth witnes.

Also with the same childe there was an other who had two heds, the one side of the body all black, and wept abundantly, bothe borne of one woman, the fathers name Baltus Maler, and the mother, Katherin Peeters.

A childe borne at Manchester. Then look heer into England, at Manchester, a childe borne without ever a hed, yet soone after was the mother delivered of a goodly and sweet infant.

A childe borne at Aberwick, in North. At Aberwick, also, in Northumberland, a child was borne having two heds in perfect proportion, and the eares like a horsses.

A monsterous  
childe now in  
London.

At this present in London is to be seen a  
man childe very monsterous: all these are ex-  
amples now of late dayes.

*Example at Praga, in Bohemia.*

Wee hear also of the fearfull tempest that was at Praga,  
in Bohemia, wheras on the twenty five of January, 1579, at  
two of the clock in the after noone, that the people durst not  
shew themselves in the streets. Three steeples of churches  
were blowen down, brusing about nineteen houses, and six  
persons slain therby. At evening again there was a marvelous  
thunder, wherin fel hail stones that weighed the quantity of  
Example of 3 quarters of a pound, and thereafter fel such  
an Earth- an earthquake, during for the space of half  
quake. an hower, that the houses did shake very wun-  
derfully.

Signes in the  
Element.

At twelve a clock at night was perfectly  
viewed a black cloude, wherin were plainly  
escried a mans two armes and hands naturally, the right  
hand holding a swoord, the other a bowle which poured  
An other  
signe.

foorth blood: therby was perceived a peece of  
ground with corne standing thereon, and therby  
lay a sickle, and a great voice was heard, but nothing seen,  
A voice  
heard, but  
nothing seen.

which said, *Wo, wo, to the earth and to the inha-  
bitants therof! for hee commeth that is to come,  
and all the people shall see him.* This voice  
caused great terror through al the town, that the  
Great fcare  
through all  
the Citie.

infants shrieked sucking at their mothers brests,  
and women were then delivered of children.

*A Woman of lix yeers delivered of three Children.*

Aboove the rest, a woman of lix yeeres olde, named Mar-  
garet, her husband called John Bobroth, the Clark of the

town. This woman for the space of xxv weeks was diseased,  
 A woman of and no help could be had; but through this pre-  
 lix years de- sent accident she was delivered of three Chil-  
 livered of dren, their mouthes replenished with teeth, as  
 children. children of three yeeres olde. The first borne  
 spake, saying—

*The day appointed which no man can shun.*

The words of the first, The second said, *Where shall we finde  
 thesecond, and the third. living to bury the dead?*

The third said, *Where shall we finde corne to satisfie the  
 hungrie?*

*Example of one in Worcestershire, who slew his Brother, and  
 buried him under the hearth of his chimney.*

He returneth I am sure that it is not yet out of remem-  
 to murder. braunce, nor men are not so forgetful to let  
 slip so soone the murder committed in Worcester, where as  
 one unnaturally killed his owne Brother; and when he had  
 doon, to cover his fact withall, buried the dead corps under  
 the hearth of his chimney; a moste monstrous and bloody  
 parte, far passing the committed offence of Cain, who slew  
 his brother Abel.

*Example of Thomas Hil, at Feversam, who kild his owne Mother.*

At Feversam there dwelled one Thomas Hil, who in the  
 house with him had his owne Mother, an olde woman, whom  
 hee regarded but very small, and used her like an ungrateful  
 childe, which made her to seeke meanes to departe thence,  
 and to goe to her other sonne, who dwelled at Canterbury;  
 which when hee perceived, thought to defeat her of her pur-  
 pose, and one night in bed murdered her, sending woord to  
 his brother that she was dead, and so buried her before he  
 came. This man beeing one who looved her deerly, and

come to his brothers, his hart throbbed, and desired, for to satisfie his minde, that the dead corps might be taken up: when it was taken up, they saw nothing wherof shee dyed, neither her flesh abated with sicknes, nor any sore wherby they should say it was the plague.

The dead corps taken up and serched, and he brought before it, it presently bled. So this murderer was brought before her, and presently, in the sight of all the standers by, it presently bled both at the nose and at the mouth; wherupon hee was accused, and hee did presently confesse it.

Then was he presently sent to prison, wherin hee, despairing of Gods mercy, and giving him self wholly to the Devils temptations, with v points of his hose hung him self on an olde hedlesse naile in the prison.

*Example of Quernby, who kild his Mother.*

Wee have to remember how Edward Quernbie, in Nottingham shire, playd the like butcherly parte; for hee, for the goodwill he had to his Mothers riches, cruelly and unnaturally murdered her.

*Margaret Dorrington, who killed Alice Fox.*

Likewise at Westminster, how Margaret Dorrington, a woman of a wicked and naughty life, murdered Alice Fox, thrusting a knife up under her clothes; wherfore shee suffered death not long after.

*Example of one hanged in chaines at Miles end.*

There was one also who in the gardens at Miles end had murdered a man, who therefore suffered death there, and was afterward hanged up in chains.

*Example of a Woman that kild her 2 Children.*

At Kilborne, also, neer London, there was a woman who with a peece of a billet brayned her two children, the summe wherof is at large described in a book imprinted. The woman dyed in Newgate.

*The murder of Abel Bourn, Hosier, beeing found by the Brick killes slain, the xv of April last.*

A Virginal  
maker that  
came to look  
Ravens quilts  
found the  
man slain.

A man, whose facultie in profession is a maker of Virginalls, going to the Brick kiles at the upper end of Golding lane, to seek Ravens fethers, which he putteth to some use in his handy craft, by chaunce espyed there lȳing in a deep trench, or gutter, a man murdered; which when hee saw, fearing least some suspition should be taken of him, went and bewrayed it presently. So the Cunstable, with other men wel appointed there, watched the dead corps all that night. On the next day, (beeing Saturday) among the egresse and regresse of people that came to see him were many that were wel acquainted with him, as a yung woman to whome hee should have been maryed the Tuesday following, his kinsman, his apprentice, and other toward the evening.

The Coroner  
came thither  
and impaneled a quest  
of inquiry.

When the Coroner had paneled his inquest of inquiry, to serch and seek the causes of this mans death, whether hee murdered him self wilfully, or slain by some chaunce, or els murdered by meer villany,

Three evi-  
dence that  
were present  
there.

There came before him three that gave evidence, the one his apprentice, the other a very freend of his, dwelling in Bridewel, and the third one Sadler, that dwelleth in Theames street.

The Coroner, willing to finde out this matter, so sud-



dainly chaunced, desired them to say what they could of the matter.

First (quoth hee) who dwelled in Bridewel, named Davis,  
 Davis first My freend Abel Bourn, who is slain, was ac-  
 telleth what quainted with one Hodgesse's wife, whose hus-  
 hee knoweth band dwelled at the end of Saint Nicholas  
 of the matter. shambles, a hosier by occupation, now lying in

the hole in the Counter in Woodstreet; a very naughty woman in living, whose company hee dishonestly used, both in his prentiship, and til the time that hee was slain, the more to his greater grief: having thus long used her company, and now drawing to honest living, to match him self with an honest maiden, which he should have doon on Tuesday next, at Christmas last he gave to this Hogges wife ten angels to leave his company, and not to frequent him any more; but

Hodgesse nevertheless shee did stil, (saying thus) thou  
 wifes words wilt now be married, wilt thou? Yea, answered  
 and Abels. Bourn, I mean so, God willing. Wilt thou so,

indeed? truly, shee that maryeth thee shall have but little joy of thee; for look in what estate I have had thee all this while, so wil I have thee stil; for I will have thy purse and body at my commaundement and plesure. Abel hearing this

Abel fetcheth on the Sunday before he was slain, hee went to  
 from the a Tailers where certain apparel of this Hodges  
 tailors her wife was at making, and brought it away with  
 apparel. him, comming to her where shee lay in the

same morning, bidding her to come and fetch her apparel; and so shee went with him, and hee, entring into a house with her, caused the Cunstable to serve a warrant on her,

Hodgesse his and so sent her to Bridewel; where shee said,  
 wife sent to if ever I come forth again, I wil have him  
 Bridewel. hewed as small as flesh to the pot. This hee

Her words said to this Davis, even as hee told before the  
 in Bridewel. quest.

Sadler saith            Then Sadler hee began, and said: Abel  
what hee            Bourne thus told mee, that he, walking by the  
knowes.            mount at the upper end of Aldersgate-street,

One met            was met by one who said unto him, if thou  
Abel at the            seeme to use Hodges wife in this order, and doo  
mount, and            not set her free, the next time I meet thee, I  
threatned            wil kil thee. This hee tolde him even as hee  
him.            said before the quest.

Cranes wife            While they were thus in talking, at last came  
comming by,            a Woman by who was suspected of the matter,  
suspected.            and information given to the Coroner, presently  
she entred            sent after her to bring her back again; shee  
into the Gar-            having taken a garden, and they fain to climbe  
den.            over the pale, so at last brought her out, and led her to the  
Coroner. Her wench beeing by, said, I tolde  
Her wenches            my Dame of this before, that shee should be-  
woords.            ware: so the wench was taken also.

When shee was come before the Coroner, hee examined  
her if shee knew the said Abel? shee answered that shee  
knew him wel, and shee saw him not since Tuesday, on which  
day there was a fray in the feelds, and shee ran  
to see it, where shee chaunced to see Abel with  
swoord and dagger under his arme: shee de-  
maunded of him why hee went so weaponed?

hee answered, that hee was threatened to be slain: (quoth  
shee) then you were best to keep your house, and not to go  
so abroad. At the length hee went home with her to her  
house, which was in Toys rents, and there he  
poured out on the table about thirtie pound in  
golde, and at last sent for a pot of beer and  
drank with her, but hee had no great lust to drink, and so  
shee said he went his way.

Then afterward they led her to see the corps of the dead  
man, where she seemed to be very sorrowful for his death in  
their sight. But her house beeing serched, there was found

what I knowe not; and the wench saith, that shee fetcht a great deale of water and washt the rushes, and so strawed fresh rushes on them. So shee and her husband, and other more in Newgate: and on Wednesday after they were

One Wood brought to Finsbury, and there was one Wood examined at examined, beeing greatly suspected of the mat-Finsbury. ter, and as it is judged, he wil be found the

dooer of the deed; for the same day as the man is said to be slain, hee can make no direct answere how he spent that day, nor where he lay that night; for the Coroner demaunded of him what he professed? and hee answered, that hee had a trade, a thing wherby he lived. What is that? (quoth the

Coroner.) Sir, (quoth hee) I am a servingman, Wood an- and I professe to be a Faulkoner. I ment to swereth to go oversea to buy Hawkes for divers gentle- the Coroner men. Whome doo you serve? quoth the Coroner. of what trade hee was.

I did serve such a one (quoth hee) at Christmas last: my father is wel knownen to be an honest man; he dwelleth heerby at Newington green. So to divers questions that were put unto him hee answered very evil favouredly, and was sent to prison again til Weddensday next. Thus have you heard as much as yet may be gathered: when I understand more, I wil make you partakers therof (God willing). I pray God trueth may come to light.

*The manner how the said Abel Bourne was found slain in a trench by the Brick killes.*

This man, thus cruelly murdered, had his owne cloke lying under him: straight was he laid on his back, the one of his legges straight out, the other bending up a little, bare headed, in a lether jerkin, his hose and doublet, his owne dagger thrust through his left jaw, comming out at the crown of his hed; six other wounds beside, all in his neck, the very least of them his mortall wound. And in this order was hee there found.

*Example of an Earthquake at London, the 6 of April.*

Lastly, call to minde the greevous and suddain Earthquake hapning heer in London the 6 of April, at 6 of the clock at night, which caused such a mazement through the whole Citie, that it is wunderful to be tolde.

The great Bel of Westminster tolled of it self, Whitehall shook: the gentlemen of the Temple came running foorth with their knives in their hands, beeing then at supper; a peece of the Temple Church fel down; stones fel of from Paules Church; and at Christes Church, in the Sermon while, a stone fell, and brayned Thomas Gray, apprentice to one Iohn Spurling, shoemaker, dwelling without Aldersgate: an other stone also stroke Mabel Everite, his fellow servant in the same house, and she lived four daies after, and then dyed. Divers Chimnies in the Citie parte of them fel down. At the Play houses, the people came running foorth, surprised with great astonishment.

A peece of Sutton Church, in Kent, fel down, the Earthquake beeing there, in those partes, heard and felt three severall times. A piece of Dover Castel fel down, and parte of the Castel wall fel into the sea.

The ships quaked and trembled as the houses on the drye land, and the waters were greatly out of temper. Out of England it was also felt: at Callis, also, it was so vehement, that parte of the Staple house fel down, and likewise some of the law or town house was overthrowen.

These Ex- In Brabant, as Antwerp, Zeland, Middle-  
amples are borough, Flushing, S. Thomas in Artois, Deep,  
for our sins. Flaunders, Dunkerk, Barborough, Gravelin,  
Bridges, and Gaunt, it was felt also very forcible. No  
doubt, deer Bretheren, this was a token of the indignation of  
our God against our wicked living, wherin so highly wee  
offend his divine Maiestie. Let us remember three of the  
fairest Cities in Asia, sunk for sinne.

Many places for sinne have been greevously punished, as Sodom and Gomorra, Jerusalem, Ninivie, and many other places. Let us remember that it shalbe better for *Corazaine* Mathew, 11, *and Bethsaida, at the dredful day of Judgement,* 21. *then for Tire and Sidon.*

Let us lift up our hearts cheerfully unto God of our salvation, be sory for our former offences, and from the very bottome of our harts inwardly lament them.

Let us turn to the Father of all mercy, saying,

Luke, xv. *O, Father ! wee have sinned against heaven and against thee : we are no more woorthy to be called thy children.* So wil the Lord of his fatherly mercy forgive our sinnes, and make us partakers of his kingdome, which God graunt for his sonnes sake. *Amen.*

# NOTES

## TO

### MUNDAY'S VIEW OF SUNDRY EXAMPLES.

---

Page 69, line 16, The sixt of Aprill.] *i.e.*, 6th April, 1580, soon after which incident it is evident that this tract was published, although there is no date at the bottom of the title-page The murder of Abel Bourne also took place, as we see, on 15th April, 1580.

Page 71, line 2, Attendaunt on the Right Honourable, his singuler good Lord and Maister, the Earle of Oxenford.] Waters and Baker were, no doubt, personal servants to Lord Oxford: Munday was, at this period, one of the Earl's players, a company of actors whom Lord Oxford allowed to perform under the protection of his name.

Page 73, line 27, That I loove my freend a little, and loove him long.] This and the note in the margin clearly refer to the title of the old ballad, "Love me little and love me long," for which see "Extracts from the Registers of the Stationers' Company," i, 213, where it is published.

Page 74, line 11, *Baso les manos.*] So misprinted for *Beso las manos*, a Spanish expression then much in use.

Page 75, line 28, Servaunt to the right Honorable the Earle of Oxenford.] *i.e.*, theatrical servant, or one of Lord Oxford's company of players, as stated above.

Page 78, line 21, Example of George Browne.] This murder happened in 1573, and it was made the foundation of a fine tragedy, under the title of "A Warning for Fair Women," which was printed in 1599. See an account of it in "History of English Dramatic Poetry and the Stage," iii., 52. The whole of the circumstances are detailed in Stow's *Annales*, p. 1141, edit. 1615, and are worth subjoining:—

"The 25 of March, being Wednesday in Easter weeke, and the feast of the Annunciation of our Lady, George Browne cruelly murdered two honest men neare unto Shooters hill in Kent: the one of them was a

Page 86, line 22, Example of Marmeduke Glover, who slew Sergeant Grace.] For some account of various ballads, &c., issued upon this event in 1580, see "Extracts from the Registers of the Stationers' Company," vol. ii, pp. 110, 111. In one of them it is spoken of only as "a grievous mischance;" but Munday calls it "a most vile and heinous offence."

Page 87, line 6, Example of a Maid that buried her Childe quick.] This event was also the subject of a ballad, or broadside, which was licensed to William Wright, 31 March, 1580, as "a doleful Discourse of a maud that suffered at Westminster for buryinge her child quick." See "Extracts from the Registers of the Stationers' Company," ii, 110.

Page 87, line 25, Yet wil hee cause the very fowles of the aire to bewray it.] Compare "Macbeth," act iii., scene 4.

Page 89, line 13, As the book in print dooth witnes, which was printed by Thomas East.] We do not find any trace of this "book" among those from East's press. In 1579, he had printed "Of two woonderfull Popish Monsters, to wyt, of a Popish Asse, which was found in Rome, in the river Tyber, (1496) and of a Moonkish Calfe, calved at Friberge, in Misne, (1528) which are the very foreshewings and tokens of Gods wrath against the blind, obstinate, and monstrous Papistes. Witnessed and declared, the one by P. Melancthon, the other by M. Luther. Translated out of French into English by John Brooke, of Ashe." 4to. It was to a now unknown production of a somewhat similar kind that Munday seems to allude.

Page 89, line 21, As the printed booke dooth witnes.] On June 6th, 1580, William Wright, the publisher of the tract before us, had a license to print, "by way of tolleration, Three sundry wonders that chaunced of late:" ("Extr Stat. Reg.," ii., 117) and Stow (*Annales*, 1164) tells us that "this year were many monstrous births, and strange sights to be seen."

Page 90, line 2, All these are examples now of late dayes.] We have little doubt that Munday was himself the writer of some of the pieces (now lost) which came out on these occasions. On the 8th March, 1580, a ballad by him was entered by Charlwood; and although it was of a different character, it shows that he was then an author of some popularity: he had commenced in 1577. See the Introduction.

Page 92, line 21, Margaret Dorington, who killed Alice Fox.] On the 23rd June, 1578, Thomas East had licensed to him "A lamentable confession of margaret Dorington, wief to Roberte Dorington, of Westminster, who was executed in the pallace of Westminster for murdering

Alice Foxe." ("Extracts from the Registers of the Stationers' Company," ii., 58.) Another entry on 25th June refers to the same subject.

Page 93, line 1, Example of a Woman that kild her 2 Children.] A "pamphlet" (so called in the entry) was published upon this subject, and licensed to William Bartlet, on 18th August, 1579. ("Extr. from Stat. Reg.," ii., 65.) This is, no doubt, "the book imprinted" mentioned by Munday.

Page 94, line 32, This *hee* said to this Davis.] *i e*, the Constable told it to Davis, as having been threatened by Hodges's wife, when she was arrested and sent to Bridewell. The narrative is not very clearly worded. The proceedings before the Coroner, in this case of Abel Bourne, were not concluded at the time Munday published his tract.

Page 97, line 1, Example of an Earthquake at London, the 6 of April.] It occurred on 6th April, 1580, and caused the utmost consternation in London. Many publications regarding it are recorded in vol. ii. of "Extracts from the Stationers' Registers" see the Index, under "Earthquake." On p. 111 of that work is inserted a remarkable ballad, containing many circumstances connected with the event. For other particulars see Stow's *Annales*, p. 1163. edit. 1615.





•

REPORT

OF

THE EXECUTION OF TRAITORS.

BY

ANTONY MUNDAY.

•



A breefe and true reporte of the  
*Execution of certaine Traytours at*  
Tiborne, the xxviii and xxx dayes  
of *Maye*. 1582.

*Gathered by A. M., who was*  
there present.

Honos alit Artes.

---

The names of them executed on  
Monday the xxviii of *Maye*

*Thomas Foord.*

*Iohn Shert.*

*Robert Iohnson.*

---

The names of them executed on Wed-  
nesday, the xxx of *Maye*.

*William Filbie.*

*Luke Kirbie.*

*Lawrance Richardson.*

*Thomas Cottom.*

---

Imprinted at London, for *William Wright*, and are to be  
solde at his shop, adioyning vnto S. Mildreds  
Church in the Poultrie, the middle  
shop in the rowe. 1582.



•

To the godly and woorshipfull *Maister* Richard  
Martin, *Sherife*, and one of the woorshipfull  
Aldermen of *this Cittie of London*, A. M. wisheth  
all earthlie happines, and after this life  
a place among the chosen in  
the celestiall Paradise.

When I had gathered together (woorshipfull Sir) this little pamphlet, reporting the end of certaine lewde and disloyall Traitors, who, under the habite of hurtlesse sheepe, sought in the church of God to playe the part of ravening wolues; and that I my selfe having spent some time in Roome and other places among them, where through I grew into such acquaintaunce with their traiterous intents and dispositions, as before some of their faces I stode as witnesse against them to their reproofe, I thought good to present the same to your woorship, for that your selfe hath beene an eye witnesse how I was there challenged, and how, through the grace of God, and the trueth of so good a cause as I delt in, I defended my self. To avoyde, therefore, the speeches of people, who now a dayes will judge lightly and condemne quickly, because I was there called forth, somewhat in words touched, and yet, I thanke God, nothing disproved, I esteemed it a pointe of wisdom to laye their obstinate endes open to the view of all, not sparing my selfe in the words that were used against me, which will cause the godly and vertuous to account them as they were, and me as I am.

This, breiefly compacted together, I present to your woor-  
ships perusing, as my defence against slaunderous tongues, in  
that I have reported nothing therein but the  
meere truthe. Thus desiring God  
to blesse your woorship with  
all yours: in all humi-  
litie I remaine,

Yours to commaund,

A. MUNDAY.

*The Execution at Tiborne on Monday,*

being the twenty and eyght of May.

1582.

On Munday, beinge the twentye and eight of May. Thomas Forde, John Sherte, and Robart Johnsonne, Priestes, having beene before indited, arraigned, and as wel by their owne testimonie, as also sufficient witnesses produced to theyr faces, found guilty and condemned for high treason, intended. practised, and appointed, against her Majesties most royall person, as also for the utter ruine, overthrowe, and subversion, of her peaceable and well governed Realme, themselves being sent as instrumentes to deale for and in the behalfe of the Pope in this disloyall and trayterous cause, according as Justice had before determined, were drawn upon hurdels from the Tower of London to the place appointed for execution. Having been so long time spared by her Majesties most royall and princely regarde of mercy, to try if eyther the feare of God would take place in them, consideration and respecte of theyr owne duties moove them, or the meere loove and accustomed clemencie of her Majestie might winne them to acknowledge her to be theyr lawfull Sovereigne, and them selves her subjectes, bound to serve her, notwithstanding any pretence or authority to the contrary, and not for matter of their Popish superstition. All this notwithstanding, they remained given over to theyr owne wickednes, and swallowed up in the gulfe of theyr undutifull affection, which causeth Justice to step before Mercye, committing



them to the rewarde of theyre leude and unnaturall dealing. All the way as they were drawen, they were accompanied with divers zealous and godly men, who in mylde and loving speeches made knowen unto them how justly God repayeth the reprobate, how fatherly againe he receiveth the obedient, how he overthroweth the ungodlye in their owne devises, and protecteth his chosen in all stormes and afflictions: in remembrance of all these to bethinke themselves of their wickednes passed, and to shew such hartly and zealous repentaunce for the same, that all be it they had so greevously trespassed, yet in contrite and humble sorrowing they might be graciously received into his heavenly favour, whom they had mooved and styrred by their unreverent regarde to smite and chasten with the rod of his fury. Among which godly perswasions Maister Sherife himselfe both learnedly and earnestly laboured unto them, mooving al good occasions he might devise to chaunge the obstinacie he perceived in them into a Christian like humility and repentaunce; but these good endeavours tooke no wished effect: their owne evil disposition so blinded them, that there was no way for grace to enter.

When they were come beyond S. Giles in the feeld, there approached unto the hurdell one of their owne secte, and a Priest, as himselfe hath confessed, who in this maner spake unto the prisoners. O, gentlemen, be joyfull in the blood of Jesus Christe, for this is the day of your triumph and joye. Being asked why he used such words, he said unto the prisoners againe, I pronounce a pardon unto you; yea, I pronounce a full remission and pardon unto your soules. Using these and other trayterous speeches, holde was layde on him. When as M. Sherife demaunded what he was, he aunswered, he was the voice of a crier in the wilderness, and that he was sent to prepare the Lords way. And notwithstanding such means of resistance as himselfe used, he was delivered unto M. Thomas Norris, Pursuvante, who brought him unto Newgate, wher he confessed unto him that

he was a priest, and that hee had so long dissembled, as he would now leave off, and doo so no moore.

Being come to the place of execution, Thomas Forde was first brought up into the Carte, when he began in this maner. Wheras I am come hither to die for matters layde unto my charge of treason, which should be conspired against the Queene within these two yeares or somewhat more, I give you to understande that of any such matter I am innocent and free, for that I can proove my comming into England to be five yeeres since. Where upon Maister Sherife spake unto him and sayde: Forde, have minde on God; aske him and her Majestie hartily forgiveness, whom thou hast so highly offended: thou doost but delude the people, for it is manifestly known how thou art guilty of the matters layde to thy charge: here is thine owne aunswers to show, affirmed under thine owne hand, and other witnesses to reprove thee. Where upon I my selfe was called foorth, who justified the causes to his face that at hys arraignment was layd to his charge, and he evidently and plainly found guiltye thereof. Then were his aunswers, whereto he had subscribed, read unto him, which is in the booke lately sette foorth by authoritie; where upon he tooke occasion to tell a long sircumstaunce of a certaine question mooved at Oxenforde, as concerning taking armes against her Majestie, which horrible treason he seemed to approue thereby. Then Maister Sherife willed him to aske her Majestie forgiveness, offering him to stande his freende in attayning her Graces mercy, yf he would chaunge his former traitorous minde to become a true and faithfull subject, acknowledging her to bee his lawfull soveraigne Lady, notwithstanding any thing that any Pope could say or doo to the contrarye. Wherunto he aunswered: I have not offended her Majestie, but if I have, I aske her forgiveness and all the world, and in no other treason have I offended then my religion, which is the Catholique faith, wherein I will live and dye. And as for the Queenes Majestie,

I doo acknowledge her supremacy in all thinges temporall, but as conserning Ecclesiastical causes I deny her: that onely belongeth to the Vicar of Christ, the Pope. In breefe, he graunted to nothing, but shewed himselfe an impious and obstinate Traytour, and so he remayned to the death, refusing to pray in the English tongue, mumbling a few Latine prayers, desiring those that were *ex domo Dei* to pray with him, and so ended his lyfe.

In the meane time that he hanged, which was till hee was dead, so great is the mercye of our gracious Princesse, John Sherte was brought from off the hurdell to the gallowes, where seeing Forde hanging, he began with holding uppe his handes, as the Papistes are wont to do before theyr images, O sweete Tom, O happy Tom, O blessed Tom! Then being stayed, Forde was cut downe and caryed to the place where his body should be quartered. In which time Sherte was brought up into the carte, where looking toward the dead bodye of Forde, hee fell downe on his knees and held up his hands to it, (saying againe) O happy Tom, O blessed Tom, thy sweete soule pray for me: O deere Tom, thy blessed soule pray for me. For which woords being rebuked, the Executioner lifted him up on feete, when as he prepared him to his confession, (saying) I am brought hither to this place to dye a death whych is both shamefull and ignominious, for which I thanke thee, my Lord God, who framing me to thine owne similitude and likenes, hath blessed me to this good ende. There being stayed, because he seemed to prolong the time to small purpose, the Sherife willed him to remember hymselfe for what cause he was come thither; how he had offended the Queenes Majestie, and that he was now to aske her forgivenes. Beside, he might receive her princely mercy: wherto, with an hipocriticall outward boldnesse, but an inward faynting feare, (as afterwarde every one playnly beheld) he gave this aunswere. What, mayster Sherife, shall I save this frayle and vile carcase, and damne mine owne

soule? No, no; I am a Catholique; in that faith I was borne, in that faith will I dye, and heere shall my blood seale it. Then Maister Sherife spake unto him, (saying) by the way as we came you swore an oath, for which you willed me to beare witnesse that you were hartily sorie. Now, I pray you, let me be a witnesse that you are as hartilie sorie for offending the Queenes Majestie. Why, sir, (quoth he) I have not offended her, without it be in my religion, and if I have offended her, then I aske her forgivenessse. Maister Sherife upon this sayde unto him, Is this the frutes of your religion, to kneele to the dead bodie of thy fellowe. and to desire his soule to pray for thee? Alas, what can it eyther profite thee, or hinder thee? praye thou to God, and hee will helpe thee. Maister Sherife, (quoth Sherte) this is the true Catholique religion, and whatsoever is not of it is dampned. I desire his soule to pray for me, the most glorious Virgin to pray for me, and all the holy company of heaven to pray for me.

At which woords the people cryed, Away with the traytor, hang him, hang him! O Shert, (quoth Maister Sherife) forsake the whore of Roome, that wicked Antichriste, with all his abhominable blasphemies and trecheries, and put thy whole confidence in Jesus Christ: wherto he aunswered, O, M. Sherife, you little remember the day when as you and I shall stand bothe at one bar, and I come as witnesse against you, that you called that holie and blessed Viccar of Christ the whoore of Rome: at which words the people cried again, Hang him, hang him, Away with him! Then he began his *Pater noster* in Latine, and before he had ended two petitions of it, he fell into the Latine Creede, and then into the *Pater noster* againe: afterwarde he sayde the *Ave Maria*, which done, knocking him selfe on the brest, saying *Jesus, esto miki, Jesus*, the carte was drawne away, and he committed to the mercie of God. But then, to manifest that his former boldnesse was but meere dissembling and hypocrisie, he lyfted up

his handes and caught holde on the halter, so that everie one perceyved his faire outwarde shewe, and his fowle inward disfigured nature; also how lothe he was and unwilling to die.

Robert Johnson being brought up into the carte, Maister Sherife, according as he had before, both declared unto him her Majesties mercy, if he would repent, and also willed him to be sory for his offences against her, wherof he seemed to make small estimation, denying the treasons according as the others had done, and appealinge likewise upon his religion. Then was I called forth againe, when as I gave him to understand how notably he was approved guilty at his arraignment, and every matter sufficiently handled, how according as the reste were he was confounded to his face, whereto he would make no other aunswer, but sayd, Well, Munday, God forgive thee. Then were hys aunswers read unto him, as they had before unto the other twain, hee not yeelding deniall, but sayd he spake them, and would doo it againe. Then was Athanasius Creede mooved unto hym, which he graunted to be Catholique fayth, whereof the Pope was Viccar, and that there was no other Catholique fayth, but onely his. Why, quoth the Preacher, the Pope is not named in it. I knowe not that, (quoth he againe) I have not read it. Then Maister Sherife desired hym to say his prayers in English, and he with all the company woulde pray with him: which he refusing to doo, in his Latine prayers the carte was drawn away, and he committed to Gods mercye.

.

The Execution at Tiborne, on Wednesday, being the thirtye of Maye.

1582.

On the Wednesday following, which was the thirtye daye of May, in the same manner as I have before expressed, Luke Kirbie, William Filbie, Thomas Cottom, and Laurance Rychardson, were committed from the Tower of London to the place of Execution; and as the other were, on the Mundaye before, associated and accompanied with divers learned and godlye Preachers, even so were these; as to say, Maister Charke, Maister Herne, and divers others, who all the waye applyed such godly and Christian perswasions unto them, (as had not the Child of perdition so mervailouslye blinded them) were of force to have wonne them into grace and mercye. The speeches they used to them by the way were needesse here to set downe, for that they did especially concerne causes to roote out that wicked opinion in them, and to establish a sound and perfect fayth in place thereof; but even as it was in the other, so it did agree in them.

But Luke Kirbie seemed to challenge me, as concerning I was able to approve nothing against him, which he did because he supposed I was not there present; but what passed betweene him and me you shall heare hereafter.

They being come to the place of execution, William Filbie was brought up into the carte, where conforming himselfe unto the death, his wicked treasons were mooved unto him, which obstinately and impudently he denied. Then was he

demaunded if hee would acknowledge the Queenes Majestie his soveraigne Princesse, and supreme head under Christ of the Church of England?

No, (quoth he) I will acknowledge no other head of the Church than the Pope onelie. Wherupon his aunswers were reade unto him, and he not denying them in any point, even as they were wicked and impious, even so he remayned in them, still appealing that it was for his religion that he died, and not for any treason. But the contrarie was proved unto his face, as well by sufficient proofes, as also by the trayterous aunswers whereto hee had subscribed with his owne hande. At last, as he was desired, he prayed for the Queenes Majestie, that God might blesse her, and incline her heart to mercie towards the Catholiques, of which societie he was one. Then they, opening his bosome, founde there two Crosses, which beeing taken from him, were helde up and shewen to all the people; beside, his crowne was shaven. So, after a few silent Latine prayers to himselfe, the carte was drawne away.

The next was Luke Kirbie, who, being brought up into the carte, offered long circumstance of speeche, as concerning that he was come thither to dye, hoping to be saved by the blood of Christe, and much matter which were needelesse here to rehearse. Afterwarde he beganne to say, that there were none could approove him to be a traytour; neither had he at any time attempted any thing prejudiciall to her Majestie, and that his adversaries, Sled nor Munday, could not upbraide him with any thinge. Wherupon Maister Sherife tolde him that Munday was there, and asked him if he would have him called to him. I see him (quoth he) yonder, and let him say what he can against mee.

Then was I commaunded to come some what neere him, when as he began in this manner to mee. O Munday! consider with thy selfe, howe untruly thou has charged mee with that which I never sayd nor thought. Besides, thou knowest

that when thou camest to the Tower to me, before maister Lieutenaunt and other who was there present, then, thou wast demaunded what thou couldest say against mee? when as thou madest aunswer, thou knewest no harme of mee, neither couldest thou at any tyme saye otherwise of mee then well: whereupon thou wast asked, wherefore thou reportedst otherwise at my arraignment? Then the Sherife sayde unto him, who can beare thee witnesse of this? (Quoth hee againe) he spake it before maister Lieuetenaunt, and an other was by then. Then was he demaunded what other he was that was present? which (after a long trifling) he sayde was a Keeper, and named him; whereto I made aunswere as followeth.

Maister Kirbie, I wishe and desire you, in the feare of God, to remember your selfe, for this is not a place to report an untrueth, neither to slaunder any man otherwise then you are able to proove. When as I came unto the Tower, and made knowen to maister Lieuetenant for what cause I was sent to speake with you, you were brought into a chamber by your Keeper; and what I mooved unto you, you yourselfe very well knoweth, as concerning my allowaunce, beeing the Pope's Scholler: where what aunswere you made I have truelie, and according as you aunswered, already set downe in print. Maister Lieuetenant neither mooved any such woordes to mee, as heere you reported, and I call God to my witnesse, that not a motion of any such matter was once offered to mee by Maister Lieuetenant, or by your Keeper. Your selfe then uttered, that at sundrie times, in the Seminarie, there was diverse leude woords spoken, which might better have beene spared, and denied that you were not in my chamber, when as I, lying sicke in my bed, the trayterous speeches were mooved by them which were then present, whereof your selfe was one, with diverse other matters which you spake unto me, which Maister Lieuetenant him selfe heard, and your Keeper being present.



But if this be true which you say, that it may be proved there was eyther such woordes mooved unto mee, or any such aunswere made by mee, I offer to sustaine what punishment the lawe shall affoorde mee. Then falling to an other matter, for that this redounded to his owne confusion, (as Maister Lienetenant can well witnesse) he beganne to talke of my being at Roome, what freendship he had shewed unto mee, and had done the lyke unto a number of English men whome he well knew not to be of that religion, bothe out of his owne purse, as also by freending them to some of the Popes Chamber, he made conveyance for them thence, some tyme going fortie miles with them; when (quoth he) had my dealings beene knowne, I should hardlie have beene well thought off: and I knewe well enough that you were never bent to that religion, albeit they thought the contrarie. Yea, I knewe well enough, when you departed thence, that your disposition was contrarie to ours, and concealed it to my selfe.

O, Kirbie, (quoth Maister Sherife) this is very unlyke, that you could affoord such favour to any, who were contrarie to that religion that you professed: no, no; if you knewe any such there, you would rather helpe to persecute them, then to pittie them, as it is the nature of you all.

Maister Kirbie, (quoth I) it is very unlike that you had any such secrete knowledge of mee, eyther of my religion, or howe I was secretlie bent, as you seeme heere to professe; for had I beene such a one as you would perswade these heere you knewe mee to be, would you have delyvered mee those pictures halowed by the Pope, which you did, and moreover make knowne to mee sundry of your freends heere in England, to whome I should convey them. O, Munday! (quoth he) I confesse I delivered to thee pictures in deede, but thou knowest I gave thee two Julyes to goe buie them with: I dyd it because I knewe thee to be such a one, and therefore I dyd misdoubt thee, for I woulde not credite thee

with any hallowed pictures. Maister Kirbie, (quoth I) to deny your owne dooinges is mervailous impudencie: dyd not you in your chamber delyver to me certayne silke pictures, which you tolde me, at Stukelyes beeing there, were hallowed by the Pope, and what Indulgencies were allowed them? One of them, which was a Crucifixe, you gave me; the other you willed me deliver to your freends at Rheimes and in Englande: and because they were so fewe, (as in deede I thinke they were no more but five) you gave me two Julyes to goe into the Cittie to buie more, which I dyd; and having brought them to you, three or foure of the fayrest you tooke from me, promising to gette them hallowed at the next Benediction: the other in deede you gave me, and I tooke them with me.

Howe say you now, Kirbie, (quoth Maister Sherife) would you have credited him with such matters, had you not supposed him to be one of your owne secte. Maister Sherife, (quoth he) what I have sayde, I knewe verie well. And after he was gone from Rome I sent fiteene shyllinges to Rheimes, to be delyvered to him, but he was departed thence towarde Englande before it came.

Then Maister Sherife sayde to him againe, you stand upon these pointes verie much, which there is none that are heere but will judge to be untrue: thou hearest what he hath sayde to thee, and we have heard that thou deniedst everie thing. What sayest thou to thy treasons, wherfore thou art come hyther to dye? wylt thou be sorie for them? aske God and her Majestie forgiveness, for shee is mercifull, and we wyll carrie thee backe againe, if we shall perceyve in thee any such motion, that thou wylte forsake thy former wickednesse, and become a good and faithfull subject.

At these wordes the people among them selves almost generallie sayde: O, exceeding mercie and favour! what a gracious Princesse have wee, who affoordeth such mercie to those that have so yll deserved!

Then Maister Feeld, the preacher, in the booke read his aunsweres to him, where he had subscribed with his owne hande, whether the Pope might lawfullie depose her Majestie, or had any auctoritie to take the tytle of her crowne and dignitie away from her? wherto Kirbie aunswered: This is a matter disputable in Schooles, and therefore I maye not judge of it: I think this with my selfe, that if any Prince fal by infidelity into Turscisme, Atheisme, Paganisme, or any such lyke, that the Pope hath auctoritie to depose such a Prince. And beeing asked, if her Majesty were in any such? he sayd, he knew his owne conscience. Another Preacher beeing by, sayd unto him, that the Prince received his auctority from God, and that he was to be suppressed by none, but only by God: again, that Solomon sayd, *By me* (meaning by God)

Pro 8, 15, 16. *Kinges raigne and Princes decree justice. By me Princes rule, and the nobles and all the Judges of the earth.* Againe, S. Paule sayth, *Let every soule be subject to the higher powers, for there is no power but of God, and the powers that be are ordained of God.* Roma., 13, 1, 2, 3, 4.

*Whosoever, therefore, resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God, and they that resist shall receyve to them selves judgement. For Princes are not to be feared for good works, but for evill: wilt thou then be without feare of the power, doo well, so shalt thou purchase praise of the same; for he is the minister of God for thy wealth: But if thou doo evill, feare, for he beareth not a swoord for naught, for he is the minister of God to take vengeance on him that dooth evill. If, then, the Pope be a soule, hee is to be obedient to the higher powers: and being a subject to God, as all other Princes be, hee must not take upon him what belongeth to God. As for the auctoritie that her Majestie hath, shee hath receyved it from God; neither is the Pope, or any earthlie Prince, to deprive her therof, but onelie God. Againe, when Jesus was brought before Pilate, Pilate sayde to him, Knowest thou not that I have power to crucifie thee, and have power to*

John, 19, 10, *loose thee? To which Jesus answered: Thou*  
 11. *couldst have no power at all against mee, except*

*it were given thee from above.* Thus maye you see, that what Prince soever ruleth upon the earth has his power and aucthority only from God, and not that any mortall man can use the aucthoritie of a Prince at his pleasure. How say you to this? Whereto he would make no answer; but seemed to demaunde of them if they would deny, that if a Prince were in Paganisme, Atheisme, or governed by infidelitie, that such a Prince might not lawfullie be deposed. Which the learned Preachers answered in learned sort, approving that as the power was of God, so Princes were not to be deposed of any, but onelie by God.

No; (quoth Kirbie againe) hath it not beene disputed in Schooles for these five hundred yeeres, and will you deny it? O, Maister Crowley, Maister Crowley! and there pawsed, as though that Maister Crowley had agreede with him in such a monstrous error. But Maister Crowley him selfe gave me to understand, that at such time as hee conferred with the sayde Kirbie in the Tower about the same argument, that his answer was unto him, If any Prince fell into any such kinde of error, that Prince were corrigible; but of whom? not of any earthly Prince, but of that heavenlie Prince, who gave him his aucthority, and seeing him abusing it any way, correcteth him, in his justice. For by attributing to the Pope this aucthority, he witnessed him to be Antichrist, in that he wil depose Princes at his pleasure, and exalt him self above all that is called God, and forgive men their sinnes at his pleasure likewise. All this was not sufficient to mollifie the obstinate minde of Kirbie, but he would persist styl in this devillish imagination. Maister Sherife and the Preachers seeing him wavering, and not able to yeeld any reason for his arrogant opinion, laboured as much as in them laye to chaunge it; and when all would not serve, they desired him in hartie and humble manner to pray to God, to aske her Majestie

forgivenessse for the treasons wherein he had offended her. Whereto he aunswered, that he had not offended in any treason, to his knowledge: whereupon they showed him his treasons, which were adjudged by the people woorthy of greater punishment then he was at that time to suffer; yet would not he acknowledge them, but prayed to God for her Majestie, that shee might long rule in her authoritie to confound all her enimies, and that his hart was free from any treason to her Majestie. Then preparing himself to his prayers, the Preachers desired him to pray in English with them, and to say a prayer after them, wherein if he could finde any fault he should be resolved thereof. O, (quoth he againe) you and I were not one in faith, therefore I thinke I should offend God, if I should pray with you. At which woordes the people began to crie, Away with him! so he, saying his *Pater noster* in Latin, ended his life.

Then was Laurence Richardson brought up into the carte, and to him Thomas Cottom, to be executed together; but Cottom seemed to utter such woords as though there had been hope he would have forsaken his wickednesse, so that the halter was untied, and he brought downe out of the carte againe. In which time Lawrence Richardson prepared him to death, confessing him selfe a Catholique, and that he would beleieve in all things as the Catholique Church of Roome did; unto the Pope he allowed the onelie supremacie. In which traiterous opinion, after certain Latine prayers, he was committed to God.

Then was Cottom brought up to the carte againe, and the good opinion, had of him before, chaunged into that obstinate nature that was in them all, saying to Maister Sherife, that before he came into Englande he was armed for India, and thither if he might be suffered he would passe with as much convenient speede as might be. Then looking to the body of Laurence Richardson, wheron the Executioner was using his office, he lyfted up his handes and sayd: O, blessed Lau-

rence, pray for mee; thy blessed soule, Laurence, pray for mee! for which woordes both the Preachers and the people rebuked him, telling him that he ought to pray to none but to God onely, all helpe of man was but in vaine. Wherto he aunswered, he was assured that he could pray for him. In breefe, his treasons beeing mooved to him, he denied all, albeit his owne hand writing was there to affirme it. He prayed for her Majestie, and sayde his *Pater noster* and *Ave Maria*; and as the carte was drawing away he sayd, *In manus tuas, Domine, commendo spiritum meum*; and so he ended his lyfe. Thus in breefe have I set downe the Execution of these traytors, desiring God that the leude life of them, and this lamentable spectacle wytnessed to our eyes, may be a warning to us all how by our disobedience we provoke our Lord God to anger against us, and by our slacknesse in duetie to our gracious soveraigne Princesse, next under God our only supream governesse, enforce her mercifull hand to take up the sword of Justice against us. God long preserve her Majestie and honourable Counsayle: confound Antichriste and his practises, and give all faithfull subjectes grace to beare true and loyall mindes to God, their Prince, and Countrey.

Let this suffice thee (gentle Reader) at this time; and if thou desirest to be more acquainted with their Romish and Sathanicall juglinges, reade my *English Romaine lyfe*, which, so soone as it can be printed, shall be set forth. And thus committing thee to the God of all Trueth, who give us his grace to cleave to the Trueth, I byd thee hartelie farewell.

*God save the Queene.*



## NOTES TO MUNDAY'S

### REPORT OF THE EXECUTION OF TRAITORS.

---

Page 107, line 1, A breefe and true reporte, &c.] Stow, in his *Annales*. p. 1170, edit. 1615, thus shortly mentions this remarkable execution:—

“On the 28 day of May, Thomas Ford, John Shert, and Robert Johnson, priests, having beene before indicted, arraigned. and condemned, for high treason intended, as ye have heard of Campion and other, were drawne from the Tower to Tiburne, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered.

“And on the thirtieth of May, Luke Kirby, William Filby, Thomas Cottam, and Lawrance Richardson, were, for the like treason, in the same place likewise executed.”

He quotes “Ant. Monday” in the margin, as the person from whom the information had been derived; no doubt, referring to the tract before us.

Page 113, line 21, Which is in the booke lately sette foorth by authoritye.] Viz., to “A particular Declaration or Testimony of the undutiful and traitorous Affection borne against her Majesty by Edmond Campion, Jesuit, and other condemned Priests, witnessed by their own Confessions.” 4to. London. 1582.

Page 120, line 33, I gave thee two *Julyes* to goe buie them.] A *giulio* was a piece of money current in Rome, of about the value of sixpence.

Page 121, line 4, At Stukelyes beeing there.] i.e., the notorious Captain Stukely, who was killed in the battle of Alcazar. He figured in at least two plays of the age of Shakespeare: *vide* the Rev. A. Dyce's “Peele's Works,” ii., 82 *et seq.*

Page 122, line 1, Then Maister Feeld, the Preacher.] This was the Rev. John Field, the puritanical minister, who was the father of Nathaniel Field, the actor in several of Shakespeare's plays, and of Theophilus Field, who first became Bishop of Llandaff, and afterwards of Hereford.



With this last fact the Editor was not acquainted, when he printed "Memoirs of the principal Actors in the Plays of Shakespeare," for our Society, in 1846. See p. 207 of that work, for the registration of the baptism of Theophilus Field, on 22nd January, 1574: he was a poet, and in 1600 edited and contributed to a collection of Verses on the death of Sir Horatio Pallavicino. For an account of them, see "The Gentleman's Magazine" for March, 1851.

Page 123, line 16, O, Maister Crowley, Maister Crowley!] This was Robert Crowley, who had commenced life as a printer, and ended it as a preacher. He was a very zealous and able man, of puritanical principles, and he wrote many works to support his own views, and to extend generally the spirit of religion. He died in 1588, and was buried at St. Giles's, Cripplegate, of which parish he had been vicar.

Page 125, line 24, Reade my *English Romaine lyfe*.] It came out soon afterwards, in 4to., with the date of 1582. It is reprinted in the Harleian Miscellany.

•

AN

ADVERTISEMENT AND DEFENCE

AGAINST CAMPION.

•



A aduertisement  
*and defence for Trueth against her*  
Backbiters, and specially against  
the whispring Fauourers, and  
Colourers of Campions,  
and the rest of his con-  
federats treasons.

---

1581.

God saue the Queene.



.

*An advertisement and defence for*  
Trueth against her Backbiters, and specially  
against the whispring Favourers, and Co-  
lourers of Campions, and the rest of  
his confederats, treasons.

Although at the late arraignments at Westminster of Edmonde Campion, and other his complices, condemned there of sundry high treasons, it was manifestly declared, and fully proved how they all, under the pretence of the names of Jesuites, Seminarie Priests, and other persons of like condition, had secretly come into this Realme, by the sending of sundrie persons authorized by the Pope, to move the people by their secret perswasions to change their professions in the matter of religion, of long time quietly established in this Realme, and to be reconciled to the obedience of the Pope, and withdrawen from their naturall allegiance due to the Queenes Majestie; and by these meanes to be readie in their heartes and mindes, and otherwise provided, to joyne their forces, aswell with such as their Heads and superiours which sent them, intended speedily to procure to be sent into this Realme, as with other rebellious subjectes by them to be thereto also excited, of purpose to deprive her Majesty of her life, crowne, and dignitie, in like maner as lately hath bene notoriously attempted and put in execution by D. Sanders, an errant and detestable traitour, and whilst hee lived one of the saide Campions companions, and by other English

and Irish Jesuites and traitours in Ireland, where they had first, by their like secret meanes and perswasions, entised a great multitude of people of that land, first to change their profession of religion and to acknowledge the Popes authoritie, and to renounce the just authoritie of her Majestie; and so departing from their allegiance upon the arrivall of forreine forces, they did enter into a manifest Rebellion, against the which Almighty God, the just avenger of Rebels, by his goodnesse hath given her Majestie (through her good ministers) power to the vanquishing, not onely of those forreine forces, but also of a great number of the Rebels there: Yet it is maliciously, falsly, and traiterously, by some of the secret favourers of the said Campion, and other the said condemned Traitours, whispered in corners that the offences of these traitours were but for their secret attemptings as Jesuites, by exhorting and teaching, with Shriving, Massing, and such like actes, to move people to change their religion, and to yelde their obedience to the Pope, as Christes vicar, (although the same are of themselves offences very hainous, and seedes of sedicion not allowable by the lawes of the Realme) whereas, in very trueth, neverthesse it did manifestly appeare, upon their Inditements and at their arraignements, by sundrie confessions of some of their owne companions, and many good proofes and witnesses produced and sworne before their faces, that their factes, whereof they were arraigned and condemned, were such as were in trueth high Treasons committed against her Majesties most Royall person and against the ancient Lawes and Statutes of this Realme, which many hundred yeeres past were in force against like Traytours, and not for factes of doctrine or religion, nor yet for offences against any late or newe Statutes; the same being many conspiracies at sundry times beyond the Seas, at Rome in Italie, and other places, and lastly at Rheims in France, where there are nourished by the Popes authoritie, in Seminaries, multitudes of English Jesuites, Seminarie Priestes, and Fugitives, whereof

their Heads and Governours use continually, in their Sermons and in their Bookes publicquely printed, as Traitors to declare their traitorous mindes, as farre forth as they can, to the deprivation of the Queenes Majestie of her life and crowne, to which endes the said Campion and his said companions, by procurement of their said Heads, came secretly into this Realme to move the Subjects to renounce their naturall obedience, and according to a Bull of the last Pope, Pius, published, to perswade all sortes, with whom they durst secretly deale, that her Majestye, by the sayd Popes excommunication, was not the lawfull Queene of this Realme. nor that the Subjects were bounde to obey any of her lawes or Ministers, but that they were all free and discharged of their obedience and allegiance, and that they might lawfully, yea, that when time might serve, they ought to take armes against her Majestie, as in the late rebellion in the North was manifestly by like meanes put in execution, and as nowe also lately was notoriously attempted in Ireland, by stirring up the people in the Popes name, and under his standerd, to an open general rebellion; and to have brought these thinges to passe in this Realme, was the comming into this Realme of the said Campion and his complices most manifestly tried and proved, as if by Gods goodnesse, by their apprehensions after their secret wanderings and disguisings of them selves in a great part of the Shires of the Realme, these Traitors had not bene now stayed, and by just punishments ordered to be executed, there would have appeared such mischief as is lamentable to be thought of, to the danger of her Majesties person and to the hazard and ruine of the whole Realme by invasion of the same with forreine enemies, and by raising of inward warre within the Realme, the ende and event whereof, as of all warre civil, can not be without great griefe mentioned or imagined.

And to the further reproofe and condemnation of the saide Campion and other the Traitors now condemned, they being



all severally and earnestly required at the place of their arraignment to declare what they thought of the saide Popes Bull, (by which her Majestie was in the Popes intention deprived of the Crowne) and of Doctor Sanders, and of Bristowes traiterous writings in maintenance of the saide Bull and allowance of the Rebellion in the North, and of Saunders traiterous actions in Irelande, and being likewise demaunded what they did thinke if the present Pope should publish the like Bull, none of them all, but one onely named Rushton, could be perswaded by any their answeres to show in any part their mislykings eyther of the former Bull, or of D. Sanders, or Bristowes traiterous writings or actions, or of the Pope that nowe is, if he shoulde nowe publish the like Bull against her Majestie, so as they did apparantly shew their traiterous hearts stil fixed to persist in their devilish mindes against their naturall allegeance: whereof God give all good subjects, being true Englishmen borne, grace to beware, and in no sort to give eare or succour to such pernicious Traitours, howsoever they shall be covered with hipocrisie, and false and fained holines of Rome.

God save the Queene, long to  
reigne to his honour.

NOTES

TO

THE ADVERTISEMENT AGAINST CAMPION, ETC.

---

Page 131, line 5, Colourers of Campions, and the rest of his confederate treasons.] Edmund Campion was born in London, in 1540, but where has not been ascertained. He was executed December 1, 1581: so that he was then only in his forty-first year. He bore a high reputation among the Roman Catholics for learning and piety, and during the latter part of his career he was one of the provincials of the Jesuits in this country. He was educated first at Christ's Hospital, and afterwards at St. John's College, Oxford, and, according to Anthony Wood, (i., 473, edit. Bliss) took his Master's degree in 1564. He began his clerical duties as a Protestant, and seems to have imbibed Popish principles while in Ireland: soon after 1571 he escaped to the Continent, and for some time took up his abode at Douay, Rheims, Rome, and Prague. He was sent by the Pope into England in 1580, and, being accused of high treason, was taken in disguise in Berkshire.

Page 135, line 16, The late rebellion in the North.] Viz., the rebellion of 1569. See vol. ii. of "Extracts from the Registers of the Stationers' Company, for an account of an *unique* poem upon the subject, written and printed by William Seres, who, until the Editor discovered the tract, was known only as a typographer.

Page 135, line 17, And as nowe also lately was notoriously attempted in Ireland.] Referring to the invasion by the Spaniards and Italians, favoured by the Earl of Desmond, defeated and put to the sword by Arthur Lord Grey of Wilton. This event took place in November, 1581.

Page 136, line 4, Doctor Sanders.] An English priest who had stirred

up Fitzmorris to rebellion in Ireland in 1579, and afterwards died most miserably. For some account of him, see Camden's Annals, (Edit. Kennett) pp. 464, 494, &c.

Page 136, line 9, *But one onely named Rushton.*] Who therefore did not suffer with Campion, Sherwin, and Bryan, on 1st December, 1581.

A DEFENCE OF POETRY, MUSIC,  
AND STAGE-PLAYS,

BY THOMAS LODGE,

OF LINCOLN'S INN.

TO WHICH ARE ADDED, BY THE SAME AUTHOR,

AN ALARUM AGAINST USURERS;

AND

THE DELECTABLE HISTORY

OF

FORBONIUS AND PRISCERIA.

WITH INTRODUCTION AND NOTES.



LONDON:

PRINTED FOR THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY.

---

1853.



COUNCIL  
OF  
THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY.

---

**President.**

THE EARL OF ELLESMERE.

**Vice-Presidents.**

THE RT. HON. THE EARL OF CLARENDON.

THE RT. HON. THE EARL OF GLENGALL.

THE RT. HON. THE EARL HOWE.

THE RT. HON. LORD BRAYBROOKE.

THE RT. HON. THE LORD JUSTICE SIR JAMES KNIGHT  
BRUCE.

**Council.**

WILLIAM AYRTON, ESQ., F.R.S., F.S.A.

BAYLE BERNARD, ESQ.

J. PAYNE COLLIER, ESQ., V.P.S.A., DIRECTOR.

W. DURRANT COOPER, ESQ., F.S.A.

BOLTON CORNEY, ESQ., M.R.S.L.

PETER CUNNINGHAM, ESQ., F.S.A., TREASURER.

JOHN FORSTER, ESQ.

J. O. HALLIWELL, ESQ., F.R.S., F.S.A.

THE REV. WILLIAM HARNESS.

SWYNFEN JERVIS, ESQ.

CHARLES KNIGHT, ESQ.

DAVID LAING, ESQ.

MARK LEMON, ESQ.

THE HON. GEORGE O'CALLAGHAN.

FREDERIC OUVRY, ESQ., F.S.A.

T. J. PETTIGREW, ESQ., F.R.S., F.S.A.

GEORGE SMITH, ESQ.

WILLIAM JOHN THOMS, ESQ., F.S.A.

BENJAMIN WEBSTER, ESQ.

HIS EXCELLENCY M. SILVAIN VAN DE WEYER.

F. GUEST TOMLINS, ESQ., SECRETARY.

•

The Council of the Shakespeare Society desire it to be understood that they are not answerable for any opinions or observations that may appear in the Society's publications; the Editors of the several works being alone responsible for the same.

•

## INTRODUCTION.

---

As the present volume has only a partial reference to dramatic performances, it may very probably disappoint the expectations of some Members of the Shakespeare Society. It was however most desirable that the suppressed tract of Lodge, in answer to Gosson's "School of Abuse," should be preserved in an accessible form; and, as it was too inconsiderable in bulk to appear by itself, it is accompanied with an accurate reprint of the earliest of the same author's numerous publications, in which he protests against "the unjust slander" with which he had been assailed by Gosson, in his later work, "Playes confuted in Five Actions," without date, but printed about the year 1582. This treatise, "An Alarum against Usurers," is in other respects not unworthy of notice, as it exposes the craft and subtlety of a class of men who are found in most countries, delineated by the author from his own observation, or, as his words might infer, his personal experience. It also furnishes an early specimen of that conversational style which De Foe has employed so effectively in his various fictitious narratives.



Having obtained the use of the curious little volume of tracts relating to Stage Plays, which contains Lodge's Reply to Gosson, and which was purchased at Heber's sale (Part IV., No. 2,334) by the late William Henry Miller, Esq., of Craigentenny, with permission to have it transcribed for the use of the Shakespeare Society, I was led, somewhat incautiously, to undertake the editing of the present volume, instead of leaving it wholly in the more competent hands of Mr. Payne Collier, a gentleman to whom the Society is under such manifold obligations; but with his friendly assistance, the task has not proved very arduous.

The increasing attractions of theatrical entertainments during the reign of Queen Elizabeth, were attended with serious abuses. The crowds, in particular, which flocked on the Sundays to places of popular amusement, occasioned loud complaints and remonstrances on the part of the Puritan ministers. As dramatic performances were however encouraged and patronized by the Queen herself and many of the nobility, the denunciations in sermons preached at Paul's Cross, and even the prohibition of the Mayor and Aldermen of London, which prevented the erection of a theatre within the bounds of the City, had no effect in checking the evil.

Two years after the appearance of Northbrooke's "Treatise against Dicing, Dancing, Plays, and Interludes, with other idle Pastimes," Stephen Gosson, who had himself been a writer for the Stage, published his "School of Abuse." Both these works

have been reprinted in the series of the Society's publications, and edited by Mr. Collier, with his usual fidelity. In the same year, 1579, Gosson published another work, entitled "The Ephemerides of Phialo," at the end of which he annexed "A short Apologie of the School of Abuse; against Poets, Pipers, Players, and their Excusers." In this Apology Gosson tells us that the Players, having in vain applied to some members of the Universities to answer his former publication, they at length "had found one in London to write certain honest Excuses, for so they term it, to their dishonest Abuses which I revealed." To what individual he alludes, cannot be ascertained. Mr. Collier, I think rather inadvertently, says this "alludes to Thomas Lodge the dramatist, who very soon afterwards published his reply to Stephen Gosson." It is however by no means clear that this was the case, when we consider his words. "Our players," (he says) "since I set out the *Schole of Abuse*, have travailed to some of mine acquaintance of both Universities, with fayre profers, and greater promises of rewardes, if they woulde take so much paines as to write against mee; at last, like to Penelopee's suters, which seeing themselves disdained of her, were glad to encroch with some of her maides, when neither of both Universities would heare their plea, they were driven to flie to a weake hedge, and fight for themselves with a rotten stake.....It is tolde mee that they have got one in London to write certaine *Honest Excuses*, for so they tearme it, to their dishonest Abuses which I revealed.

.....I staye my hande till I see his booke; when I have perused it, I wil tel you more." As Lodge's tract makes no mention of this Apology, the two sheets of which it consists may have already been in the printer's hands; and before being corrected, when the usual license for publication was refused, only a few copies may have been thrown off. But Gosson's distinction, "one in London," in contrast with some persons in both Universities, will not apply to Lodge, although at that time he probably resided in London. It is at least evident that they had no personal acquaintance, although they were students at Oxford at the same time, and took their degree of Bachelor of Arts within seven months of each other. When Lodge's tract came into Gosson's hands, as something unexpected on his part, he expressly states, this was "one whole yeere after the privy printing thereof;" and consequently, several months subsequent to the publication of his "Ephemerides."

This, after all, is a matter of no importance, and it is therefore scarcely necessary to remark, that a tract issued under such circumstances was not likely to be the one specially written in favour of the Players at the time, when, in consequence of "his Defiance unto Players," Gosson says he "*was mightely besett with heaps of adversaries.*" Of these productions he has preserved the outline of one named "The Play of Plays,"<sup>1</sup> "written in their owne defence," which was brought on the Stage, but probably never printed. Another

<sup>1</sup> In his "Playes Confuted," sign. F., 1-3. See also Collier's *Annals of the Stage*, vol. ii., p. 275.

anonymous tract, of which unfortunately no copy is known to exist, is noticed, in his "Ephemerides," as having passed through the press, in 1579, under the disguised title of "Strange Newes from Affrica."

There is however no occasion to enlarge further on the various works for or against the Stage which appeared at this time, after the detailed information which Mr. Collier has prefixed to the reprints of the two volumes to which I have already alluded. But I may be allowed to express the hope that he will complete the series, by the republication of Gosson's "Short Apology," printed in 1579, and of his latter work, "Playes confuted in Five Actions," as these contain, within a limited compass, much curious matter relating to the Stage. On the present occasion, it may be more suitable for me to endeavour to collect the scattered notices relating to the personal history of Lodge, and to subjoin an enumeration of his writings, as a tribute to his memory which cannot be considered an unsuitable addition to the present volume, as the publication of a Society whose object it is to illustrate the history not merely of the Drama, but of English Literature during the remarkable period in which the author flourished.

In this attempt, however unsuccessful it may be, I found it necessary to supply some local disadvantages by seeking the friendly aid of others. I would specially desire to acknowledge how much I have been indebted to the following gentlemen: John Payne Collier, Esq., and Peter Cunningham, Esq., two of the most efficient members of the Shakespeare So-

ciety; the Rev. Dr. Bandinel, and the Rev. Henry O. Coxe, Oxford; Samuel Christy, Esq., M.P.; Dr. Irving, Edinburgh; W. H. Spilsbury, Esq., of Lincoln's Inn Library; and Sir Charles G. Young, Garter King-at-Arms, through the kind intervention of W. B. D. D. Turnbull, Esq., Advocate. Nor must I omit my hearty thanks for the liberal use accorded to me of several of Lodge's tracts preserved in the rich and interesting library collected by the late Mr. Miller of Craigentenny.

DAVID LAING.

Edinburgh, June, 1853.

.

SOME ACCOUNT  
OF  
THOMAS LODGE AND HIS WRITINGS.

---

“ Who does not wish to know all that can be known of an author who could write such stanzas as the following?—

“ ‘ See where the babes of memory are laid,  
Under the shadow of Apollo’s tree ;  
That plait their garlands fresh, and well apaid,  
And breath forth lines of dainty poesy.  
Ah ! world farewell : the sigh : hereof doth tell,  
That true content doth in the desert dwell.

“ ‘ Sweet solitary life, thou true repose,  
Wherein the wise contemplate Heaven aright,  
In thee no dread of war or worldly foes,  
In thee no pomp seduceth mortal sight ;  
In thee no wanton cares to win with words,  
Nor lurking toys which city life affords.

“ ‘ At peep of day, when in her crimson pride  
The Morn bespreads with roses all the way  
Where Phoebus’ coach with radiant course must glide,  
The hermit bends his humble knees to pray ;  
Blessing that God whose bounty did bestow  
Such beauties on the earthly things below.’

“ These sweet lines, and many more of the same flow and fancy, were written by Thomas Lodge, considerably more than two hundred and fifty years ago, in a poem ‘ In commendation of a Solitary Life ;’ and, avoiding certain uncouthnesses of antique spelling, it is obvious that, for the grace and facility of the verse, and for the beauty and simplicity of the sentiment, the lines might have been written yesterday—

if, indeed, any of our living ‘babes of memory’ could equal the ease, purity, and piety of Lodge.”

Such is the commencement of a paper on “Thomas Lodge and his Works,” by John Payne Collier, Esq., which appeared in the *Gentleman’s Magazine* for December, 1850, and which contains a minute and interesting enumeration of his several works. Had this been followed by one or more papers, as proposed, giving an account of Lodge’s personal history, and a general and comprehensive view of his character, the present attempt would have been superfluous.

THOMAS LODGE was the second son of Sir Thomas Lodge (grocer), Lord Mayor of London in 1563, by his wife Anne, daughter of Sir William Laxton (grocer), Lord Mayor of London in 1542. He was born, there is reason for supposing, about the year 1558, either in London, or at West Ham, in Essex. He himself repeatedly speaks of “the offspring from whence he came” as a lineage of which he had no reason to be ashamed; and, either in accordance with the fashion of the time, or in consequence of the imputations thrown out against him by his early antagonist, Stephen Gosson, he uniformly styles himself “Gentleman.” Wood derives his descent “from a family of that name in Lincolnshire” (he should have written, I suspect, Shropshire), and in a pedigree, still believed to be extant, Sir Thomas Lodge (the father), claims to be the representative of Odoard de Logis, Baron of Wigton, in the county of Cumberland, in the reign of Henry I.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Gentleman’s Magazine* for 1834, vol. ii, p. 157.

Without attempting to assign London or its vicinity as the place of his birth, we have his own authority, at a later period of his life, that he "was bred and brought up in the City."<sup>1</sup> Sir William Laxton died on the 29th of July, 1556, and his funeral took place on the 9th of August, when his son-in-law, Lodge, acted as chief mourner.<sup>2</sup> In 1559, Sir Thomas Lodge, the father of the poet, was chosen one of the Sheriffs of London, and in 1562, Lord Mayor. On the 18th of April, 1563, Sir Thomas, still Lord Mayor, had a son christened;

<sup>1</sup> Vincent: *Salop* in *Coll. Armor*, p. 509.—"Thomas Lodge, born at Cound, settled in London as a grocer, and was Lord Mayor of London in 1562." (*Hulbert's Manual of Shropshire Biography*, p. 21.)

The following verses were placed on the tomb of Sir William and Lady Laxton in the church of St. Mary, Aldermary, London:—

"Sir William Laxton lies interred within this hollow vault,  
That by good life had happy death, the end for which he sought.  
Of poor and rich he was belov'd, his dealings they were just,  
God hath his Soul, his body here consumed is to dust.

"Here lies by Fame, that lately died, Sir William Laxton's Wife,  
That ever was a doer good, and liv'd a virtuous life :  
A mindful Matron of the poor, and to the learned sort,  
A true and faithful citizen and died with good report."

"He died the 29th day of July, 1556." Sir Thomas and Lady Lodge (the father and mother of the poet) are also buried in St. Mary, Aldermary. Lady Laxton left £100 to her grandson Thomas Lodge student of Lincoln's Inn.

<sup>2</sup> After the burial in St. Mary's Church, Aldermary, there was an entertainment given, where "dyned many worshipfull men and women." The hearse still burning with wax, it is recorded by a citizen of London, that, on the last day of that month, "after mass, and a sermon, there was another" great dinner, and after dinner the hearse was taken down. (*The Diary of Henry Machyn, Citizen and Merchant Tailor of London*: edited for the Camden Society by John Gough Nichols, Esq.; pp. 111, 113. London, 1848, 4to.)



William Earl of Pembroke being one of the god-fathers.<sup>1</sup> Sir Thomas's name also occurs as one of five merchant adventurers, at whose expense a vessel was fitted out for Guinea, in February, 1562-3, returning in August; and again, in the following year.<sup>2</sup>

Lady Lodge was courted by authors when her son, the future poet, was a minor, the Registers of the Stationers' Company recording under the 7th of April, 1579, that Edward White obtained a license for printing a small work, "The Myrror of Modestie."<sup>3</sup> The author was Thomas Salter, and it was dedicated by the publisher to Lady Anne Lodge. The full title of the little book is this:—

"A Mirrhor mete for all Mothers, Matrones, and Maidens, intituled the Mirrhor of Modestie, no lesse profitable and pleasant, then necessarie to bee read and practised.

"Imprinted at London for Edward White, at the little North dore of Paules, at the signe of the Gun."

<sup>1</sup> Machyn's Diary, p. 117.

<sup>2</sup> Hakluyt's Voyages, vol. ii., part 2, pp. 54, 55. Lond., 1599, folio. "Which Voyage is also written in verse by Robert Baker." This refers to "The first voyage of Robert Baker to Guinie, with the Minion and Primrose, set out in October, 1562, by Sir William Garrard, Sir William Chester, M. Thomas Lodge, Anthony Hickman, and Edward Castelin:" also, "The second voyage to Guinie, and the river of Sesto, set out in the moneth of November, 1563, by Sir William Garrard," &c. Hakluyt inserted Baker's poetical accounts in his first Collection, London, 1589, but he omitted them in his enlarged work, in 1599.—To these voyages has been assigned the unenvied distinction of having laid the foundation of the infamous traffic of slaves, which was afterwards countenanced by Queen Elizabeth. (Bancroft's *United States*, 4th edition, vol. i., p. 173; Grahame's *History of North America*, vol. i., p. 16, edit, Lond., 1837. 4 vols., 8vo.)

<sup>3</sup> Registers of the Stationers' Company, vol. ii., p. 86. (Shakespeare Society.)

As only two copies of this volume are known, the dedication is here subjoined.

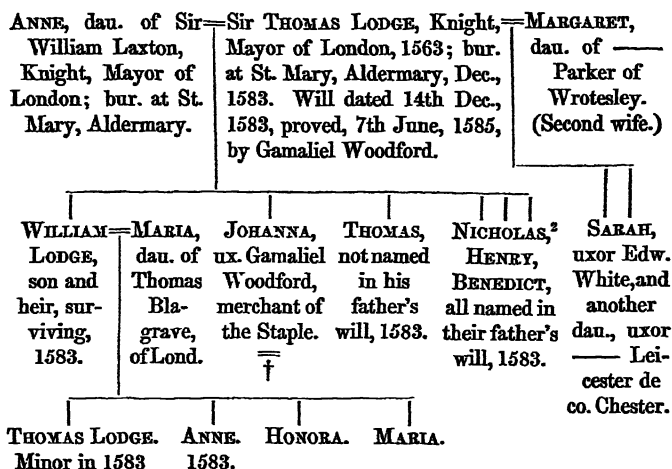
“To the right vertuous Matrone, and singuler good Ladie Anne, wife to the right worshipfull Sir Thomas Lodge knight, E. W. wisheth long life and prosperous estate.

“Having a long tyme debated with myself (my very good Lady) after the copie of this Pamphlete was come into my handes, too whom I might best dedicate the same, your L. at last came to my remembraunce, as the Ladie too whom I did knowe my self to be so greatly beholden, by many received courtesies, that I could not but confesse my self bound to be mindfull of requitall, to the uttermoste of my power, and therefore notyng the title that it beareth, beyng the Mirrhoe of Modestie. I knewe none so worthie (at least to whom I was indetted of duetie) as your Ladiship to be patronesse hereof, because that the vertue whereof it beareth the title dooeth so gloriously shine in you, as verie Envie herself cannot but confesse (much rather a right demyng mynde) that it is your deserte to have it, bothe for affirmyng that whiche is contayned therein (by your life) to be laudable, and also to incorage other by your supporte to followe your stepps, to attaine to your atchived fame. Wherefore, although the gift be far unable to gratifie the least part of the favour I have found, yet I have boldly presumed too presente it unto you, as beeyng assured (consideryng your courteous Nature) of courteous acceptation, and the rather because it is a Mirrhoe to teache Maidens to be Modest, whereof you have alwaies been a Mistresse, and therefore maye the better judge if it bee well wrought, by perusyng it at your beste leasure, whiche not doubtyng but ye will dooe, I cease from further troublunge you, with my duetifull commendations, and daiely intercession to the Almightye, for the happie estate and prosperitie of your Ladishippe, that am your worshippes moste bounden, E. W.”

This is followed by an “Epistle to all Mothers, Matrones, and Maidens of Englande,” on four pages, and that by the body of the work. It is ended by “A pretie pithie Dialogue betwene Mercurie and Vertue. Made by T. S.”<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The body of the book is thus subscribed, at the end, on sign. D 6<sup>b</sup>.—  
“*Finis q. Thomas Salter.*”

Lady Anne did not long survive the dedication, as White, its publisher, on the 29th of December, 1579, obtained a license for "An Epitaph of the Lady Anne Lodge;" and what renders this chiefly worthy of notice is, that in the Register the name "T. Lodge" is added, as the author; but no copy of this Epitaph or Elegy has been discovered. Her husband, Sir Thomas Lodge, survived till February, 1583-4;<sup>1</sup> and it appears, from the following pedigree, communicated by Sir Charles G. Young, Garter King-at-Arms, that he had contracted a second marriage.



<sup>1</sup> His epitaph was in the church of St. Mary, Aldermay:—

"Here lieth buried Sir Thomas Lodge, Knight, and Dame Anne his Wife. He was Lord Mayor in the year of our Lord God 1563, when God did visit this city with a great Plague for our Sins. *For we are sure that our Redeemer liveth, and that we shall rise out of the Earth in the latter day, &c.* Job. 19."

<sup>2</sup> That Thomas Lodge the poet was the second real son of the Lord Mayor, is proved conclusively by the following monument in Rolleston

As Thomas, the second son, is not named in his father's will, the omission confirms the fears of the mother as I shall have occasion to show, and also the attacks of Gosson, his antagonist.

A passage in Lodge's "*Alarum against Usurers*," 1584, is worthy of notice, where "the young Gentleman" involved in difficulties by his extravagant mode of living, is thus addressed by his father:—

"How tenderly, good boye, *in thy mother's lyfe* wast thou cherished! How deerely beloved! How well instructed! Did I ever entice thee to vice? Nay, rather enforced I thee not to love vertue? And whence commeth it that all these good instructions are swallowed up by one sea of thy follie? *In the Universities thy wit was prused*, for that it was pregnant; thy preferment great, for that thou deservedst it; so that, before God, I did imagine that my honour shuld have beginning in thee alone, and be continued by thy offspring; but *beeing by me brought to the Innes of Court*, a place of abode for our English gentrie, and the onely nurserie of true learning, I finde thy nature quite altered, and where thou first shuldest have learnt law, thou art become lawlesse."

It is scarcely possible to avoid drawing the inference that Lodge was in some measure describing his own "tried experience."

Church, Nottinghamshire, erected to the memory of his immediate younger brother:—

"Underneath lieth the body of Nicholas Lodge, gent., third son of Sir Thomas Lodge, sometimes Lord of this Manor of Rolleston, whose piety towards many orphans, his allies, and friends are extant in his Will, to the poor of the parish notified by his bequest, his upright dealing testified by all he knew. He died September 25, 1612.

"Thomas Lodge, Doctor Medicus, testamenti sui solus Executor clarissimo fratri amoris sui testimonium moerens posuit."

Nicholas Lodge's will, dated 29 August, 1612, contains the following bequest:—"To the wife of my dear brother, Thomas Lodge, five pounds to buy her a pair of bracelets of gold in remembrance of my love to her." Her christian name unfortunately is not given. His brother William was alive and his brother Henry dead when he made his will.

Lodge's first entry into the University of Oxford, says Anthony Wood, was in 1573, and "he was afterwards servitor and scholar under the learned and virtuous Mr. Edward Hoby, of Trinity College, where making early advances, his ingenuity began at first to be observed by several of his compositions in poetry."<sup>1</sup> Lodge himself, in a dedication to Henry Lord Hunsdon, Lord Chamberlain of Queen Elizabeth's household, thus refers to his studies at Oxford: "Other reasons more particular (right Honourable) challenge in me a speciall affection to your Lordship, as being a scholler with your two noble sonnes, Master Edmond Carew and M. Robert Carew, (two siens worthie of so honourable a tree, and a tree glorious in such honourable fruite) as also being a scholler in the Universitie under that learned and vertuous Knight, Sir Edward Hobbie, when he was Batcheler in Arts, a man as well lettered as well borne."<sup>2</sup> &c.

Thomas Lodge, of Trinity College, took his degree of Bachelor of Arts on the 8th of July, 1577. His classical attainments sufficiently prove that he had not neglected his studies, although, for some reason not explained, he did not remain at Oxford the usual period to qualify himself for taking the higher degree of Master of Arts. Soon after his return to his friends in London, he was admitted, on the 26th of April, 1578, into the Society of Lincoln's Inn.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Athenæ Oxonienses*, by Dr. Bliss, vol. ii., p. 382.

<sup>2</sup> See this dedication at page xxviii.

<sup>3</sup> The elder Thomas Lodge was admitted into the Society of Lincoln's

His sureties were Robert Hungate and Edward Thornesby. His name occurs again among those below the bar, who had to keep their vacations in 1579, but in the records, from the 24th to the 30th Elizabeth, inclusive, the names are wholly omitted.

There is no evidence of his having ever been called to the bar, and it seems reasonable to infer that his attachment to literature had withdrawn his mind from pursuing his career as a barrister. for the charge brought against him by Gosson of "leading a vagrant life" is in some respects supported by his mother's will, wherein (1579) she bequeaths the use of a portion of her property towards "his finding at his book at Lincoln's Inn." and the remainder to him, on his attaining the age of twenty-five. with this provision, however, that should he "discontinue his

Inn 8th of October, 1561. His sureties were John Bowyer and John Ronyon. While a student, he seems to have acted as Sub-Treasurer, as is shown by the following order made at a council held on the feast of All Saints, 9 Eliz. (1 November, 1567):—"It is granted to Mr. Thomas Lodge, late Under-Treasurer of this Societie, for his great paines taken in the [collection] of the duties of this Societie. shall have xx<sup>s</sup>. to him paid of the benevolence of this Societie by Mr. Robert Mounson. now Treasurer of this Societie." His name again appears, 2nd February, (1570) 12 Eliz., as Sub-Treasurer and on the 4th of June. in the same year, among the names of persons to be called to the bar "at the next moote." is the following order: "——and that Mr. Lodge shall be likewise called to the barre, so that he leave practisinge as an Attorneye within one yeare next, and otherwise not to be accounted as an utter-barrister afterwards." During the next three years his name is entered at different times among the barristers keeping their vacations. *William* Lodge was admitted into the Society on the 30th of July, (1572) 14 Eliz., Thomas Morte and Thomas Lodge being his sureties. After this, the name of the elder Lodge disappears from the books, and that of Lodge junior is twice entered as keeping vacations (in 16 Eliz.) among the names below the bar.

directly answered." It has no date, but was printed about the year 1582.

That Lodge had at this time been visited "by the heavy hand of God," appears from his own words. In 1581, he aided Barnaby Riche, a somewhat voluminous author, in correcting the style of one of his works, "The straunge and wonderfull Adventures of Don Simonides, a Gentilman Spaniarde." In some commendatory verses which follow the preface, Lodge says—

"Good Riche, a wise man hardly can denye  
But that your booke by me ill-mended is:"

and then, in reference to himself, he adds:—

"Whose long distresse hath laid his Muse to rest,  
Or dull his sprights, or sences at the lest."

These lines are interesting, as a proof of the early proficiency in poetical composition which had attracted notice while a student at Oxford. The whole of this address to Riche may be quoted.

"THOMAS LODGE, GENTILMAN, IN PRAISE OF THE  
AUCTHOURS WORKE.

"Where wanteth judgement and advised eye  
To note or coate the thyng that is amisse,  
Good Riche, a wise man hardly can denye  
But that your booke by me ill-mended is:  
My helde suche pleasure can not brooke by gis,  
Whose long distresse hath laied his Muse to rest,  
Or dull his sprights, or sences at the lest.

"Some errours yet, if any such there bee,  
Your willyng mynde maie quickly them subdue,  
For wise men winke, when often tymes thei see,  
Yet fooles are blynde, when moste thei seeme to rewe,  
Of proude contempt this mischief doeth ensue,  
That he that scornes the fruite of honest toile,  
From backe regard, hymself can scarce assoile.

"The wisest men, for that thei mortall were,  
 Did runne amisse, and kept not levell, still  
 Some wanton woorkes, some graver stile did beare,  
 Yet eche proceeded from the self same quill:  
 Wee ought not thinke that those mens myndes were ill,  
 For sure the vice that thei did laye in sight  
 Was for to make it growe in more despight.

"I leave thee now, my Muse affordes no more:  
 A dolefull dumpe pulles backe my pleasaunt vaine:  
 Looke thou for praise by men of learned lore,  
 Despise the skoffe that growes from shuttle braine:  
 For me, I honour thee for taking paine,  
 And wishe eche youth that spendes his tyme amisse  
 Would fixe his penne to write suche woorkes as this.

*"Vita misero longa, felici brevis."*

But the charge which Gosson brought against Lodge as a person of a "vagrant life," seems to have suggested the notion, which has been so often repeated as a well-established fact, that Lodge himself had become a "player." That this was the case, rests, I fear, on no other testimony than the use made by Henslowe in describing Lodge. of the term "player;" a name in Lodge's time equally applicable to an actor and a writer for the stage—a playwright. When, however, in 1584, Lodge published his "Alarum against Usurers," he appeals to his courteous friends, the Gentlemen of the Inns of Court, to protect "my person from that reproach which about two years since an injurious caviller objected against me." As this work, containing the *Primordia* of his studies, and dedicated to Sir Philip Sidney, forms the chief portion of the present volume, it is unnecessary to quote his own words in reply to Gosson,



who, "not measuring me by my birth, but by the subject I handled," had thus "slandered me without cause." It has been remarked that the tone of his address, in referring to the injurious aspersions of his antagonist, places Lodge's character in a candid and amiable point of view.<sup>1</sup>

Although for several years he still designed himself "Thomas Lodge, of Lincolnes Inn, Gentleman," he seems never to have entertained the idea of adhering to the legal profession, as a barrister; and we have his own authority for stating that, "being my selfe first a Student, and afterwards falling from bookes to armes," he quitted his peaceful studies for a more adventurous life. In his subsequent publications, he alludes to two expeditions in which he was concerned. The first may be assigned to the year 1587 or 1588, when he accompanied Captain Clarke, probably in one of those marauding expeditions which were so frequent at this period against the Spanish and Portuguese settlements. To the Gentlemen Readers he says: "To be briefe, roome for a souldier and a sailer, that gives you the fruits of his labors that he wrought in the Ocean, when everie line was wet with a surge, and everie humorous passion was counterecheckt with a storme."

<sup>1</sup> Collier's *Poetical Decameron*, vol. ii., p. 229. The writer of a valuable article on Lodge in the *Gentleman's Magazine* says that, "previously to his [Lodge's] commencing a vagrant life, he made a will, dated 1583, in the preamble to which he states that being of sound mind and body but fully impressed with the uncertainty of human life, he thinks it fitting to devise his property, in case of accident, to his wife Joan and his daughter Mary. He also bequeaths his law books to a person named Sheriton." If such a will was actually made by Thomas Lodge the poet, it may safely be assumed it was not as a prelude to a vagrant life.

In this voyage to "the Islands of Terceras and the Canaries," to beguile the time with labour. as he says in the dedication of his *Rosalynde*, "I writ this booke; rough as hatcht in the stormes of the ocean, and feathered in the surges of many perrilous seas." Tercera, an island near the west coast of Africa, forming part of the group of the Azores, was a Portuguese settlement; but no account of Captain Clarke's expedition has been recorded.

In 1589, having returned to England, Lodge published a volume of poems, containing "the most pithie and pleasant Historie of Glaucus and Silla." In the dedication of the volume, intended at first for his own personal friends, he states his reason for making it public.

"To his Especiall good friend Master Rafe Crane, and the rest of his most entire well willers, the Gentlemen of the Innes of Court and Chauncerie, Thomas Lodge, of Lincolnes Inne, Gent., wisheth increase of worship and continuance in vertue.

"Sweete Master Crane, I had not thought at this instant to have partaked my passions with the print, whose discontented thoughts so long inured to obscuritie, were divorced many yeares since from vaine glories inordinate follie; but the base necessitie of an extravagant melancholie mate, that had no other *vnde* of *quod ad victum attinet* but the forestalling of other mens inventions, made my imperfit Poems (in spite of waste paper) to hazard an apprenticeship in Powles: so that that which in the first peeping foorth was wholie predestinate to your friendship by an underhand marte, is made the mercinarie recreation of everie ridiculous mate. Our Wits now adaies are waxt verie fruitefull, and our Pamphleters more than prodigall: so that the postes which stoode naked a tedious *non terminus*, doo vaunt their double apparrell as soone as ever the Exchequer openeth; and everie corner is tooke up with some or other penelesse companion that will imitate any estate for a two-pennie almes. I could afford you whole services of absurdities, that would disquiet the digestion of Arte, *usque ad pascam*, were it not that I pittie to particu-

larize simple fellowes imperfections, and am altogether loath to adventure my paines in so ungratefull a Province. For transformed Scilla, how-ever she hapned now to bee disjoyned from disdainfull Charybdis, thinke not but if they have good shipping they will meete ere long both in one shop: and landed they had at this instant, in one and the self same bay, if Scilla (the unfortunater of the two) had not met with a mudie pirate by the way. Arrived shee is, though in a contrary coast, but so wrackt and weatherbeaten through the unskilfulnes of rough writers, that made their poast haste passage by night, as Glaucus would scarce know her if he met her. Yet my hope is, Gentlemen, that you will not so much imagine what she is, as what shee was: insomuch as from the shop of the Painter shee is false into the hands of the stainer. Thus referring the supportance of my credit, and the inability of my verse to your ingenious opinions, I bid you farewell till the next Tearm: at which time I hope to entertaine your severall delights with farre better discourses, and bee suppliant to my good frend Master Crane in some or other more acceptable Poem. In the meane time, let my appliable *voluisse* intitle me to your curtesie: whose I am during life in all enterchangeable dutie.

“ Your friend asured,

“ *Thomas Lodge.*”

At this period of his life Lodge appears to have devoted himself wholly to literary pursuits; and in 1580 he published his “*Rosalynde: Enphues Golden Legacie*,” said, in reference to the place where it was written, to have been “*fetcht from the Canaries.*” This pastoral romance was the most popular of all his works, and it was honoured in having furnished Shakespeare with the plot of “*As You Like It.*” In reprinting this novel, in the series of works “*used by Shakespeare as the foundation of his dramas,*” Mr. Collier says, “*We cannot hesitate to declare it a very amusing and varied composition, full of agreeable and graceful invention, (for we are aware of no foreign authority for any of the incidents) and with much natural force and simplicity in the style of the*

narrative. That it is here and there disfigured by the faults of the time, by forced conceits, by lowness of allusion and expression, and sometimes by inconsistency and want of decorum in the characters, cannot be denied. These are errors which the judgment and genius of Shakespeare taught him to avoid; but the admitted extent and nature of his general obligations to Lodge afford a high tribute to its excellence. ....The resemblance throughout will be found rather general than particular; and the characters of Jaques, Touchstone, and Audrey, are entirely new in Shakespeare. The names of the other personages engaged in the drama have also been changed, with the exception of those of the heroine, Phoebe, Adam, and Charles the Wrestler.”<sup>1</sup> At the close of his “*Rosalynde*” the author says, “If you gather any fruites by this Legacie, speake well of Euphues for writing it, and me for fetching it. If you grace me with that favour, you encorage me to be more forward; and as soone as I have overlookt my labours, expect *THE SAILERS KALENDER*.” This work probably had some relation to his sea adventures, but it seems never to have been printed. The dedication of his “*Rosalynde*” is as follows:—

“To the Right Honourable and his most esteemed Lord, the Lord of Hunsdon, Lord Chamberlaine of her Majesties household, and Governor of her Towne of Barwicke: T. L. G. wisheth increase of all honourable vertues.

“Such Romanes (right Honourable) as delighted in martiall exploitcs, attempted their actions in the honour of Augustus, because he was a Patron of souldiers: and Virgil dignified him with his poems, as a Moeccenas of schollers; both joyntly advauncing his royaltie, as a Prince warlike and learned. Such as sacrifice to Pallas, present her with bayes as she is

<sup>1</sup> Shakespeare's Library. vol. i. London. 1843, 2 vols. 8vo.

wise, and with armour as she is valiant; observing herein that excellent *to the purpose* which dedicateth honours according to the perfection of the person. When I entred (right Honourable) with a deep insight into the consideration of these premisses, seeing your L. to be a Patron of all martiall men, and a Mœcenas of such as applie themselves to studie; wearing with Pallas both the launce and the bay, and ayiming with Augustus at the favour of all, by the honourable vertues of your minde: being my selfe first a Student, and after falling from bookes to armes, even vowed in all my thoughts dutifully to affect your L. Having with Capt. Clarke made a voyage to the Islands of Terceras and the Canaries, to beguile the time with labour, I writ this booke; rough, as hatcht in the stormes of the Ocean, and feathered in the surges of many perillous seas. But as it is the worke of a souldier and a scholler, I presumed to shrowde it under your Honors patronage, as one that is the fautor and favourer of all vertuous actions; and whose honorable Loves growen from the generall applause of the whole Common wealth for your higher deserts, may keep it from the mallice of every bitter tung. Other reasons more particular (right Honorable) chalenge in me a speciall affection to your L., as being a scholler with your two noble sonnes, Master Edmond Carew and M. Robert Carew, (two siens worthie of so honorable a tree, and a tree glorious in such honourable fruite) as also being a scholler in the Universitie under that learned and vertuous Knight, Sir Edward Hobbie, when he was Batcheler in Arts, a man as well lettered as well borne, and, after the Etymologie of his name, soaring as high as the wings of knowledge can mount him, happie every way, and the more fortunate, as blessed in the honour of so vertuous a Ladie. Thus (right honourable) the duetie that I owe to the sonnes chargeth me that all my affection be placed on the father; for where the branches are so precious, the tree of force must be most excellent. Commaunded and emboldened thus with the consideration of these forepassed reasons, to present my Booke to your Lordship; I humbly intreate your Honour will vouch of my labours, and favour a souldiers and a schollers pen with your gracious acceptance; who answeres in affection what he wants in eloquence; so devoted to your Honour, as his onely desire is, to end his life under the favour of so martiall and learned a Patron.

“Resting thus in hope of your Lordships courtesie, in deyning the Patronage of my worke, I cease: wishing you as many honourable fortunes as your Lordship can desire, or I imagine.

“Your Honours souldier humbly affectionate,

“*Thomas Lodge.*”

Lodge's Tragedy, "The Wounds of the Civil War." may be assigned to this period, although first published in 1594. In point of date, his next performance was a kind of historical romance—"The History of Robert second Duke of Normandy, surnamed Robin the Divell." In addressing "the Courteous Reader whatsoever," he says: "Gentlemen, I have, upon the earnest request of some my good friends. drawne out of the old and ancient antiquaries the true life of Robert second Duke of Normandie, (surnamed, for his youthfull imperfections, Robin the Divell) wherein I stand not so much on the termes as the trueth, publishing as much as I have read, and not so much as they have written." He dedicates it thus:—

"To the worshipfull and true Moecenas of learning, M. Thomas Smith, T. L. G. wisheth all aboundance of worldly fortunes in this life, and the benefites of heavenlie felicitie in the life to come.

"Seeing in these our days men rather seeke the increase of transitorie wealth than the knowledge of devine wisdom, preferring stuffed baggs before studious bookes, their pounds before precepts, loosing the true ritches of the minde, to levell at the transitorie allurements of this world, feeding fooles with figgs, and philosophers with floutes; I have, among the multitudes of these men, made choice of your Worship for my Patron and Moecenas, who, of a farre more happy nature with Theodosius, honour Appian, and seeing learning almost suppressed with contempt, or discountenanced with neglect, have in this famous Citie (like a vertuous member of the same) begun to exile ignorance, to revive artes: knowing Ladislaus reasons to be of force, that Citizens who are unlettered are lesse than men, or rather (as Frederick the Emperour was wont to say) man like beastes. Which vertuous indeavour of yours (worthie both your name and fortune) shall in time to come more advance you, than they who in tooth and nayle labour to purchase lands, which ordinarily perish through their heires lavishnes. It is true fame which is gotten by vertue, and perfect vertue to maintaine learning; which is so kinde to

these that seeke after it, that in all changes of fortune, in all miseries of this life, and casualties whatsoever, it prepareth the mind and preventeth mishaps. And least I among the poore Tirones of learning, who desire the increase thereof with the most, though deserve therein with the least, should seeme to forget this especially and ingrafted vertue so admirably bestowed upon your Worship. I have thought good to present you with a rude and homely written history, which if with like regard you shall accept, as Alphonsus did the silly Satires of Philelphus, I doubt not but in short time to publish that under your name, which shall not only merit and deserve your acceptance, but also mightely profit all such as are studious in all sorts of learning. Till when, I most humbly commend me, desiring your Worship most earnestly to prosecute your vertuous enterprises, beseeching God to prosper you in them and all other, to the advancement of Letters. From my Chamber, 2 Maij., 1591.

“Your Worships to command,

“T. L. G.”

Another work, published by Lodge in 1591, has this quaint title, “Catharos: Diogenes in his Singularity. christened by him, A Nettle for Nice Noses.” It was printed for John Busbie, by whom it was inscribed “to the right worshippfull Syr John Hart, Knight.” He says, “I present your Worship, in signe of my sincere affect, with this small conceit, pen’d by a Gentleman my deare friend.” This suggests the probability of its having appeared towards the close of the year, when the author had set out on a voyage of adventure.

During Lodge’s absence, his “Euphues Shadow, the Battaile of the Senses,” was published by his friend, Robert Greene. In his dedication to Viscount Fitzwalters he says—“It fortun’d that one M. Thomas Lodge, *who now is gone to sea with Mayster Candish*, had bestowed some serious labour in penning of a booke called Euphues Shadowe: and by his last let-

ters gave straight charge, that I should not only have the care for his sake of the impression thereof, but also *in his absence* to bestowe it on some man of Honor, whose worthie vertues might bee a patronage to his worke."<sup>1</sup> Greene himself, in 1587, had published "*Euphues his censure to Philautus*," which no doubt suggested the title of two of Lodge's tracts; but both writers were preceded by John Lilly, "*the Euphuist*." Greene also prefixed to Lodge's tract the following address:—

"To the Gentlemen Readers. Health.

"Gentlemen, after many of mine owne labours that you have courteouslie accepted, I present you with *Euphues shadowe*, in the behalfe of my absent friend, M. Thomas Lodge, who at his departure to sea upon a long voyage, was willing, as a generall farewell to all courteous Gentlemen, to leave this his worke to the view, which if you grace with your favours eyther as his affected meaning, or the worthe of the worke requires, not onely I for him shall rest yours, but what laboures his Sea studies affords, shall be, I dare promise, offered to your sight, to gratifie your courtesies, and his pen, as himselfe, every waye yours for ever. Farewell.

"Yours to command, *Robert Greene*."

As Candish's last voyage proved most calamitous, a short notice of both expeditions may be added, although Lodge's share in the latter has not been defined. In Hakluyt's collection<sup>2</sup> we find a journal of "the admirable and prosperous Voyage of the worshippfull Master Thomas Candish, of Trimley,

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Dyce has inserted this dedication in his excellent collected edition of Greene's Dramatic and Poetical Works, vol. i. p. i. A specimen of the tract itself was communicated by Haslewood to the British Bibliographer, vol. i., p. 558-560.

<sup>2</sup> "Written by Master Francis Petty, lately of Ey, in Suffolk, a gentleman employed in the same action."—Vol. iii., p. 803: Edit. 1599.



in the Countie of Suffolke, Esquire, into the South Sea, and from thence round about the circumference of the whole Earth." He sailed from Plymouth on the 21st of July, 1586, and returned to the same port on the 9th of September, 1588, when he addressed a letter to Lord Hunsdon, Lord Chamberlain, humbly desiring his honour to make known to her Majesty the successful issue of this voyage, having "either discovered or brought certain intelligence of all the rich places of the World that ever were known or discovered by any Christian." Of the islands of the Philippines, in particular, he says—"the statelnesse and riches I feare to make report of, least I should not be credited." Purchase says: "I have heard that all his sailes, at his returne in the river [Thames], were silke."

Heywood, in his "Great Britaines Troy," 1609, gives a summary of memorable English events, among which he includes this voyage with "his two ships the Desire and Content."

"——— Noble Candish, furnisht well,  
In two good ships, well man'd and builded late,  
Compast the World."—(Page 465.)

In reference to this voyage of Candish, or Caven-dish, Southey says—"This adventurer having wasted his paternal inheritance, thought to repair a ruined fortune by privateering; and during a former voyage, in which he sailed round the world, the ravages which he committed were such as long left a stain upon the character of the English nation."<sup>1</sup> The

<sup>1</sup> Southey's History of Brazil, vol. i., p. 359.

success was however sufficient to induce another expedition to be undertaken upon a greater scale; its chief destination was for the South Sea, the Philippines, and the coast of China. It consisted of "three tall ships and two barks," and sailed from Plymouth on the 26th of August, 1591. The vessels reached the coast of Brazil on the 15th of December: Candish ordered two of his squadron to attack the town of Santos: the people were surprised at mass, but by negligence they were allowed to escape, carrying with them their stores of provisions; and the want of fresh supplies for storing their vessels was the commencement of a series of disasters. They remained at Santos till the 22nd of January; but, "through extreme want of victuals not being able any longer to live there," they shaped their course towards the Straits of Magellan. A spirit of dissension and mutiny sprung up; and, being assailed by furious storms, some of the vessels were separated, the men enduring great extremities from "cursed famine and miserable cold." Candish having left his own vessel, the galeon *Leycester*, in which he sailed as Admiral, he came aboard the *Desire*, and "told our captain, Mr. John Davis, of all his extremities, and spake most hardly of his company, *and of divers gentlemen that were with him*, proposing no more to goe aboard his own ship, but to stay in the *Desire*. We all sorrowed to heare such hard speeches of our good friends; *but having spoken with the Gentlemen of the Galeon, wee found them faithful, honest, and resolute in proceeding*, although it pleased our Generall otherwise to conceive of them."

The narrative from which these words are taken is preserved by Hakluyt,<sup>1</sup> who styles the writer, Mr. John Jane. "a man of good observation." It is undoubtedly a partial statement, favourable to Davis and his men; but it sufficiently explains Lōdge's own words. in 1596, where he says: "being at sea with M. Candish (*whose memorie, if I repent not, I lament not*)."<sup>2</sup> The latter part of Jane's narrative refers exclusively to the ship *Desire*, after its separation from the *Galeon*, (to which Candish had been persuaded to return) and of their extreme sufferings from famine and disease, until they reached the coast of Ireland, on the 11th of June, 1593, with their number reduced to sixteen persons, of whom only five were able to move. On his return homewards, Candish appears to have died of a broken heart, rather than any defined disease. A short time before his death he addressed a long letter to his executor, Sir Tristram Gorges, so filled with "passionate speeches," containing accusations of treachery, cowardice, and neglect of orders, against Davis and the captain of the *Roebuck*. ("the most cowardly villain ever born of a woman") and nearly all concerned, that Purchase, when he gave it to the world, upwards of thirty years later, says he had to omit some passages. From these two accounts, confirmed by that of Anthony Knyvet, also contained in Purchase's collection, it appears that Candish had lost the confidence of all the persons under his command, by mismanagement, indecision, and cruelty. But it is not neces-

<sup>1</sup> Vol. iii., p. 842.

<sup>2</sup> See page xlii.

sary to give any further details of what Purchase not inaptly calls "that dismall and fatall voyage of Master Thomas Candish, in which he consummated his earthly peregrinations."<sup>1</sup>

Knyvet says, for two months they remained at Santos, and that Master Cocke, captain of the Roebuck, who "went Captain of all the company that went ashore, favoured me very much. and commanded me to take a Friars cell to lodge in, *in the Colledge of Jesus, where he himself lodged with many Captaines and young Gentlemen.*" Here it was, as Lodge has informed us, "it was his chance, in the Library of the Jesuits, in Sanctum, to find a historie in the Spanish tongue," of which he professes to give a translation in his "*Margarite of America,*" printed in 1596; a work written in a ship, in the midst of "souldiers of good reckning," but with greater "will to get a dinner," than "to win fame;" and in such tempestuous weather, that it seemed more probable "the fish should eate me writing, and my paper written, then Fame should know me, Hope should acquaint her with me, or anie but Miserie should heare mine ending."

Upon Lodge's return to England, probably at the close of 1592, or the commencement of the following year, he resumed his literary occupations. During his absence, his friend, Robert Greene, was cut off, it is said, "after a surfeit of pickled herring and Rhenish

<sup>1</sup> Since the above was written, I find a very full account of Candish's two expeditions in Dr. Kippis's edition of the *Biographia Britannica*, (*art.* Cavendish) vol. iii., p. 316.

wine." He died on the 3rd of September, 1592, when probably not above thirty-three years of age. They had jointly written a play, "A Looking Glasse for London and England," which was brought on the stage, and performed by Lord Strange's servants, on the 8th and 27th of March, 1591-2, and again, on the 19th of April and 7th of June, 1592.<sup>1</sup> Greene, who was a prolific writer, both in prose and verse, closed his irregular career in a repentant spirit; and soon after his death there appeared a posthumous tract, entitled "A Groatsworth of Wit bought with a million of Repentance." This well known tract concludes with an earnest address "To those Gentlemen his quondam acquaintance, that spend their wits in making Playes, R. G. wisheth a better exercise, and wisdom to prevent his extremities." He first addresses himself to Marlowe, then to Lodge, under the name of young Juvenal, and with them joins George Peele, as his three chief companions. The melancholy fate of Marlowe, in June, 1593, is well known; and the death of Peele, a few years later, is also attributed to his depraved course of life. After his exhortation to Marlowe, "thou famous gracer of Tragedians," Greene proceeds:—

"With thee I joyne young Juvenal, [Thomas Lodge] that biting Satyrist, that lastly with mee together writ a Comedie. Sweet Boy, might I advise thee, be advised, and get not many enemies by bitter words. Inveighe against vaine men. for thou canst doe it, no man better; no man so well. thou hast a liberty to reprove all, and to name none: for one being spoken to, all are offended; none being blamed, no man is injured

<sup>1</sup> Henslowe's Diary, edited by J. P. Collier, Esq., for the Shakespeare Society, pp. 23, 25, 28. London, 1845, 8vo.

Stop shallow water still running, it will rage; tread on a worrne, and it will turne; then blame not Schollers who are vexed with sharpe and bitter lines, if they reprove thy too much liberty of reproofe."

In 1593, Lodge published his "*Phillis*, honoured with Pastorall Sonnets, Elegies, and amorous delights." It would appear that the author originally intended to have placed it under the patronage of "a great *Mecænas*," whom he styled, in his Induction, "the Ascrean Poet of our time;" but the dedication, from some cause, was cancelled, and the following substituted, to a "*shee Mecænas*," as "the true Octavia of our time."<sup>1</sup>

"To the Right worthy and noble Lady, the Countesse of Shrewsbury.

"I have adventured, most noble Lady, with the wrastlers of Olympia, tho not to win, yet to worke for the Garland: the judgement of my industry relyeth on your Ladishippe, who have both authoritie to convict, and knowledge to commend. I have chosen you, Madam, among many, to be the Sovereigne and shee *Mecænas* of my toyle, because I am assured that the great report of your learning and vertue (wherewith as yet it hath not pleased you to dignifie the world) must even now be exemplified in mee, who dare promise as much in affection, as any other can performe in perfection. May it please you to looke and like of homlie *Phillis* in her Country caroling, and to countenance her poore and affectionate Sheepheard, who promiseth under the onely encouragement of so noble a Lady, to employ all his best deseignes, life, and studies, to your good lyking.

"Your Ladiships most humble to commaund,

"*Tho: Lodge.*"

It will be observed that Lodge in all his dedications was much more liberal in promises to his several patrons, than he ever intended, or at least succeeded in performing.

<sup>1</sup> See Catalogue of Lodge's works, page lxxvi.

In the same year, he published "The Life and Death of William Longbeard, accompanied with many other most pleasant and prettie Histories." This tract in all probability furnished Drayton with the subject of a play, called William Longsword, or Longbeard, for which he received two payments from Henslowe in 1598-9.<sup>1</sup>

"To the Right worshipfull Sir William Web, Knight, Tho. Lodge wisheth increase of Worship in this life, and eternall blessing in the life to come.

"The general care which you have had in the fatherlie governement of the Cittie, and the worthy forwardnesse in establishing al vertuous counceils for common good, have made me presumptuous beyond my custome in the behalfe of my contreyemen to present your Worship with this short model of Histories, wherein you maye both find matter worthy the reading and circumstances of deepe consideration. I make you patron of these rare things, who are the very pattern and true *Mecenas* of vertue, seeking by your wisdom to establish the estate of poore Cittizens sonnes decaied, and renew that by your care, which they have loste through unadvisednesse. Accept, I beseech you, my poore talent, or my widdowes mite, with as great devotion as the hart can imagine or opinion conceit, and command me who during life am your Worships most bounden.

"*Tho. Lodge.*"

In 1594 appeared the only two dramatic works with which Lodge's name is connected; namely, "A Looking Glasse for London and England," and "The Wounds of the Civil War;" both of which are already alluded to as compositions of an earlier date than that of publication.

In 1595, he published "A Fig for Momus; containing pleasant varietie, included in Satyres, Eclogues,

<sup>1</sup> See Mr. Collier's notes, in Henslowe's Diary, pp. 95, 142.

and Epistles." The author, in an address "To the Gentlemen Readers whatsoever," says—

"Gentlemen, I know you wonder, that having so long time kept silence, I salute the world with so peremptorie a title. But if thou consider the reasons before you enter into mislike, you shall be satisfied, and I excused. I entitle my book *A fig for Momus*, not in contempt of the learned, for I honor them; not in disdaine of the wel-minded, because they cherish science; but in despiht of the detractor, who having no learning to judge, wanteth no libertie to reprove . . . . Under this title I have thought good to include Satyres, Eclogues, and Epistles: first, by reason that I studie to delight with varietie: next, because I could write in that forme, *wherein no man might challenge me with servile imitation* (wherewith heretofore I have been unjustlie taxed). My Satyres (to speake truth) are by pleasures rather placed here to prepare and trie the eare, than to feede it: because if they passe well, the whole Centon of them, alreadie in my hands, shall sodainly be published.

"In them, (under the names of certaine Romaines) where I reprehend vice, I purposely wrong no man, but observe the lawes of that kind of poeme. If any repine thereat, I am sure he is guiltie, because he bewrayeth himself. For my *Eclogues*, I commend them to men of approved judgement, whose margents though I fill not with quotations, yet their matter and handling will show my diligence. For my *Epistles*, they are in that kind, wherein no Englishmen of our time hath publicquely written; which if they please, may draw on more, if displease, have their privilege by authoritie."

This address is preceded by the following dedication:—

"To the Right Honorable and thrice renowned Lord, William Earle of Darbie, T. L., his most humble and devoted servant, wisketh all health and happiness.

"My honoured good Lord, having resolved with my selfe to publish certaine my Poems, and knowing them subject to much prejudice, except they were graced with some noble and worthie patron, I have followed the example of Metabo, king of the Volschi, who, desirous to deliver his onelie daughter from all perill and danger, consecrated and dedicated her to the sister of the Sunne. So I, no lesse carefull of my labors then the king of his Camilla, with deliberate and advised judgement, wholly



devote and offer up my poems to your favour and protection: who being the true Mæcenas of the Muses, and judicall in their exercises, are of power to relieve my weaknes by your worthines, and to priviledge me from envie, though she were prest to devoure me. If, midst your generall favour to all desert, your honour vouchsafe this particular benefite to my industrie, no day, or time, (as Tully counsaileth) shall define the memorie of your benefits, but as your noble Father, in mine infancie, with his own hands incorporated me into your house, so in this my retired age and studie, my labour, lincs, and whole life, shall be employed to doe you honour and service.

Your Lordships most bounden in all humilitie,

*“ Thomas Lodge.”*

In 1596, Lodge published at least three distinct tracts in prose, under affected titles. The first is “The Divel Conjured.” It is in the form of a conference betwixt the virtuous and solitary hermit, Anthony, and three worldly men, Metrodorus the Tyrian, Astaris of Cappadocia, and Frumentarius the Indian. The author seems to have entertained no light opinion of its merits: “Sith” (he says to the Reader) “you have long time drawn the weeds of my wit, and fed yourselves with the cockle of my conceits, I have at last made you gleaners of my harvest, and partakers of my experience;” with much more to the same effect. It has this dedication:—

“To the Right Honorable and learned Sir John Fortescue, knight, Chancellor of the Exchequer, Master of the Wardrobe, and one of hir Majesties right Honorable Privie Counsell.

“Right Honourable, allured by your Wisdome, and animated by your authority. the one expressed by your generall and matchlesse knowledge in the purer tounge, and the perfit use and felicitie of your readings; the other in your execution in affairs; policie in counsaile; place in judgment; and credit with her most Roiall Majestie: I have (more audacious then wise) presumed to submit this weak labor of mine to your judgement to determine on, and authoritie to countenance for what

your judgement shall winke at, the world will applaud. and what your authority shall countenance, ignorant detraction dare not misconster; so then, shadowed under the strong shield of your favour. I neither suspect my cause, nor feare mine enemies, wax afraid of the curious, or abashed at the envious. Accept, therefore, most noble Lord, this poore wreck of my wit, that hath no hope of eternitie but by your grace, nor defence from misreports but your name; neither any more felicitie then your allowance, and think of the writer as of him that giveth what his rich will can for those favours which his weake power may never requite. Thus wishing your Honour that place in heaven which your charitie and pietie to all the learned justly deserveth on earth. I humbly take my leave, this fifteenth of April. 1596.

“Your Honors most bounden Orator.

“T. L.”

The second tract, “A Margarite of America,” has already been noticed, as it professes to be a translation from a Spanish work which Lodge discovered in the Jesuits’ library at Santos, in Brazil, in 1592. Both the dedication and the address contain biographical information, and may here be quoted.

“To the noble, learned, and vertuous Ladie. the Ladie Russell, T. L. wisheth affluence on earth, and felicitie in heaven.

“Madam, your deep and considerate judgement, your admired honor, and happy readings, have drawne me to present this labor of mine to your gracious hands and favourable patronage: wherein, though you shall find nothing to admire, yet doubt I not but you may meet many things that deserve cherishing. Touching the subject, though of it selfe it seeme historicall, yet if it please you, like our English Sappho. to look into that which I have slenderly written, I doubt not but that your memory shal acquaint you with my diligence, and my diligence may deserve your applause. Touching the place where I wrote this, it was in those Straits christned by Magelan; in which place to the southward many wondrous Isles, many strange fishes, many monstrous Patagones, withdrew my senses: briefly, many bitter and extreme frosts at Midsummer continually clothe and clad the discomfortable mountaines; so that there was great wonder in the place wherein I writ this, so likewise

might it be marvelled. that in such scantie fare, such causes of feare, so mightie discouragement, and many crosses, I should deserve to eternize any thing. Yet what I have done (good Madame) judge and hope this felicitie from my pen, that whilst the memorie thereof shal live in any age, your charitie, learning, nobilitie, and vertues, shall be eternized. Oppian, writing to Theodosius, was as famous by the person to whome hee consecrated his study, as fortunate in his labours, which as yet are not mastered by oblivion: so hope I (Madame) on the wing of your sacred name to be borne to the temple of Eternitie, where though envie barke at me, the Muses shall cherish, love, and happie me. Thus hoping your Ladieship will supply my boldnesse with your bountie and affabilitie, I humbly kisse your most delicate handes, shutting up my English duety under an Italian copie of humanitie and curtesie. From my house, this 4 of Maie. 1596.

“Your Honors in all zeale,  
“*T. Lodge.*”

“To the Gentlemen Readers.

“Gentlemen, I am prevented in mine own hopes, in seconding thrifts forward desires. Som foure yeres since, being at sea with M. Candish, (whose memorie if I repent not, I lament not) it was my chance in the librarie of the Jesuits in Sanctum to find this historie in the Spanish tongue, which as I read delighted me, and delighting me, wonne me, and winning me, made me write. The place where I began my worke, was a ship, where many souldiers of good reckning finding disturbed stomackes, it can not but stand with your discretions to pardon an undiscreeete and unstaid penne, for hands may vary where stomacks miscary. The time I wrote in was when I had rather will to get my dinner, then to win my fame. The order I wrote in was past order, where I rather observed mens hands lest they should strike me, then curious reason of men to condemne mee. In a worde, I wrote under hope rather the fish should eate me writing, and my paper written, then fame should know me, hope should acquaint her with me, or anie but miserie should heare mine ending. For those faults (Gentlemen) escaped by the Printer, in not being acquainted with my hand, and the booke printed in my absence, I must crave you with favour to judge of, and with your wonted curtesies to correct: and according to Ecclesiasticall law, give us on our own confession alsolution: if you will not, remember this, that a countrie lasse for Ladies, may tell them they curle too much; and for Gentlemen, that they are unfashioned by their fashions. To be short, who lives in this

world, let him wincke in the world; for either men proove too blinde in seeing too litle, or too presumptuous in condemning that they shoulde not.

"Yours, *T. Lodge.*"

The third tract, also in prose. with translations into verse of numerous short quotations from the Latin poets, is more of a satirical cast. The title, "Wits Miserie, and the Worlds Madnesse: discovering the Devils Incarnat of this Age." The dedication is as follows:—

"To the right worshipping brothers, Nicholas Hare of Stow Bardolfe Esquire and Recorder of Lyn, Hugh Hare Esquire Bencher of the Inward Temple, and John Hare Esquire Clarke of her Majesties Court of Wards, Tho. Lodge. Gentleman, wiseth health. wealth. and heaven.

"Right Worshippingfull, understanding how like Scyllas the Scythians fagot you are all so tied together with the brotherly bond of amitie, that no disunion or dissention can depart you: in memorie of your rare and united loves, (the like whereof this barren age scarcely affordeth any) and in regard you are three ornaments in this Honourable Citie, whereof I esteeme my self a member. to consecrate your vertues with my fame. I have boldlie made you the patrons of this my worke, which both becommeth your gravities to read, and your devotions to thinke upon. Accept (I most humble intreat you) the deserving kindness from a gentleman, whose labours and curtesies being well construed, shall embolden him hereafter to adventure on farre greater. Till when, I most humble commend me. Written in hast, from my house at Low-Laiton, this 5 of November, 1596.

"Your Worshipps in all kindnesse.

"T. L."

Low Layton, from whence this dedication is dated. is in the hundred of Becontree, in Essex, about six miles to the north-east of London. The messuage or farm of Malmaynes. in the same hundred,<sup>1</sup> was originally given by Lady Lodge in her will to her son

<sup>1</sup> Inquisit. 26 Eliz, June 25, ap Morant's Essex. vol. 1. p. 4.

Thomas, but the gift is set aside in a codicil, and certain lands on the borders of Suffolk and Essex, at or near Nayland, bequeathed to him instead. Sir Thomas Lodge's country house, as may be gathered from his wife's will, was in the parish of West Ham, in Essex, near Low Layton.<sup>1</sup>

In the last mentioned tract, there is a remarkable passage containing references to some of his contemporary poets. It occurs, strangely enough, in the chapter called "Of the great Devill Belzebub, and what monstrous and strange Devils he hath bred in our age."

"One of these Devils named *Hate-Vertue*: you shall know him by this, he is a roule lubber, his tongue tipt with lying, his heart steeld against charity, he walks for the most part in black, under colour of gravity, and looks as pale as the Visard of the Ghost which cried so miserably at the Theater, like an Oister wife, HAMLET, REVENGE:..... His custem is to preferre a foole to credite, to despight a wise man, and no Poet lives by him that hath not a flout of him. Let him spie a man of wit in a Taverne, he is an arrant drunckard; or but heare that he parted a fray, he is a hairebraind quarreller: let a Scholler write, Tush, (saith he) I like not these common fellowes. let him write well, he hath stollen it out of some note book: let him translate, Tut, it is not his owne: let him be named for preferment, he is insufficient, because poore: no man shall rise in his world, except to feed his envy; no man can continue in his friendship, who hateth all men. Divine wits, for many things as sufficient as all antiquity, (I speake it not on slight surmise, but considerate judgement) to you belongs the death that doth nourish this poison: to you the paine, that endure the reproofe. *Lilly*, the famous for facility in discourse: *Spencer*, best read in ancient Poetry: *Daniel*, choise in word and invention: *Draiton*, diligent and formall: *Th Nash*, true English Aretine. All you unnamed professors, or friends of Poetry, (but by me inwardly honoured) knit your industries in private, to unite your fames in publicke: let the strong stay up the weake, and the weake march under conduct of the strong, and all so imbattell your

<sup>1</sup> The registers of the parish of West Ham, applicable to the poet's period, are not preserved.—See "Lyson's Environs." *art.* West Ham.

selves, that hate of vertue may not imbase you. But if besotted with foolish vain-glory, emulation, and contempt. you fall to neglect one another, *Quod Deus omen avertat*. Doubtless it will be as infamous a thing shortly, to present any book whatsoever learned to any Maecenas in England, as it is to be headsman in any free citie in Germanie:

“*Claudite jam rivos, pueri, sat prata bibent.*”

“The meane hath discoursed, let the mighty prevent the mischief. But to our Devill, by his leave, we cannot yet shake him off:” &c.

Besides these tracts of 1596. Mr. Collier has assigned to Lodge another printed in the same year, considering it to be a Palinode, or recantation by the author of his previous writings. as “the foule fore-passed progenie of my thoughts, in the night of mine error,” and to have been suggested by. and written in imitation of Nash’s “Christ’s Teares over Jerusalem.” It bears this title: “Prosopopeia. containing the Teares of the holy, blessed, and sanctified Marie. the Mother of God;” and is dedicated “To the Right noble, the Mother Countesse, Countesse of Darby. and the vertuous and devout Countesse of Cumberland.” I have not included it in the list of Lodge’s works. being persuaded that it ought to be ascribed to some other author. Except in the dedication, there is no resemblance to Lodge’s style; and, if he could have written these words—“Now at last, after I have wounded the world with too much surfeit of vanitie, I maye bee by the true Helizeus, cleansed from the leprosie of my lewd lines, and beeing washed in the Jordan of grace, imploy my labour to the comfort of the faithfull”—it would at least have shown little of a repentant spirit, to have produced within a few months his “Discovery of the Devils Incarnate of this Age.”

But besides this, if the copy described by Mr. Collier<sup>1</sup> has the initials "T. L." others, both to the Dedication and the Address to the Reader, have (and possibly more correctly) "L. T."<sup>2</sup> If one conjecture, therefore, may be allowed to take the place of another, it may be suggested, that this tract should rather be attributed to Laurence Twyne, gentleman, one of a literary family, who, in 1576, "gathered into English" "The Patterne of painefull Adventures," or the History of Apollonius, Prince of Tyre, from which Shakespeare derived many of the incidents in his "Pericles."<sup>3</sup> Anthony Wood says, of John Twyne, who died in 1581, that his eldest son "was Lawrence Twyne, who was fellow of All Souls College, and Bachelor of the Civil Law, an ingenious poet of his time, as several copies of verses set before books, written in commendation of their respective authors, do sufficiently attest. He was a married man, lived at Hardacre, in Kent, and left issue behind him, at his death, several children."<sup>4</sup>

At this period, a change seems to have taken place in the course of Lodge's life. His name is no longer connected with works of a poetical or miscellaneous literature; and he ceased to designate himself of Lincoln's Inn. Some of his difficulties and distresses

<sup>1</sup> "The Shakespeare Society's Papers," vol. ii., p. 156. From Mr. Collier's list of Lodge's works, in "The Gentleman's Magazine," it appears that the copy he described is preserved in the Lambeth Library.

<sup>2</sup> Herbert's Ames, vol. ii., p. 1200.—One of these copies is among the Hawthornden books in the College University, Edinburgh.

<sup>3</sup> Reprinted by Mr. Collier in the first volume of "Shakespeare's Library."

<sup>4</sup> *Athenæ Oxonienses*, vol. i., p. 464. Bliss's edit.

have reached us through Henslowe's papers at Dulwich, and the industry of Mr. Collier.<sup>1</sup> It appears that about the year 1588 he had contracted a debt to a tailor in the Strand, named Richard Topping, and that Henslowe (not to lose Lodge's services by his imprisonment in the Clink, for non-payment thereof) had become bail for his appearance "for meer good will, being somewhat acquainted with him." Lodge, however, as is asserted, went beyond seas, leaving Henslowe liable for the debt. Topping accordingly sent in his claim to Henslowe, who declined paying, and pleaded his privilege from arrest as one of the grooms of the Queen's (Elizabeth's) chamber. This was in, or before, 1596. and the amount was "seven pounds, odd money, due for this eight years."

The defrauded tailor petitioned Lord Hunsdon (the Lord Chamberlain) to interfere, who called on Henslowe to give his answer to Topping's accusation. Henslowe replied that he was clear by law from the payment of the debt, as Lodge had removed the action by habeas corpus to the King's Bench, and there (by the acceptance of the Judges) put in a new trial; that he was unwilling to pay another man's debt; and that it was malice against him that suggested the complaint to the Lord Chamberlain, for Topping knew "where Lodge, the principal, is, and how he may easily come by him."

Other petitions on the part of Topping and Henslowe are preserved, but the issue of the affair is unknown. Topping complains that Henslowe protested

<sup>1</sup> Collier's "Memoirs of Allen," pp. 39-46.



he would spend one hundred pounds rather than pay the debt. The truth seems likely that Lodge was skulking in this country—that Topping knew where to find him, but preferred proceeding against Henslowe than against a man of straw like Lodge.

He finally devoted himself to the medical profession; and in prosecuting his studies, there can be no doubt he went abroad, to benefit by the instructions of some of the eminent physicians and anatomists who then flourished in France and Italy. According to Anthony Wood, he took his degree of Doctor of Physic at Avignon. This must have been previously to the year 1600. In the well-known poetical common-place book, entitled “England’s Parnassus, or the Choycest Flowers of our Moderne Poets,” printed in that year, there are numerous passages, under the common heads, Ambition, Content, Court, Custome, Death, Folly, Fortune, Friends, &c., with his name affixed; and these, were it worth the pains, might probably all be traced as extracts from his printed works. The first extract, Ambition, consists of these two lines:—

“Who fight for crownes, set life, set all to[o] light:  
Who aim so high, wil die or hit the white.

“*Doctor Lodge.*”

In those that follow, the signature is usually in the more abridged form, “D. Lodge:” thus—

“As when a troupe of harvest thrifty swaines,  
With cutting sythes Earth’s ripened riches mowes,  
Whole sheaves of corne lye strowen upon the plaines,  
So fall the Scots before the conquering foes.

“*D. Lodge.*”

Both these extracts occur in "The Complaint of Elstred," which is annexed to his "Phillis honoured with Pastorall Sonnets," &c., in 1593. This circumstance of so naming him is of importance, not only for ascertaining the date of his medical degree, but also for removing any doubts that might be entertained in our identifying Doctor Lodge with the "Souldier poet and Romance writer."<sup>1</sup> In the earlier publication, "The Phoenix Nest, by R. S., of the Inner Temple," London, 1592, among the "Excellent Ditties of divers kinds and rare invention, written by sundry Gentlemen," there are sixteen poems with Lodge's initials, "T. L., Gent," which were probably contributed to this poetical miscellany by the author, although some of them, at least, occur in Lodge's previous publications.

Upon Lodge's return from the Continent, he settled in London, and continued to practise as a physician with greater reputation than success. On the 25th of October, 1602, "Thomas Lodge, Doctor of Physic of the University of Avenion," was incorporated in the University of Oxford.<sup>2</sup> During the same year, he published his translation of the Works of Josephus, from the Latin and French versions. This volume was partially superseded by L'Estrange's later version, and wholly by Whiston's translation; but it is singular that no copy of Lodge's translation is to be found in the Bodleian, British Museum, or in any of the chief public libraries either in England or Scotland,

<sup>1</sup> See also on this subject, Collier's *Life of Alleyn*, p. 39.

<sup>2</sup> Wood's *Fasti Oxon.*, by Bliss, vol. i, p. 295.

although it actually passed through seven editions between 1602 and 1670, and can only be considered of small pecuniary value. The dedication to Lord Howard of Effingham is as follows:<sup>2</sup>—

“ To the Right Honourable Father of Arts and Arms, Charles Lord Howard, Baron of Effingham, Earl of Nottingham, High Constable of the Castle and Forrest of Windsor, Lord Chief Justice in Eyre in England, Governour and Captain Generall of all her Majesties Forts and Castles, High Admirall of England and Ireland, Lieutenant of Sussex and Surrey, Knight of the most Noble Order of the Garter, and one of her Majesties most Honourable privy Councell.

“ Right Honourable, there is a saying in *Zenophon* most worthy the citing and insight, that matters of worth and consequence are both to be committed and commended to their trust and protection who know the wight and value thereof, and both can and will defend the same by authority and Reason. For this cause and upon this ground I have chosen your honour out for a most noble Patron of this most famous and accomplished History of the Jews: which for dignity and antiquity of the subject, the elegancie and purity of the style, the choice propriety of copious words, the gravity and variety of sentences, the alterations and memorable events, and lastly, for the birth and dignity of the Author, requireth a spirit of no less wisdom, courage, and nobility, than your self, who have power to defend and knowledge to discern the worth thereof. Vouchsafe therefore to level the eye of your esteem upon the Center of this happy history: and as Themistocles was animated to noble actions by beholding Miltiades trophies, and Alexander, in seeing Achilles tombe, did grievously sigh with an honourable emulation, so let the zeal, magnanimity, and admirable constancy which every where affronteth you in this Book (and ravisheth the best minds from the boundless troubles of this world, and draweth them into the contemplation of true perfection) so settle your honourable love and affection to emulate the same, that as for glory in Arms, so for preserving and protecting Arts, you may outstrip your competitors and amaze too curious

<sup>1</sup> The original edition not being at present accessible, nor, indeed, a copy of any other, I have been indebted to the kindness of Thomas Jones, Esq., for a transcript of this dedication from the latest edition, 1670, preserved in Chetham's Library, Manchester.

expectation. And in mine opinion the time challengeth no less at your hands; for as your transcendent dignity and courage hath returned us an happy harvest in our expected and long possessed peace. as by your second care and diligence next under Sacred Majesty we all reap the fruit and felicity of blessed abundance; so by your example in reading and respecting both learning and the learned, you shall pull down that *Babel* which confused ignorance hath raised to overreach industry: yea, you shall strengthen the weakned ability of learning, which (alas the while) is now-adayes like a commodity without request. scarce saleable by the hands of a cunning Broker. Nothing is more worth money and less in request; onely the world's blind creatures, (as *S. Hierom* termeth them) the unlettered, take delight in their errors, whose writings (as *Pitarch* speaketh of *Aristophanes* Poem) are written for no moderate man's pleasure. Let therefore your upright estimation of this work (most noble Earl) awaken the dead devotion of such as contemn Arts: and let no such corrupt drones (as made sale of sinfull thoughts for good merchandise) buz about the hive of true science: but as Emperours, Kings, and Princes, have ever in their Greek, Italian, and French, with a respective acceptance and bountifull hand, entertained this history; so let this translation of Josephus, which courteth you now in English, be accepted at your hands, and countenanced by your Honour: for whose unconfin'd felicity both I and other of my name have ever prayed, and will never cease to study.

“Your Honours unfainedly devoted.

“THOMAS LODGE.”

In the year 1603, when the plague was raging in London, Dr. Lodge published a Treatise of the Plague, dedicated to the Lord Mayor and Aldermen of London, stating that he was “bred and brought up in the city.”

“To the Right Honorable the Lord Maior, and to the Right Worshipfull the Aldermen and Sheriffes of the Citie of London.

“Two causes (Right Honourable and Worshipfull) have moved me to publish this present treatise of the Plague: one is the duetie and love which I owe to this Citie, (wherein I was bred and brought up) and for which (as the Orator Cicero in his Offices, and the Philosopher Plato in his Common-weale do testifie) every good man ought to employ his uttermost

indeavour. The next is a charitable remorse I have conceived to see my poore country-men and afflicted brethren turmoiled and attainted with the greivous sicknes of the Plague. and left without guide or counsaile how to succour themselves in extremitie: for where the infestation most rageth, there povertie raigneth among the Commons, which having no supplies to satisfie the greedie desire of those that should attend them, are for the most part left desolate, and die without reliefe. For their sakes have I undertaken this province to write of the Plague, to the end that with a little charge a poore man may have instructions by a little reading both to know and to cure all the evil accidents that attend the diseases. It resteth in your Honor and those your right Worshipfull assistance, to have especial care that this charitable intent of mine may be furthered by your discret orders, in such manner that these bookes may be dispersed among those families that are visited, to the end they may finde comfort and cure by their owne hands and diligence. This is the only reward I require, as Almighty God knoweth, to whose mercy I commend you. From my house in Warwicke Lane, this 19 of August.

“Your Honors and Worships in all affection,

“*Thomas Lodge.*”

The address “To the courteous and friendly Reader” commences thus:—

“Thou maist wonder, perhaps, (Gentle Reader) why amongst so many excellent and learned Phisitians of this Citie, I alone have undertaken to answere the expectation of the multitude, and to bear the heavy burthen of contentious Critiques and depravers.....There have beene lately certaine Thessali that have bestowed a new Printed livery on every olde post, and promised such myracles, as if they held the vaine of destiny in their own hands, and were able to make old Esau young againe. Amongst these, one by fortune is become my neighbour, who because at the first he underwrit not his billes, every one that red them came flocking to me, conjuring me by great profers and perswasions to store them with my promised preservative, and relieve their sicke with my cordiall waters. These importunities of theirs made mee both agreed and amazed; agreed because of that loathsome imposition which was laid upon me, to make myself vendible, which is unworthy a liberall and gentle minde, much more ill beeming a phisitian and philosopher, who ought not to prostitute so sacred a profession so abjectly, but be a contemner of base and servile desire of money.” &c.

I subjoin the conclusion :—

“ Thus committing you to him on whose mercy I depend. I take my leave of thee, Gentle Reader, desiring no other reward at thy hands but a few devout prayers for me, which I will pay thee againe with double usury whilst God lendeth me life. Vale.

“ Thine in all friendship. THOMAS LODGE.”

It is worthy of notice that Heywood, in 1609, mentions Lodge as one of the eminent physicians of the day.

“ As famous Butler, Pady, Turner, Pea,  
Atkinson, Lyster, LODGE, who still survive.  
Besides these English Gallens,” &c.

A translation of the Works of Seneca, by Dr. Lodge, was published in 1614. It passed through two subsequent impressions, and still remains the only English version. In the earliest edition there is a dedication in Latin to the Lord Chancellor Ellesmere.<sup>2</sup>

Though the name of Lodge is not found in Henslowe's account-book, yet it is known that he wrote, in conjunction with Greene, a play called “A Looking Glasse for London and England;” and that, in 1591, Henslowe drew Lodge's share from its performance. In the reply to Topping, to which I have already alluded, Henslowe states that he had become bail to Lodge from “having some knowledge and acquaintance of him as a player.”

The next notice of Lodge that has come down to

<sup>1</sup> “Troia Britanica: or Great Britaines Troy, a Poem divided into xvii severall Cantons, &c., written by Tho. Heywood.” p. 79. London. 1609, fol.

<sup>2</sup> Mr. Payne Collier has a copy which was presented by Lodge to Dekker.

us, is still connected with pecuniary difficulties. It is a memorandum in the Privy Council Registers, dated January 10. 1616. of "A passe for Tho. Lodge, Doctor of Physic. and Henry Sewell, gent., to travell into the Arch-Duke's Country, to recover such debts as are due unto them there, taking with them two servants. and to return agayne within five moneths." This was immediately after Henslowe's decease; and it is much more likely, as Mr. Collier observes, that Lodge quitted England to avoid process on the part of Alleyn, than that he went to receive debts due to himself abroad. Alleyn, as is known, arrested Lodge on his return, but with no better ascertained success than Topping.<sup>1</sup>

Of Lodge's subsequent history there are few memorials. In 1620. when he published a revised edition of his translation of Seneca, he describes his condition—"my business being great, and my distractions many." His former patron, Lord Ellesmere, being dead, he replaced the dedication of 1614 with the following:—

"To the most noble and my honourable good Lord, Thomas Earle of Suffolke.

"Right Honourable, it is not your Greatnesse that I admire, nor the vaine applause of the multitude, (which may bewitch men, but not perfect them) that makes mee name you Patron of these my Labours. I neither dedicate this famous Worke unto you for the benefits I hope, or the reputation I may get, or upon the errour of custome that pretends more than Nature intended. I will not flatter your Greatnesse in reckoning up your Titles, nor embrace your judgement, that can distinguish times, men, fortunes: both apparently as they seeme, and really as they are. It is your vertue, your goodnesse, your Noble nature, to which I consecrate my endeavours. your Honour (which is the reward of vertue). These, and

<sup>1</sup> Collier's Life of Alleyn, p. 39.

nought else, tye me to respect, reverence, and esteeme both your Noble selfe and your Honourable family, to whose services I have inseparably consecrated my best labours. In times past it was the custome of the greatest Monarchies to bestow famed Deities upon their mortall Emperours; of famous Cities to erect statues to their well deserving Senatours: of good Children to raise monuments in honour of their Parents. Yet whatsoever Monarchies have foolishly attempted, Cities have dedicated, Children have erected, their memories, times, place, and (we say) names are extinguished. If Antiquity performed any thing, it is either blased by flatterie, or concealed by feare.

"This my Present is a richer, more lasting, and happier Jewell: that in many ages, and thorow many fires and combustions, hath continued their fames to whome it was Dedicated, and shall make you live in the reading thereof, and my love prove signall and famous thereby, when haply your worthie deserts shall be obscured or detracted, or your greatest Titles buried in the bosome of Oblivion. Thus hoping that this poore Nestling of my Labour shall be as graciously accepted, as it is honestly and unfaindly intended, I commit your Honour and your whole Family to his protection, who onely searcheth mens hearts, and knoweth how unfaindly I respect both you, your Honour, and Family.

"Your Honours most devoted,

"*Thom. Lodge.*"

"To the Reader.

"Gentle Reader, I present thee once more with Senecaes Translation, if not so fully and exactly cleansed from his former misprisions and errors as I wish, yet I hope in such sort examined and perused, that the judicious Reader shall find lesse matter to accept against, and the indifferent, better light to understand him. My businesse being great, and my distractions many, the Author being seriously succinct, and full of Laconisme, no wonder if in some things my omissions may seeme such, as some whose judgement is mounted above the Epicycle of Mercurie, will find matter enough to carpe at, though not to condemne. Let me intreat this favour at thy hands, curteous Reader, to pretend this Translation to bee a Garden, wherein though thou maiest find many holesome herbes, goodly flowers, and rich medicines; yet can it not be but some weedes may rankly shoot out, which may smother or obscure the light and lustre of the better. Play the good Gardener. I pray thee, and pulling up the weedes, make thy profit of the flowers. If thou wilt correct, bee considerate before thou attempt, lest in pretending to roote out one, thou



commit many errors. What a Stoicke hath written, reade thou like a Christian. If any doubts entangle thy judgement, have recourse to the sacred Synod of learned and pious Divines: whose judgement will select thee out that which is for thy Soules profit, and dissuade thee from admitting that which may either deprave thy judgment, or corrupt thy Soule. The fruit I expect for my Labour at thy hands, is onely this, to interpret mine actions to the best, and to correct with thy pen that which other men lesse advised have omitted by over hastie labour. Farewell, and enjoy the fruits which I have planted for thy profit; which though these times may haply neglect, the future may both applaude and allow. Fare. Taine in all vertuous endeavour.

*"Thom. Lodge."*

This Epistle to the Reader is followed by another to the Translator: "To his learned, judicious, and honoured friend, MR. DOCTOR LODGE," which is subscribed—"Thus with 1620 Commendations unto you, this 15 of September, I rest, the unfained lover of your ingenious endeavours, W. R."

In the year 1622, he prefixed a commendatory Epistle to a small tract entitled "The Countesse of Lincolnes Nurserie. At Oxford, printed by John Lichfield and James Short, Printers to the famous University, 1622, 4to." The dedication "To the Right Honourable and approved vertuous La. Briget, Comtisse of Lincolne," is subscribed—"Your La. in the best and fastest love, Elizabeth Lincolne." In this she says, "I doe offer unto your La. the first worke of mine that ever came in print;" the purport of it was "The duty of Nursing due by Mothers to their own children." Lodge's address is sufficiently complimentary and pedantic.

"To the Courteous, chiefly most Christian Reader.

~The generall Consent of too many Mothers, in an unnaturall practise,

(most Christian Reader) hath caused one of the Noblest and Fairest hands in this land to set pen and paper. As ashamed to see her sex further degenerate, desirous for the glory thereof, and have all both rightly knowe and answer their kind, hath made Honour itselfe stoop to these paines, which now shee sends thee to peruse. Three things easily invite to read what to view is offred Eminency, or interest in the Author; Rarity in the handled matter; Brevity in the quicke despatch. These three meet in this won. The Author so Eminent in Honour, thou canst hardly be anciently honourable, and not be interested in her Honours acquaintance, scarcely not alliance. Next for the Rarenesse: a peculiar tract of this subject, I believe, is not in thine hands. Lastly, it's so briefe as I am perswaded, it smoothly gliding thee along in the reading, thy sorrow will be, it lands thee so soone. What may give satisfaction to a Reader, let me acquaint thee next, is here to be found. These are two things: Usefulnessse of the subject: Fulnes for the prosecution. If method and soundnesse can make full, this is full, what not alone confirmation ushering in the assertion, but refutation for ushering out objections can doe to making sound and through, this is such. The accomodation to these particulars (Gentle Reader) I leave to thyselfe, lest I become tedious whilst am honoring brevity. The pay, assure thyselfe, will bee larger then the promise. The wine much better then the bush. This one word, and Ile stand out of the gate, thou mayest see in. If Noble who readest, (likenesse is mother and nurse of liking) this comes from Nobility; approve the rather, and practise. If meaner, blush to deny what Honour becomes speaker to perswade to, president to lead the way to. And so I either humbly take my leave, or bid Farewell.

“Blest is the land where sons of Nobles raigne.  
 Blest is the land where Nobles teach their traine.  
 To Church for blisse Kings, Queenes should nurses be.  
 To State its blisse great dames babes nurse to see.  
 Go, then, great booke of Nursing, plead the cause:  
 Teach high'st, low'st, all, it's God's and Natures lawes.”

“This eminent Doctor.” (says Anthony Wood)  
 “who practised his faculty in Warwick Lane, in the beginning of King James the First's [reign], and afterwards in Lambert Hill, removed thence, a little before his last end, into the parish of St Mary Mag-

dalen, in Old Fish Street, London, where he made his last exit (of the plague, I think) in 1625, leaving then behind him a widow called Joan;<sup>1</sup> but where buried, unless in the church or yard there, I know not." Wood's information is as usual correct. Lodge died in the year 1625; and, on the 12th of October, in that year, administration of his effects was granted to "Jane relict of Thomas Lodge, M.D., of St. Mary Magdalen, Old Fish Street, London." His wife's maiden name is unknown; but Mr. Hunter has discovered that one Thomas Lodge, M.D., of the poet's time, married the widow of Solomon Aldred.<sup>2</sup>

In considering Lodge's literary character, it may be remarked that he belongs to a class of writers, the Greenes, Lylys, Marlowes, and Peeles, displaying poetical and dramatic genius, not indeed of the highest order, but from the versatility of their talents, and the early period in which they flourished, as the precursors of our greater English dramatists, not likely to be soon forgotten.

That Lodge may have written other works for the stage besides the two with which his name is associated, is highly probable, but no Henslowe of the time has preserved a record of such performances earlier than 1591. In "The Looking Glasse for London," he had as a joint author Robert Greene, but it would not be easy to distinguish their respective

<sup>1</sup> Wood's *Athenæ Oxon.*, vol. ii., p. 384.

<sup>2</sup> "New Illustrations of Shakespeare," i. 334, by Rev. Joseph Hunter. Lond., 1845. The existing registers of St. Mary Magdalen commence in 1664.

portions. In this play, the Scriptural history of Nineveh is applied to the city of London. and it contains a severe moral lecture on the abuses of the times, exhibiting, in a most incongruous manner, the effects and reprobating the crimes of murder, incest, bribery, usury, and drunkenness, which abounded in the ancient city. Lodge's historical play, "The Wounds of Civil War," is founded chiefly on the lives of Marius and Sylla, in Plutarch, and is written in a loftier strain, but is disfigured by some scenes of low buffoonery. Mr. Collier remarks, "we can hardly call it a work of genius, but unquestionably it required no common talent to produce it.....The characters of old Marius and of his younger rival are drawn with great force, spirit, and distinctness: a task the more difficult, because they resembled each other in the great leading features of ambition and cruelty." <sup>1</sup>

The miscellaneous prose writings of Lodge are more numerous, but, like those of his friend Greene, are not likely to attract much attention, except as containing frequent and curious illustrations of the state of manners; although written in a style too pedantic, they are not devoid of interest. His tale of Rosalynd has peculiar attractions, as having furnished Shakespeare with the incidents and most of the characters in "As You Like It."

His translations are not to be overlooked. To the revised edition of Seneca, as already stated, he prefixes a letter of commendation, by his friend, W. R.,

<sup>1</sup> Collier's Annals of the Stage, vol. iii., p. 215.

who has thus characterized the mode of translation adopted by Lodge:—

“Worthy Sir. Having perused your selected Translation of Seneca, I cannot but ingenuously approve it. Nor is my judgment single. More learned men confirm it..... You have uncovered the veile of that sacred Temple, and opened the mysteries thereof to everie eye, that before lay hidden (save to a few) in the maske of a forraine language. You are his profitable Tutor, and have instructed him to walke and talke in perfect English. If his matter held not still the Roman Majestie, I should mistake him one of ours, he delivers his mind so significantly and fitly. Surely, had hee chose any other tongue to write in, my affection thinkes it had beene English: and in English, as you have taught him in your Translation, you expresse him so lively, being still the same Man, in other garments. He hath onely changed his habit, like a discreete traveller, to the fashion of the countrie he is in, retaining still the native gravitie of his countenance, and naturall, gracious comfортment. For you have not suited him so lightly, to lose them. You would not; you could not. For his Genius prompted you to write, as himself would have spoken. His spirit breathed in you: over-ruled you.

“That you have not, parot-like, spoken his owne words, and lost yourself literally in a Latine eccho, rendering him precisely verbatim, as if tied to his tongue, but retaining his sence, have expressed his meaning in our proper English elegancies and phrase, is in a Translatour a discretion that not onely I commend, but Horace also commendeth:

“Nec verbum verbo curabit reddere fidus  
Interpres.”

It is however in his character as a Poet that Lodge perhaps claims his chief distinction. It may, therefore, be hoped that the plan which Mr. Singer, in his *Select Early English Poets*, left uncompleted, may yet be accomplished, by publishing the whole of Lodge's poetical compositions in a collective form. In his “*Fig for Momus*,” 1595, after explaining his reasons for adopting this title, he adds: “I have thought good to include *Satyres. Eclogues*, and

Epistles: first, by reason that I studie to delight with varietie, next, because *I would write in that forme wherein no man might chalenge me with serrile imitation* (wherewith heretofore I have been unjustly taxed)." This may not have had any reference to his earlier poem of Glaucus and Scylla; but the supposition has been hazarded, that in this poem, being written in the same stanza, and bearing in some passages points of resemblance, Lodge had taken Shakespeare's "Venus and Adonis" for his model. This proceeds upon an assumption that the latter was written before Shakespeare quitted Stratford-upon-Avon, in 1586 or 1587, and that it had been circulated in manuscript.<sup>1</sup> It is at least as probable that Shakespeare may have seen Lodge's volume, which was printed in 1589, or four years before "Venus and Adonis" made its appearance, and in which the allusion to Venus lamenting the fate of Adonis surely cannot have been unknown to one like Lodge, who was so familiar with classical literature.

In regard to his Satires, some diversity of opinion has also been expressed as to the claims of priority among the English satirists of this time. Hall, afterwards Bishop of Norwich, when he published his "Virgidemiarum," in 1597, boldly claimed this for himself.

"I first adventure, follow me who list,  
And be the second English satirist."

On the other hand, Mr. Collier claims the same dis-

<sup>1</sup> See communication by James P. Reardon, Esq., in "The Shakespeare Society's Papers," vol. iii., p. 143.

tion for Dr. Donne,<sup>1</sup> as a copy of his first three Satires exists in a manuscript, with the date of 1593, two years prior to Lodge's volume having been issued from the press. But Lodge's own words are sufficient to prove that his attention had for some time been directed to this form of composition; nor should it be overlooked that, in 1592, Greene so pointedly cautioned Lodge against indulging himself in any other than general satire, and to avoid whatever was personal. "My Satyres (to speake truth) are by pleasures, rather placed here to prepare and trie the eare, than to feede it: *because if they passe well, the whole Centon of them, alreadie in my hands, shall sodainly bee published.*" In like manner, he adds, "For my Epistles, they are in that kind, wherein no Englishman of our time hath publicquely written." Mr. Singer, in his edition of Bishop Hall's Satires, after noticing that he had been anticipated by Lodge, and "that Donne and Marston too appear to have written about the same time, though posterior in the order of publication," adds this remark: "What is more important, however, if not the *first*, Hall may justly lay claim to be considered the *best* satirist of his age; and when we remember that the writer was only twenty-three years old at the time of publication, we cannot but regret that graver studies should have so absorbed his life, as to give him neither leisure nor inclination to renew his acquaintance with the Muse."<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Collier's Poetical Decameron, vol. i., p. 123.

<sup>2</sup> Satires, by Joseph Hall, p. vii. Chiswick, 1824, 12mo.

It would appear that Lodge's success as a poet was not equal to that as a novelist or miscellaneous writer, or such as to induce him to attempt those greater efforts to which he occasionally alludes. In one of his Eclogues, inscribed to Drayton, under the name of Rowland, he introduces himself by the name of Golde, being an inversion of the letters of his own name. It begins:—

“Whie sings not Golde as he whilome diē,  
In sacred numbers, and diviner vaine,  
Such hymnes as from bace-humor'd braines are kid?”

He enlarges on the little encouragement awarded—

“In such an age, where learning hath no laude,  
Nor needie Homer welcome, or applaude”—

and his resolution to follow other pursuits, since he says: “Arts perish, wanting honour and applause.”

“Which sound rewards, since this neglectful time  
Repines to yeeld to men of high desert,  
Ile cease to revel out my wits in rime,  
For such who make so base account of art:  
And since by wit there is no meanes to clime,  
Ile hould the plough a while, and plie the cart,  
And if my Muse to wonted course returne,  
Ile write, and judge, peruse, commend, and burne.”

Sir Egerton Brydges has paid a just and eloquent tribute to his genius, in his republication of “England's Helicon,” a poetical miscellany, to which Lodge was a contributor, in 1600. “By far the first of these,” (he remarks) “are the compositions of Dr. Thomas Lodge and Nicholas Breton. That the genius of both these writers was not only



elegant and highly polished, but pure and unsophisticated, and far above the taste of their age, may be safely affirmed.....In Lodge we find whole pastorals and odes, which have all the ease, polish, and elegance, of a modern author. How natural is the sentiment, and how sweet the expression, of the following, in *Old Damon's Pastoral*:

“ Homely hearts do harbour quiet,  
 Little fear, and mickle solace:  
 States suspect their bed and diet;  
 Fear and craft do haunt the palace.  
 Little would I little want I,  
 When the mind and store agreeth;  
 Smallest comfort is not scanty;  
 Least he longs that little seeth.  
 Time hath been that I have longed,  
 Foolish and to like of folly,  
 To converse where honour thronged,  
 To my pleasures linked wholly.  
 Now I see, and seeing sorrow,  
 That the day consum'd returns not:  
 Who dare trust upon to morrow,  
 When nor time nor life sojourns not.”

“ How charmingly he breaks out, in *The Solitary Shepherd's Song*:

“ O shady vale, O fair enriched meads,  
 O sacred woods, sweet fields, and rising mountains;  
 O painted flowers, green herbs where Flora treads,  
 Refresh'd by wanton winds and watry fountains!”

“ Is there one word or even accent obsolete in this picturesque and truly poetical stanza?

“ But if such a tender and moral fancy be ever allowed to trifle, is there any thing of the same kind

in the whole compass of English poetry more exquisite, more delicately imagined, or expressed with more happy artifice of language. than *Rosalind's Madrigal*, beginning—

“ ‘Love in my bosom, like a bee,  
Doth suck his sweet:  
Now with his wings he plays with me.  
Now with his feet.  
Within mine eyes he makes his rest.  
His bed amidst my tender breast:  
And yet he robs me of my rest.  
Ah, wanton, will ye?.....’

“Compare Dr. Lodge not only with his contemporaries but his successors, and who, except Breton, has so happily anticipated the taste, simplicity, and purity, of the most refined age?”

Well might Phillips, in his *Theatrum Poetarum*, 1675, commend him as “one of the writers of *those pretty old songs and madrigals, which are very much the strain of those times.*” Although not free from the conceits and quaintness which disfigure so many of the older poets, the ease and natural simplicity of his verses will always secure to THOMAS LODGE a place of distinction among the poets of the reign of Queen Elizabeth.

## CATALOGUE

OF

### THOMAS LODGE'S WORKS.

---

I. A Reply to Stephen Gosson's School of Abuse, in defence of Poetry, Musick, and Stage Plays. 1579-80. Small Svo.. 16 pp. Without title or imprint.

[Only two copies of this unpublished tract (both from Heber's collection) are known to exist. One is in Mr. Miller's library, at Britwell House, Bucks; the other in the Bodleian Library, Oxford. This tract forms the first article in the present volume.]

II. An Alarum against Vsurers: containing tryed experiences against worldly abuses, &c. Heereunto are annexed the delectable Historie of Forbonius and Prisceria: with the lamentable Complaint of Truth ouer England. Written by Thomas Lodge, of Lincolnes Inne, Gentleman.—Imprinted at London, by T. Este, for Sampson Clarke, &c. 1584, 4to. Black letter. A to L, in fours, with two leaves marked ¶ following the Dedication and Epistle.

[Of this volume only two perfect copies are known, and, like the preceding, they are at Britwell, and in the Bodleian Library. It is reprinted in the present volume.]

III. Scillaes Metamorphosis: enterlaced with the unfortunate Love of Glaucus. Whereunto is annexed the delectable Discourse of the discontented Satyre:

with sundrie other most absolute Poems and Sonnets. Contayning the detestable tyrannie of Disdaine. and Comicall triumph of Constance: verie fitt for young Courtiers to peruse. and coy Dames to remarke. By Thomas Lodge, of Lincolnes Inne, Gentleman. *O rita! misero longa, foelici breris.*—Imprinted at London by Richard Jhones. and are to be sold at his shop, neere Holburne bridge. at the signe of the Rose and Crowne. 1589. 4to. A to F 2. in fours. black letter.

[Dedicated "To his especiall good friends, Master Rafe Crane. and the rest of his most entire well willers. the Gentlemen of the Innes of Court and Chancerie." See page xxv. A copy is in the Bodleian Library, another in the collection of the Rev. Alexander Dyce. At Caldecott's sale. in 1843, it fetched £8. Some copies of this volume were reissued with a new title-page: "A most pleasant Historie of Giansens and Scilla. With many excellent Poems and delectable Sonnets. Imprinted at London, 1610," 4to. In the collection of J. Payne Collier, Esq., only. These poems were reprinted, with a selection of other lyrical and pastoral poems by Lodge, at Chiswick, 1819. 12mo., edited by S. W. Singer, Esq., who proposed to have added a second part of Lodge's Poems: but this intention was never carried into effect.]

IV. Rosalynde. Euphues golden Legacie: found after his death in his Cell at Silixedra. Bequeathed to Philautus sonnes noursed vp with their father in England. Fetcht from the Canaries. By T. L. Gent.—London. imprinted by Thomas Orwin for T. G. and John Busbie. 1590. 4to. A to S 2. in fours, black letter.

[It is dedicated "To the Right Honourable and his most esteemed Lord, the Lord of Hunsdon, Lord Chamberlaine of her Majesties household, and Governor of Barwicke." In this epistle the author refers to his having been educated at Oxford, and to his having, with Captain Clarke,

maden voyage to the islands of Terceras and the Canaries. See page xxvii. A copy of this edition, at Britwell, has Sign. R supplied, in MS., in an old hand.

THIS work was several times reprinted. (2.) "London, printed by Alde Ieffes for T. G. and Iohn Busbie, 1592," 4to. (Bodleian Library.) To this edition there was prefixed a leaf with the title, "The Scedule annexed to Emphues Testament," &c.—(3.) A third edition was "Printed by N. Lyng for T. Gubbins, 1598." (J. P. Collier, Esq.)—(4.) "Imprinted at London by I. R. for N. Lyng, 1604." (Mr Miller's library, at Britwell.)—(5.) "Imprinted at London, 1609. (Bodleian Library.)—(6.) "Imprinted for Iohn Smethwick, 1612." (British Museum.)—(7.) "Imprinted for Iohn Smethwick, 1623." (Library at Britwell, and the Rev. Alexander Dyce.)—(8.) "Printed for Francis Smethwicke, 1642." (*Bibl. of 5<sup>th</sup>-Pce.*, No. 422.) All these editions are in 4to., black letter. In the two later editions, the title of "Rosalynd" is omitted. The edition of 1592 was reprinted by Mr. Collier, as the original novel upon which Shakespeare founded his "As You Like It," in the first volume of "Shakespeare's Library," &c. London, Thomas Rodd, 1841-1842, 2 vols. 8vo.]

V. The famous, true and historicall Life of Robert second Duke of Normandy, surnamed for his monstrous birth and behauiour, Robin the Diuell. Wherein is contained his dissolute life in his youth, his deuout reconcilment and vertues in his age: interlaced with many straunge and miraculous aduentures. Wherein are both causes of profite, and manie conceits of pleasure. By T. L. G.—Imprinted at London for N. L. and Iohn Busbie, and are to be sold at the West dore of Paules. 1591, 4to. A 2 and B to M 3, in fours, black letter.

[Dedicated "To the worshipfull and true Mæcenas of learning, Mr. Thomas Smith." Dated "From my Chamber, 2 Majj, 1591." See page xxix. Mr. Heber's copy, the only perfect one at present known, is now in the late Mr. Miller's library, at Britwell. Mr. Collier has an imperfect copy. It is curious to trace the history of such a volume. Heber's MS. note says, "The present was probably Lord Oxford's copy: see the

Harleian Cat., ii., 12,088." It is in Harleian binding, with the Swinton crest added; and from a private mark, I find it had been purchased in Edinburgh, for not many shillings, by the Duke of Roxburghe, in 1793. In 1811, at the Roxburghe sale, (6771) it fetched £19: in 1819, at the White Knight's, £14; in 1834, at Heber's, (part viii.) £10 10s.]

VI. Catharos. Diogenes in his Singularitie. Wherein is comprehended his merry baighting, fit for all mens benefits: christened by him A Nettle for Nice Noses. By T. L., of Lincolns Inn. Gent. —At London, printed by William Hoskins and Iohn Danter for Iohn Busbie. 1591. 4to. A 2 to I 3. in fours, black letter.

[This tract is dedicated by the bookseller, John Busbie, "To the Right Worshypfull Syr Iohn Hart. Knight."—"I present your Worship" (he says) "in signe of my sincere affect. with this small conceit. pend by a Gentleman my deare friend." Copies of this tract are preserved in the British Museum, the Bodleian Library, and in the Earl of Ellesmere's collection. Mr. Collier also possesses a copy.]

VII. Euphues Shadow, the Battaille of the Sences: wherein youthfull folly is set downe in his right figure, and vaine fancies are proved to produce many offences. Hereunto is annexed the Deafe Man's Dialogue, contayning Philamis Athanatos: fit for all sortes to peruse, and the better sorte to practise. By T. L., Gent. London, printed by Abell Jeffes for John Busbie, &c. 1592. 4to.

[In the British Museum, and in Mr. Collier's library. This tract, as already noticed, was published during Lodge's absence, by Robert Greene.]

VIII. Phillis: honoured with Pastorall Sonnets, Elegies, and amorous delights. Where-vnto is annexed, the tragicall complaynt of Elstred. *Iam Phoebus disiungit equos, iam Cinthia iungit.*—At London,

Printed for John Busbie, and are to be sold at his shoppe, at the West-doore of Paules. 1593. 4to.

[Title leaf marked A 5. with the Epistle to the right worthy and noble Lady, the Countess of Shrewsbury. (See page xxxvii) and B to L, in fours, 4to. In Mr. Miller's Library, at Britwell; another copy among the Hawthornden MSS. in the University Library, Edinburgh: and a third (wanting the title in Capel's collection, Trinity College, Cambridge. The Britwell copy, formerly Mr. Heber's, has a curious variation in a duplicate leaf, B 1. or "The Induction." In the third verse, the lines, as first printed—

"And thou, the Ascrean Poet of our time,  
Vnder whose stile conceit was neuer matched;  
The Genius of my muse," &c.—

were changed as follows:—

"And thou, the true Octavia of our time,  
Vnder whose worth, beauty was neuer matched;  
The Genius of my Muse," &c.

In like manner, the last lines of the fourth verse—

"Yet these, I hope, vnder your kinde aspect,  
(Thow flower of knight-hood) shall escape neglect"—

were thus altered—

"Yet these, (I hope) vnder your kind aspect,  
(Most worthy Lady) shall escape neglect."

This evidently suggests that the poems, before publication, were intended to have been dedicated to some person of distinction, referred to in the seventh verse—

"Under a great Mecenas I have past you;"

and that a prose dedication as well as this leaf of induction may have been cancelled, and replaced with that to Lady Shrewsbury. In this induction there is a delicate compliment paid to Spenser:—

"If so you come where learned *Colin* feedes  
His louely flocke, packe thence and quickly haste you;  
You are but mistes before so bright a sunne,  
Who hath the Palme for deepe inuention wunne."

And also to Samuel Daniel, who shortly before had published his volume called "*Delia*:"—

"Kisse *Delias* hand for her sweet Prophets sake."

Drammond of Hawthornden has marked Sonnets 21 and 22 as translations from Ariosto, and 33 from Ronsard; and Mr. Heber, in a MS. note, points out that Sonnet 15 is inserted in "England's Helicon," 1600, with

the signature S. E. D., and thence copied into Ellis's Specimens, as if it had been written by Sir Edward Dyer.]

IX. The Life and Death of William Longbeard, the most famous and witty English Traitor, borne in the Citty of London. Accompanied with manye other most pleasant and prettie Histories. By T. L., of Lincoln's Inne, Gent. *Et nunq̃æ seria ducunt*—Printed at London, by Rychard Yardley and Peter Short, dwelling on Breadstreet hill, at the Signe of the Starre. 1593, 4to. Title, and A to I 2. in fours. Black letter.

[See dedication at p. xxxviii. In the Bodleian Library, with the name of G. Stevens stamped on the title: and J. P. Collier, Esq. These we believe are the only two perfect copies extant: an imperfect copy in the Biblioth. Anglo-Poetica, No. 935. The "pleasant and pretty Histories" mentioned in the title are thus enumerated:—

“ The Life and Death of Wilham Longbeard.  
Of manie famous Pirats, who in times past were Lordes of the Sea.  
The Historie of Partaritus, King of Lomberdia.  
The wonderful dreame of Aspatia.  
A wonderful revenge of Megollo.  
The memorable deeds of Valasca.  
An excellent example of continence in Francis Sforza.  
Of many unfortunate men.  
How King Roderigo lost his kingdome.  
Of many famous men.  
A most subtile dispute amongst Ambassadors.  
Strange Lawes of Tyrsus the Tyrant.”]

X. The Wounds of Civill War: lively set forth in the true Tragedies of Marius and Scilla. As it hath beene publicquely plaide in London, by the Right Honourable the Lord high Admirall his Servants. Written by Thomas Lodge, Gent. *O vita! misera longa, felici brevis*.—London, printed by Iohn Danter.



and are to be sold at the signe of the Sunne, in Paules Church-yarde. 1594. A to K, in fours.

[Bodleian Library, British Museum, two copies, Mr. Miller's library, Britwell, (the Roxburghe copy) J. Payne Collier, Esq., and the Rev. Alexander Dyce. It is reprinted in Dodsley's Select Collection of Old Plays, new edition, vol. viii. London, 1825, post 8vo., with an introductory notice by Mr. Collier.]

XI. A Looking Glasse for London and England. Made by Thomas Lodge, Gentleman, and Robert Greene. In Artibus Magister.—London, printed by Thomas Creede, and are to be sold by William Barley, at his shop in Gracious streete. 1594. 4to. Black letter.

[The only known copy of this edition, which was formerly in Mr. Kemble's collection, is now in the possession of the Duke of Devonshire. There is another edition, with the same imprint, in 1598. Copies are in the Bodleian Library, in the British Museum, and in Mr. Collier's hands. The late editions of 1602 and 1617, imprinted by Bernard Alsop, are also in the same libraries. The Rev. Mr. Dyce possesses a copy of that of 1617. This play is reprinted in the carefully edited edition of "The Dramatic Works of Robert Greene, to which are added his Poems, with some account of the Author, and Notes, by the Rev. Alexander Dyce, B.A." London, 1831. 2 vols., post 8vo.]

XII. A Fig for Momus: containing Pleasant varietie, included in Satyres, Eclogues, and Epistles, by T. L., of Lincolnes Inne, Gent. *Che pecora si fa, il lupo selo mangia*.—At London, printed for Clement Knight, and are to bee solde at his shop, at the little North-doore of Paules Church. 1595, 4to. A to I 3. in fours.

[Dedicated "To the right Honorable and thrice renowned Lord, William Earle of Darbie." whom he styles "the true Mecœnas of the Muses." See page xxxix. Bodleian Library, and library at Britwell. The

volume was reprinted at the Auchinleck Press, (in Ayrshire) by the late Sir Alexander Boswell, Bart., 1817, 4to. Mr. Collier has an old MS. copy.]

XIII. The Diuel coniured.—London. printed by Adam Islip for William Mats. dwelling in Fleetstreet, at the sign of the Hand and Plough. Anno 1596. 4to. A 2 to M 2, in fours. black letter.

[Dedicated "To the right honorable and learned Sir John Fortescue, Knight, Chancellor of the Exchequer." &c. See page xi. In the Bodleian Library, library at Britwell. and the British Museum.]

XIV. A Margarite of America. By T. Lodge. Printed for Iohn Busbie, and are to be sold in S. Dunstan's church-yard in Fleet-street. at the little shop next Cliffords Inne. 1596. 4to. A 2 to N 1, in fours.

[See the dedication and epistle. at page xi. In the British Museum, two copies, and in the Bodleian Library.]

XV. VVits Miserie, and the VVorlds Madnesse: discouering the Deuils Incarnat of this Age.—London, printed by Adam Islip. and are to be sold by Cutbert Burby. at his shop by the Roiall Exchange. 1596, 4to. A 2 to P, in fours, black letter.

[In the library at Britwell. and in the Bodleian Library, there are two copies; one of these exhibits a curious typographical mistake in the first line of the title, having WLS MISERIE, in place of WITS MISERIE. The dedication, dated from "Low-Laiton, this 5 of November, 1596." has already been quoted, at page xlii.]

XVI. The famous and memorable Workes of IOSEPHUS, a man of much Honour and Learning among the Jewes. Faithfully translated out of the Latin and French by Tho. Lodge, Doctor in Physicke. *Bernardus Epistola ad Sugerium. Tunc re-*

*centia iucundius bona clarescunt, cum fuerint malis comparata prioribus.* — Printed at the charges of G. Bishop, S. Waterton, P. Short, and Tho. Adams. 1602. Folio.

[Of this edition a copy is in the library at Britwell. The translation was reprinted in 1609, 1620, 1632, 1640, (Printed for Anne Hood) 1655, and 1670. Besides these, there were editions “revised and amended, according to the excellent French translation of M. Arnauld d’Andilly,” in 1683 and 1693, all in folio.—Clarke’s Bibliographical Miscellany, vol. i., p. 127.]

XVII. A Treatise of the Plague: containing the Nature, Signes, and Accidents, of the same, with the certaine and absolute cure of the Feuers, Botches, and Carbuncles, that raigue in these times: And above all things most singular Experiments and Preservatives in the same, gathered by the Observation of divers worthy Travailers, and selected out of the Writings of the best learned Phisitians in this age. By Thomas Lodge, Doctor in Phisicke.—London, printed for Edward White and N. L. 1603, 4to. A to L 3. in fours, black letter.

[Dedicated “To the right Hon. the Lord Maior, and to the right Worshipfull the Aldermen and Sherriffes of the Citie of London.” See page li. Copies in the British Museum, Bodleian Library, and Mr. Collier’s collection.]

XVIII. The Workes, both Morrall and Natural, of Lucius Annæus Seneca. Translated by T. Lodge, D. of Phis.—London, printed by William Stansby. Fo.

[This on the centre of an emblematical title, representing *Morientis Effigies*, “Ingr. by W. Hole,” followed by a printed title-page: “The Workes of Lucius Annæus Seneca, both Morrall and Naturall. Contain- ing, &c. Translated by Tho. Lodge, D. in Physicke. London, printed by William Stansby, 1614.” folio, pp. 917, besides the preliminary leaves

and the table. "Gentle Reader," (he says) "for thee I laboured, for thy good have I made this admirable Roman speake English: if it profit thee, I have my wish, if it displease thee, it is thy want of judgment." Prefixed is a long Latin dedication to Thomas Egerton, Baron Ellesmere, Lord Chancellor of England, as the chief patron of philosophical studies at Oxford. This is followed by another epistle: "Reverendissimis Doctoribus, cæterisque in Stadio Literario optime exercitatis Lectoribus Tho. Lodge, D. Medicus Physicus. Salutem." Mr. Collier possesses a copy, with an autograph inscription of Thomas Dekker, as the gift of the translator in 1614. At an interval of six years, this translation was republished, with an emblematical engraved title-page—"R. E., [Elstruck] s."—the design is quite distinct from the former, and in the centre, "The Workes of Lucius Annaeus Seneca: newly Inlarged and Corrected by Thomas Lodge, D. M. P. London, printed by William Stansby." 1620. folio. The date appears in the colophon, and the text ends on page 321. This edition is not uncommon, and was reprinted in 1682. folio.]

## XIX. The Poore Mans Talentt.

[An unpublished Manuscript. The above is the whole of the title-page. The MS. consists of sixty-nine leaves, but the last two contain medical receipts in later hands. "This unpublished work," says Mr. Collier, in whose possession it is, "was written by some scriba, but it is throughout corrected in the handwriting of the author, and it was sold with the books of the old Duke of Norfolk." The epistle to Anne Countess of Arundell is in the poet's autograph, and a facsimile is annexed. This Lady Anne, sister and co-heir of Thomas Lord Dacre, married Philip Earl of Arundel, who languished as a prisoner in the Tower till his death, in 1595. She survived till 1633. Their son, Thomas Earl of Arundel, born in 1586, distinguished himself, in the reign of Charles the First, as a collector of antiquities and of works of art.

"To the Right Honorable my very good Ladia, the Ladie Anne, Mother Countess of Arundell.

"Right Honorable—Amidst the tempests of fortune and the tiranies of sicknes, I have (to satisfie your expectation) finished the booke I promised: wherein I have observed a plaine and easie methode to cure the infirmities of the bodie. The medicines are familiar, and such as everie Apothecarie hath in a redines, or your garden and the felδες will afford you: wherebie your Charitie (which is unconfinde) maie the more easilie and with less chardge be imparted to all, both riche and poore, that have recourse unto you in theare necessities. Besides, if you diligentl<sup>e</sup> peruse

the Booke, you shall finde that which the greatest Phisitions builde theare judgments upon. I had in person presented this booke, but that the infirmitie of my bodie is such, as my will cannot overmaster yt. Accept yt, noble Maddam, as it is intended, from him that to the uttermost of his power with an unfained harte will both prairie for you and serve you.

*To Madame to wit yo.<sup>r</sup> Reliance.*  
*Thomas Lodge*

Such is the Catalogue of Lodge's miscellaneous and poetical writings, in so far as the researches of Mr. Collier and other diligent investigators of early English literature have been able to discover. That he published other tracts, not now known to be extant, is highly probable, or rather certain. For instance, in the "Catalogue of the large and curious English Library of Mr. John Hutton, late of St. Paul's Church-yard, London," sold by auction in October, 1764, is the following lot:—

"No. 1510. TRACTS.—Scillaes Metamorphosis, with other Poems, by Lodge. B. L. 1590.—Diogenes in his Singularitie, or a Nettle for nice Noses, by ditto. B. L.—The famous, true, and historical Life of Robert second Duke of Normandy, surnamed Robin the Divell, by ditto. B. L. 1591.—A Margarite of America, by ditto. B. L. 1596.—An Alarum against Usurers, by ditto; dedicated to Sir P. Sidney. B. L. 1584.—A Fig for Momus, by ditto. 1595.—A Spyders Webbe, by ditto. B. L. No date."

The last of these seven tracts, "A Spyders Webbe," is wholly unknown, and no copy of his "Scillaes Metamorphosis," dated 1590, has been discovered.

In proof of the inconsiderable pecuniary value of such tracts, at that time, it may be noticed that this volume, or lot, fetched the sum of six shillings! Several of these tracts have singly, in more recent times, fetched from five to ten pounds, and upwards: and one of them, the "Alarum against Usurers," (re-printed in the present volume) at Bindley's sale, actually produced twenty-seven pounds. In the same sale of Hutton's books, we also find three other tracts by our author, viz:—

"5214. Lodge, Thomas, Life and death of William Longbeard, &c. B. L. 1593. 5s.

5215. —————, Wits Miserie and the Worlds Madnesse, discovering the Devils incarnat of this age. B. L. 1585. 2s. 6d.

5216. —————, The Devil conjured. B. L. 1588. 2s."

In one of Greene's pamphlets, "The Spanish Masquerade," printed in 1589, Lodge prefixed some verses in French. (Greene's Works, by Dyce, vol. i., p. xxxviii.) He has also commendatory verses in the "Writing Schoolemaster," by Peter Bales, London, 1590, 4to.



•

A REPLY  
TO STEPHEN GOSSON'S  
SCHOOLE OF ABUSE,

*IN DEFENCE OF POETRY,  
MUSICK, AND STAGE PLAYS.*

By THOMAS LODGE.





Protophenes can know Apelles by his line though he se him not, and wise men can consider by the penn the authoritie of the Writer though they know him not. The Rubie is discerned by his pale rednes: and who hath not hard that the Lyon is knowne by hys clawes? Though Esopes craftie crowe be neuer so deitlye decked, yet is his double dealing esely desiphered: and though men never so perfectly polish there wrytings with others sentences, yet the simple truth will discover the shadow of ther follies: and bestowing euery fether in the bodye of the right M. tourne out the naked disssembler into his owen cote, as a spectacle of follye to all those which can rightlye judge what imperfections be.

There came to my hands lately a litle (woulde God a wittye) pamphlet, baring a fayre face as though it were the Scoole of Abuse; but being by me aduisedly wayed I fynd it the oftscome of imperfections, the writer fuller of wordes then judgement, the matter certainly as ridiculous as serious: assuredly his mother witte wrought this wonder, the child to dispraise his father, the dogg to byte his mayster for his dainty morcell. But I se (with Seneca) that the wrong is to be suffered, since he dispraiseth. who by costome hath leert to speake well. But I meane to be short: and teach the Maister what he knoweth not, partly that he may se his own follie, and partly that I may discharge my promise, both bind me: therefore I would wish the good scholmayster to ouer looke his Abuses againe with me, so shall he see an ocean of inormities which begin in his first principle in the dispraise of Poetry. And first let me familiarly consider with this find faulte what the learned have alwayes esteemed of Poetrie.

Seneca thoughte a stoike would have a poetickall sonne, and amongst the auncientest Homer was no les accompted then *Humanus deus*. What made Alexander, I pray you, esteeme of him so much? why allotted he for his Works so curious a closset? was ther no fitter underprop for his pillow then a simple pamphlelet? in all Darius cofers was there no jewell so costy? Forsoth my thinks these two (the one the father of Philosophers, the other the cheftaine of Chiualrie) were both deceiued if all were as a GOSSEX would wish them; yf poets paynt naughte but palterie toyes in vearse, their studies tended to foolishnesse, and in all their indeuors they did naught els but *ag. nō nihil agere*. Lord, howe Virgil's poore Gnatt pricketh him, and how Ouid's Fley byteth him! he can beare no bourde. he hath raysed up a new sect of serius Stoikes, that can abide naught but their owen shadowe, and alow nothing worthye, but what they conceaue. Did you never reade 'my ouer wittie frend' that vnder the persons of beastes many abuses were dissiphered? have you not reason to waye? that whatsoeuer ether Virgil did write of his Gnatt, or Ouid of his Fley, was all couertly to declare abuse? but you are '*homo literatus*' a man of the letter, little sauoring of learning, your giddy brain made you leave your thrift, and your abuses in London some part of your honestie. You say that Poets are subtil, if so, you have learned that poynt of them, you can well glose on a trifeling text. But you have dronke perhaps of Lethe, your gramer learning is out of your head, you forget your Accidence, you remember not that under the person of Æneas in Virgil the practice of a dilligent captaine is discrib'd; under the shadow of byrds, beastes and trees, the follies of the world were disiphered; you know not, that the creation is signified in the image of Prometheus; the fall of pryde in the person of Narcissus; these are toyes because they sauer of wisdom which you want. Marke what Campanus sayth, *Mira fabularum vanitas, sed quæ si inspiciantur rideri possunt non rana*. The vanitie of tales is

wonderful, yet if we aduisedly look into them they wil seme and proue wise. How wonderful are the pithie poemcs of Cato? the curious comedies of Plautus? how brauely discovereth Terence our imperfection in his Eunuch? how neatly dissiphereth he Dauus? how pleasauntly paynteth he out Gnatho? whom if we shoulde seeke in our dayes, I sup[er]se he would not be farr from your Parson.

But I see you would seeme to be that which you are not, and as the prouerb sayth, *Nolun in C[ir]co esse*. Poetes you say use coullors to couer their inconiencies, and wittie sentences to burnish their bawdery, and you diuinitie to couer your knauerye. But tell mee truth Gesson, speakest thou as thou thinkest? what coelers findest thou in a Poete not to be admitted? are his speeches unperfect? seuer they of inscience. I think, if thou hast any shame, thou canst not but like and approve them: are their gods displeant vnto thee? doth Saturne in his majesty moue thee? doth Juno with her riches displease thee? doth Minerua with her weapon discomfort thee? doth Apollo with his harping harme thee? thou mayst say nothing les then harme thee, because they are not, and I thinke so to[o], because thou knowest them not. For wot thou that in the person of Saturne our decaying yeares are signified; in the picture of angry Juno, our affections are dissiphered; in the person of Minerua is our understanding signified, both in respect of warre, as policie. When they saie that Pallas was begotten of the braine of Jupiter, their meaning is none other, but that al wisdom (as the learned say) is from aboue, and commeth from the Father of Lights: in the portrature of Apollo all knowledge is denocated. So that, what so they wrot, it was to this purpose, in the way of pleasure to draw men to wisdom: for seing the world in those daies was vnperfect, yt was necessary that they like good Phisiti[ans]: should so frame their potions, that they might be appliable to the quesie stomachs of their werish patients. But our

studientes by your meanes have made shipwrack of theyr labors, our schoolemaisters haue so offended that by your judgement they shall *subire poenam capitis* for teaching Poetry; the universitie is litle beholding to you, al their practices in teaching are friuolus. Witt hath wrought that in you, that yeares and studie neuer settled in the heads of our sagest doctors. No mervel though you dispraysse Poetrye, when you know not what it meanes.

Erasmus will make that the path waye to knowledge which you dispraysse; and no meane Fathers vouchsafe in their seriouse questiones of deuinitie, to inserte poetically censures. I think if we shal wel ouerloke the Philosophers, we shal find their judgements not halfe perfect. Poetes, you saye, fayle in their fables, Philosophers in the verie secrets of Nature. Though Plato could wish the expulsion of Poetes from his well publiques, which he might doe with reason, yet the wisest had not all that same opinion, it had bene better for him to have sercht more narrowly what the soule was, for his definition was verie friuolous, when he would make it naught els but *Substantium intellectu predictum*. If you say that Poetes did labour about nothing, tell me I besech you what wonders wroughte those your dunce Doctors in ther reasons *de ente, et non ente?* in [is] theyr definition of no force, and les witt? how sweate they power soules in makinge more things then cold be? that I may use your owne phrase, did not they spende one candle by seeking another. Democritus, Epicurus, with ther scholler Metrodorus, how labored they in finding out more worlds then one? your Plato in midst of his presignes wrought that absurdite that neuer may be redd in Poets, to make a yearthly creature to beare the person of the Creator, and a corruptible substance, an incomprehensible God! for determining of the principall causes of all thinges, a made them naughte els but an Idea which if it be conferred wyth the truth, his sentence will sauour of Inscience. But I speake

for Poetes, I answere your Abuse, therefore I will disprove, or dispraysse naught, but wish you with the wise Plato. to dispraysse that thing you offend not in. Seneca sayth. that the studdie of Poets, is to make children, ready to the vnderstanding of wisdom, and that our aunccients did teache *utis Eleutherias, i. liberales*, because the instructed children, by the instrument of knowledg in time became. *hominis liber, i. Philosophus*. It may be that in reiding of poetry, it happened to you as it is with the Oyster, for she in her swimming receiueth no ayre, and you in your reiding lesse instruction. It is reported that the sheepe of Euboia want ther gale, and one the contrarye side that the beastes of Naxos haue *contentum fel*. Men hope that scollers should haue witt brought upp in the Universite; but your sweet selfe, with the cattell of Euboia, since you left your College, haue lost your learning. You dispraysse Maximus Tirtius pollice, and that thinge that he wroth to manifest learned P. ets meaning, you attribute to follye. O holy headed man! why may not Juno resemble the ayre? why not Alexander valour? why not Vlisses pollice? Will you haue all for your owne tothe? must men write that you maye know theyr meaning? as though your wytt were to wrest all things? Alas! simple Irus, begg at knowledge gate awhile, thou haste not wonne the mastery of learning. Weane thy selfe to wisdom, and use thy tallant in zeale not for enuie: abuse not thy knowledge in dispraysing that which is perces. I should blush from a Player, to become an enuious Preacher, if thou hadst zeale to preach, if for Sions sake thou couldest not holde thy tongue, thy true dealing were prayse worthy, thy reuolting woulde counsell me to reuerence thee. Pittie weare it, that Poetrie shoulde be displaced; full little could we want Buchanan's workes, and Boetius Comfertes may not be banished. What made Erasmus labor in Euripides tragedies? Did he indeuour by painting them out of Greeke into Latine to manifest sinne unto us? or to confirme vs in goodness? Labor I pray thee

in Pamphlets more prayse worthy: thou haste not saued a Senator, therefore not worthye a Lawrell wreth; thou hast not (in disprouing Poetry) reprobued an Abuse, and therefore not worthy commendation.

Seneca sayth, that *Magna vitæ pars elabitur male agentibus, maxima nihil agentibus. tota aliud agentibus.* The most of our life (sayd he) is spent ether in doing euill, or nothing, or that wee should not; and I would wish you weare exempted from the sensure. Geue eare but a little more what may be said for Poetrie, for I must be brieft, you have made so greate matter that I may not stay on one thing to long, lest I leaue another vntouched. And first, whereas you say that Tullie, in his yerres of more judgement, despised Poetes, harke (I pray you) what he worketh for them in his Oration *pro Archia poeta*: But before you heare him, least you rayle in the incounter, I would wysh you to followe the aduise of the dasterdlye Ichneumon of Ægypt, who when shee beholdeth the Aspis her enemye to drawe nigh, calleth her fellowes together, bismering herselfe with claye, agaynst the byting and stroke of the serpent arme your selfe, call your witts together: want not your wepons, lest your imperfect judgement be rewardede with Midas eares. You had neede play the night burd now, for you[r] day Owl hath misconned his parte, and for To who, now a dayes he cryes Foole you: which hath brought such a sort of wondering birds about your eares, as I feare me will chatter you out of your iney bush. The worlde shames to see you, or els you are afraide to shew your selfe. You thought Poetrye should want a patron (I think) when you first published this Inuectiue; but yet you fynd al to many euen *preter expectationem*, yea though it can speake for its selfe, yet her patron Tullie now shall tell her tale, *Hæc studia* (sayth he) *adulescentiam alunt. senectatem oblectant, secundas res ornant, adversis perjugium ac solatium prebent, delectant domi, non inpediunt foris. pernoctant nobiscum, peregrinantur, rusticantur.*

Then will you dispraise that which all men commend? you looke only upon the refuse of the abuse, nether respecting the importance of the matter, nor the weight of the wyter. Solon can fayne himselfe madde. to further the Athenians. Chaucer in pleasant vain can rebuke sin vncontroll'd; and though he be lauish in the letter, his sence is serious. Who in Rome lamented not Roscius death? and least thou suck no plesure out of thy M. Claudian's writings? Hark, what Cellarius, a learned father attributeth to it: *Ad memoriam*, (saith he), it profiteth the memory. Yea and Tully attributeth it for prais to Archias that upon any theame he could versify extempory. Who liketh not of the propinques of Ouid? who not vnworthely cold boast of himself thus, *Quid sit barbar dicere versus erat*. Who then doe we not wonder at Poetry? who thinketh not that it proceedeth from aboue? what made the Chians and Colophonians fall to such contumacy? Why seke the Smirnians, to recover from the Salaminiens the prais of Homer? al wold have him to be of ther city: I hope not for harme, but because of his knowledge. Themistocles desireth to be acquainted with those who could best discipher his praises. Euen Marius himselfe, tho never so cruel, accompted of Plotinus poems. What made Aphricanus esteeme Ennius? Why did Alexander giue prais to Achilles but for the prayses which he found written of him by Homer? Why esteemed Pompie so much of Theophanes Mitiletus? or Brutus so greatlye the wrytinges of Accius? Fulvius was so great a fauorer of Poetry, that after the Aetolian warres, he attributed to the Muses those spoiles that belonged to Mars. In all the Romaine conquest, hardest thou euer of a slayne Poete? nay rather the Emperours honored them, beautified them with benefites, and decked their sanctuaries with sacrifice. Pindarus colledg is not fit for spoil of Alexander ouercome, nether feareth Poetry the persecutors sword. What made Austin so much affectate that heauenly fury? not folly, for if I must needes speake, *illud non austin affirmare*, his



zeale was, in setting up of the house of God, not in affectate eloquence, he wrot not, he accompted not, he honored not, so much that (famous Poetry) whyche we prayse, without cause, for, if it be true that Horace reporteth, in his booke *de Arte Poetica*, all the answeres of the Oracles weare in verse. Among the precise Jewes, you shall find Poetes, and for more majestie Sibilla will prophesie in verse. Hiroaldus can witnes with me, that Dauid was a poet, and that his wayne was in imitating (as S. Jerom witnesseth) Horace, Flaccus, and Pindarus, sometimes his verse runneth in an Iambus foote, anone he hath recourse to a Saphier vaine, and *o'ipando, sapientia le igne litur*. Ask Josephus, and he will tel you that Esay, Job and Salomon, voutsafed poetical practises, for if Origen and he fault not) theyre verse was Hexameter, and Pentameter. Enquire of Cassiodorus, he will say that all the beginning of Poetrye proceded from the Scripture. Paulinus tho the Byshop of Nolanum yet voutsafe the name of a Poet; and Ambrose tho he be a patriarke in Mediolanum loveth versifying. Beda shameth not the science that shamelesse GOSSEN misliketh. Reade ouer Lactantius, his prooffe is by poetry: and Paul voutsafeth to overlooke Epimnides: let the Apostle preach at Athens he disdaineth not of Aratus authorite. It is a pretty sentence yet not so pretty as pithy. *Poeta nascitur, Orator fit*; as who should say, Poetrye commeth from aboue, from a heavenly seate of a glorious God, unto an excellent creature man: an Orator is but made by exercise. For if we examine well what befell Ennius amonge the Romans, and Hesiodus among his contrimen the Grecians, howe they came by theyr knowledge, whence they receued their heavenly furre, the first will tell us that sleping on the Mount of Parnassus he dreamed that he received the soule of Homer into him, after the which he became a Poete. The next will assure you that it commeth not by labor, nether that night watchings bringeth it, but that we must have it thence whence he fetched it, which was, (he

saith), from a well of the Muses which Cabellinus calleth Porum; a draught whereof drew him to his perfection, so of a shephard he became an eloquent Poet. Well then you see that it commeth not by exercise of play making, neither insertion of gawds, but from nature, and from abilitie: and I hope that Aristotle hath sufficiently taught you, that *Natura nihil fecit frustra*. Perseus was made a poete *Dei beneficio percitus*: and whereas the Poets were sayde to call for the Muses helpe, ther mening was no other, as Iulius Balinus reporteth, but to call for heauenly inspiration from abilitie to direct theyr endeuors. Nether were it good for you to sette light by the name of a Poet since the outspring from whence he commeth is so heauenly. Sibilla in her answers to Æneas against hir will, as the poet telleth us, was possessed with this fury; yea, wey considerably out of the writing of poets, and you shal se that when ther matter is most heauenly, their stile is most loftye, a strange token of the wonderful efficacy of the same. I would make a long discourse unto you of Platoes 4 furies, but I leave them: it pitieth me to bring a rodd of your owne making to beate you wyth.

But mithinks, while you heare this, I see you swallowe down your owne spittle for reuenge, where God wot my wryting sauoreth not of enuye. In this case I could wyshe you fare farre otherwyse from your doo: yt you please, I wyll become your friende, and see what a portion or recypt I can frame rytt for your diet. And herein I will proue myself a practiser, before I purge you, you shall take a preparatiue to disburden your heavy helle of those grose follis you haue concealed: but the recypt is bitter, therefore I would wysh you first to tasten your mouth with the sugar of perseuerance: for ther is a cold colly that must downe your throate, yet such a one as shall chaunge your complection quit. I wyll have you therefore to taste first of that cold riuer Phricus, in Thracia, which, as Aristotle reporteth, changeth blacke into white, or of Scamandar, which maketh

gray yalow, that is of an enuious man a wel minded person, reprehending of zeale that wherein he hath sinned by folly, and so being prepared, thy purgation wyll worke more easy, thy understandinge wyll be more persit, thou shalt blush at thy abuse, and reclaime thy selfe by force of argument, so will thou proue of clene recouered patient, and I a perfecte practiser in framing so good a potion. This broughte to passe I with thee wil seeke out some abuse in Poetry, which I will seeke for to disproue by reason, first pronounced by no small birde, even Aristotle himselfe; *Poetae* (sayth he) *multa merentur*: and to further his opinion sever Cato putteth in his censure: *Admiranda cauunt, sed non credenda Poetae*. These were sore blemishes, if objected rightly, and heare you may say the streame runnes a wronge, but if it be so, by you[r] leue, I wyll bring him shortly in his right chanel. My answer shall not be my owne, but a learned Father shall tell my tale; if you will know his name men call him Lactantius, who in hys booke *De Diuinis Institutionibus*, reasoneth thus; I suppose (sayth he) Poets are full of credit, and yet it is requisite for those that will understand them to be admonished, that among them, not onely the name but the matter beareth a show of that it is not; for if, sayth he, we examine the Scriptures litterallye nothing will seeme more falls, and if we waye Poetes wordes and not ther meaning, our learning in them wilbe very mene. You see nowe that your Catoes judgement as of no force. and that all your objections you make agaynst Poetrye be of no valor. Yet lest you should be altogether discouraged I wyll helpe you forward a little more: it pities me to consider the weaknes of your cause, I wyll therfore make your strongest reason, more strong, and after I have builded it up destroy it agayn. Poets you confesse are eloquent, but you reprove them in their wantonnesse: they write of no wisdom; you may say their tales are friuolus, they prophane holy thinges, they seeke nothing to the perfection of our soules, theyr practise is in other things, of lesse force:

To this objection I answer no otherwise then Horace doeth in his booke *De Arte Poetica*, where he wryteth thus.

Siluestres homines sacer interpresque Deorum  
Sedibus, et victu foedo deterruit Orpheus:  
Dictus ob hoc lenire tigres, rabidosque leones:  
Dictus et Amphion, Thebanæ condit[ur] vrbis,  
Saxa mouere sono testudinis, et prece liandæ  
Ducere quo vellet: fuit hec sapientia quondam.  
Publica priuatis secernere, sacra profanis;  
Concubitu prohibere vago; dare jura maritis;  
Oppida moliri; leges inscidere ligno.

The holy spokesman of the Gods  
With heauēly Orpheus light,  
Did driue the savage men from woods,  
And made them liue aright;  
And therefore is sayd the Tygers fierce  
And Lyons full of myght  
To ouercome: Amphion, he  
Was sayd of Theabs the founder,  
Who by his force of lute did cause,  
The stones to part a sonder.  
And by his speach them did direct,  
Where he would haue them stave.  
This wisdomē this was it of olde  
All strife for to allay;  
To giue to euery man his owne:  
To make the Gods be knowne:  
To drive each lecher from the bed  
That never was his owne;  
To teach the law of mariage;  
The way to build a towne;  
For to engraue these lawes in woods,  
This was these mens renowne.

I cannot leaue Tirtheus pollicy untouched, who by force of his pen coulde incite men to the defence of theyr countrey. If you require of the Oracle of Apollo what successe you shal haue: *respondet bellicoso numine.*

Lo now you see your objections [and] my answers, you behold or may perceiue manifestlye, that Poetes were the first raysons of cities, prescribers of good lawes, mayntayners of religion, disturbers of the wicked, aduancers of the wel disposed, inuentors of laws, and lastly the very set-paths to knowledge, and understanding; ye[a], if we shold beleue Herome, he will make Plato's exiles honest men, and his pestiferous poets good preachers: for he accounteth Orpheus, Museus, and Linus, Christians; therefore Virgil in his 6 booke of *Aeneidos* wher he lernedly describeth that journey of Aeneas to Elisum) asserteneth us, that among them that were ther for the zeale they beare toward their country, ther wer found *Quique pii Vates, et Phæbo digna loquti*: but I must answer al objections, I must fil euery nooke. I must arme myself now, for here is the greatest bob I can gather out of your booke, forsoth Ouid's abuses, in descrybing whereof you labour very vehementlye terming him letcher, and in his person dispraise all poems: but shall one man's follye destroye a uniuersal commodity? what gift, what perfit knowledge hath ther bin, among the professors of which ther hath not bin a bad on[e]; the Angels have sinned in heauen, Adam and Eue in earthly paradise, among the holy Apostles ungratious Judas. I reson not that al Poets are holy, but I affirme that Poetry is a heauenly gift, a perfit gift, then which I know not greater pleasure. And surely if I may speak my mind I think we shal find but few Poets, if it were exactly wayd, what they oughte to be: your Muscouian straungers, your Scithian monsters wonderful, by one Eurys brought upon one stage in ships made of sheepe skins, wyll not proue you a poet, nether your life alow you to bee of that learning. If you had wisely wayed the abuse of poetry, if you had reprehended the

foolish fantasies of our Poets *nomine non re* which they bring forth on stage, my self wold have liked of you and allowed your labor. But I perceiue nowe that all red colloured stones are not Rubies, nether is euery one Alexander that hath a stare in his cheke, al lame men are not Vulcans, nor hooke nosed men Ciceroes, nether each professor a poet. I abhorre those Poets that sauor of ribaldry: I will with the zealous admit the expulcion of such enormities: Poetry is dispraised not for the folly that is in it, but for the abuse whiche manye ill wryters couller by it. Beleeue mee the magistrats may take aduise (as I knowe wisely can) to roote out those olde rymes which runnes in euery rascals mouth. Sauoring of rybaldry, those foolish balliets, that are admitted, make poets good and godly practises to be refused. I like not of a wicked Nero that wyll expell Lucan, yet admit I of a zealous gouernour that wil seke to take away the abuse of poetry. I like not of an angrye Augustus which wyll banishe Ouid for enuy. I love a wise Senator, which in wisdome wyll correct him, and with aduise burne his follyes: unhappy were we yf like poore Scaurus we shoulde find Tiberius that wyll put us to death for a tragedy making: but most blessed were we, if we might find a iudge that seuerely would amende the abuses of Tragedies. But I leaue the reformation thereof to more wyser than myselfe, And retourne to Gos-on whom I wyshe to be fully perswaded in this cause, and therefore I will tell hym a prety story, which Justin wryteth in the prayse of Poetrye.

The Lacedemonians, when they had loste many men in diuers incountrys with theyr enemyes, soughte to the Oracles of Apollo requiring how they myght recouer theyr losses? It was answered, that they mighte ouercome if so be that they could get an Athenian gouernor: Whereupon they sent Orators unto the Athenians, humbly requesting them that they woulde appoynt them out one of theyr best captaynes: the Athenians owinge them old malice, sent them,

in steede of a *scholar to rechio*, a scholar of the Muses, in steede of a worthy warrior a poore poet, for a courageous Themistocles a silly Tirihetus, a man of great eloquence and singular wytte, yet was he but a lame lymde captaine, more fit for the coche then the field. The Lacedemonians trusting the Oracle, receued the champion, and fearing the gouernment of a stranger, made him ther Citizen; which once done and he obtaining the Dukdome he assended the theater, and ther very learnedly wysching them to forget theyr folly, and to thinke on victory: they being ac[t]uate by his eloquence, waging battail won the field.

Lo now you see that the framing of common welthes, and defence therof, proceedeth from Poets, how dare you therefore open your mouth against them? how can you dispraise the preseruer of a countrie? you compare Homer to Methecus, cookes to poetes, you shame your selfe in your unreuerent similituds, you may see your follyes, *verbum sapienti sat*. Where as Homer was an ancient poet, you disalow him, and accompte of those of lesser judgement. Strabo calleth Poetry, *primam sapientiam*. Cicero, in his firste of hys Tusculans, attributeth the inuencion of Philosophy to Poets. God keepe us from a Plato that should expel such men; pittie were it that the memory of these valiant victours shoulde be hidden, whiche haue dyed in the behalfe of ther countries. Miserable were our state yf we wanted those worthy volumes of Poetry: could the learned beare the losse of Homer? or our younglings the wrytings of Mantuan? or you your volumes of Historyes? Belieue me, yf you had wanted your Mysteries of nature, and your stately storyes, your booke would have scarce bene fedde wyth matter. If therefore you will deale in things of wisdome, correct the abuse, honor the science, renewe your schoole; crye out ouer Hierusalem wyth the Prophet the woe that he pronounced; wish the teacher to reforme hys lyfe, that his weake scholler may proue the wyser; cry out against unsaciabie desyre in

rich men, tel the house of Jacob theyr iniquities, lament with the Apostle the want of laborers in the Lords vineyards, cry out on those dume dogges that will not barke: wyll the mightye that they ouer mayster not the poore. and put downe the beggars prowde heart by thy perswasions. Thunder oute wyth the Prophete Micha the mesage of the LORD, and wyth him desyre the Judges to heare thee, the Prynces of Jacob to hearken to thee, and those of the house of Israell to understande; then tell them that they abhorre judgement, and prevent equitie, that they judge for rewardes, and that theyr priests teach for hyre, and the prophets thereof prophesie for money, and yet that they saye the Lorde is wyth them, and that no euil can befall them: breath out the sweete promises to the good, the curses to the badde, tell them that a peace muste needes haue a warre. and that God can rayse up another Zennachario: shew them that Salomons kingdome was but for a season, and that aduersitie cometh ere we espye it. These be the songes of Sion, these be those rebukes which you oughte to add to Abuses; reconer the body, for it is sore, the appe\_n\_dices thereof will easily be reformed, if that we ar at a staye.

But other matter call me and I must not staye upon this only; there is an easier task in hand for me, and that which if I may speak my conscience, fitteth my vain best, your Second Abuse Gosson, your Second Abuse, your disprayses of Music, which you unadvisedly terme Pyping: that is it wyll most byte you, what so is a ouerstay of life, is displeasent to your person: Musik may not stand in your presence, whereas all the learned Philosophers haue alwayes had it in reuerence. Homer commendeth it highly, referring to the prayses of the Gods whiche Gosson accompteth folishnesse: Looke vpon the harmonie of the Heauens? hange they not by Musike? doe not the spheares moue? the *primus motor* gouerne. Be not they *inferiora corpora* affected *quodam sympathia* and agreement? Howe can we measure the debilitie of the patient



but by the disordered motion of the pulse? is not man worse accompted of when he is most out of tune? is there any thinge that more affecteth the sence? doth there any pleasure more acuat our understanding? Can the wonders that hath wroughte and which you yourselſe confesse no more moue you? it fitteth well nowe that the learned haue sayd, *musica requirit quiescentem animam*, which since it is far from you, no maruel though you fauor not that profession. It is reported of the Canelion that shee can chaunge her selfe unto all coollors saue whyte, and you can accompte of all thinges saue such as haue honesty. Plutarch your good Mayster may bare me witnes, that the end whereto Musick was, will prooue it praycs worthy, O Lorde! howe maketh it a man to remember heauenly thinges, to wonder at the works of the Creator. Eloquence can stay the souldiars sworde from slayinge an Orator, and shall not Musike be magnified which not onely saueth the bodye but is a comfort to the soule? Dauid reioyseth, singeth, and prayseth the Lorde by the Harpe, the Simbale is not remoued from his sanctuary, the Aungels syng *Gloria in excelsis*. Surely the imagination in this present instant, calleth me to a deepe consideration of my God. Looke for wonders where Musicke worketh, and where Harmonie, is ther foloweth incredible delectation: the bowels of the earth yeld, where the instrument soundeth, and Pluto cannot keepe Proserpina if Orpheus recorde. The Seas shall not swallowe Arion whilst he singeth, nether shall hee perish while he harpeth, a doleful tuner yf a diing musition can moue a monster of the Sea, to mourne, a Dolphin respecteth a heauenlye recorde: Call your self home therefore and reclayme thys follve, it is to foule to bee admitted, you may not mayntaine it.

I hadd well hoped you woulde in all these thynges haue wiselye admytted the thyng, and disalowe naughte but the abuse; but I see your mynde in your wrytinge was to penn somewhat, you knowe not what, and to confyrme

it I wot not howe; so that your selfe hath hatched us  
 an Egge yet so that it hath blest us wyth a monstrous  
 chikkin both wythoute hedde, and also tayle. lyke the  
 Father, full of imperfection and lesse zeal. Well marke  
 yet a lyttle more, beare with me though I be hytter, my loue  
 is neuer the lesse for that I haue learned of Tallye, that  
*Nulla remedia tam faciunt coloru. q. 19. q. 1. sunt sal teris.*  
 the sharper medycine the better it cures, the more you see  
 your follye, the sooner may you amende it. Are not the  
 straines in Musike to tickle and delygnt the eare? are not  
 our warlike instruments to moue men to valour? you confesse  
 they mooue us, but yet they delight not our eares, I pray  
 you whence grew that poynt of Philosophy? it is more than  
 euer my Mayster taught mee, that a thyng of sounde should  
 not delygnte the eare. Belyke yce suppose that men are mon-  
 sters, without eares, or else I thynke you will saye they heare  
 with their heeles: it may bee so, for in deede when we are  
 delighted with Musike, it maketh our heart to scryp for  
 joye, and it maye bee perhaps by assending from the heele  
 to the hygher partes, it may moue us. Good policie in sooth,  
 this was of your owne coyning your mother neuer taught it  
 you: but I wyll not deale by reason of philosophye wyth you  
 for that confound your sences, but I can assure you this one  
 thinge, that this principle will make the wiser to mislike your  
 inuention. It had bene a fitter jest for your howler in your  
 Playe, then an ornament in your booke: but since you wrote  
 of Abuses we may licence you to lye a little, so the abuse will  
 be more manifest. Lord, with how goodly a cote haue you  
 clothed your conceiptes, you abound in storyes but imperti-  
 nent, they bewray your reeding but not your wisdom: would  
 God they had bin well aplyed. But now I must play the  
 Musitian right nolesse buggs now come in place but pauions  
 and mesures, dumps and fancies; and here growes a great  
 question, What musick Homer used in curing the diseased  
 Gretians? It was no dump you say, and so think I, for that is

not apliable to sick men, for it fauoreth Malancholie. I am sure, it was no mesure, for in those days they were not such good dansers; forsoth then what was it? If you require me, if you name me the instrument, I wyl tel you what was the musik. Mean while a God's name, let us both dout, that it is no part of our saluation to know what it was, nor how it went? when I speak wyth Homer next, you shall knowe his answere.

But you can not be content to erre, but you must main-  
tain it to. Pithagoras, you say, allowes not that Musik is  
decerned by eares, but hee wisheth us to assend unto the  
sky, and marke that harmony. Surely thys is but one doctors  
opinion (yet I dislike not of it) but to speake my conscience,  
mythinks Musike best pleaseth me when I heare it, for other-  
wise the catterwalling of Cats, were it not for harmonie,  
should more delight mine eies than the tunable voyces of men.  
But these things are not the chiefest poynts you shote at,  
thers somewhat els sticking in your stomak, God graunt it  
hurt you not! From the daunce you runn to the pype, from 7.  
to 3. which if I shoulde add I beleue I could wrest out half  
a score inconueniences more out of your booke: Our pleasant  
consortes do discomfort you much, and because you lyke not  
thereof, they are discomendable. I haue heard it is good to  
take sure fotinge when we trauel unknowen countrys; for  
when we wade aboue our shoe latchet, Appelles wyl repre-  
hende us for coblers; if you had bene a father in Musick and  
could have decerned of tunes I would perhaps have likt  
your opinion sumwhat where now I abhor it; if you wear a  
professor of that practice I would quickly perswade you that  
the adding of strings to our instrument make the sound more  
harmonious, and that the mixture of Musike maketh a better  
concent. But to preach to unskillfull is to perswad the brut  
beastes. I wyl not stand long in thys point although the dig-  
nitye thereof require a volume, but howe learned men haue  
esteemed this heauenly gift, if you please to read you shall

see. Socrates in hys old age will not disdain to learn the science of Musik among children, he can abide their corrections to, so much accounted he that which you contemn, so profitable thought he that which you dislik. Solon will esteeme so much of the knowledg of singing, that he will soner forget to dye then to sing. Pithagoras likes it so wel that he will place it in Greace; and Aristoxenus will saye that the Soule is musik. Plato (in his booke *De Lege*) will affirme, that it can not be handled without all sciences; the Lacedemonians and Cretensis wer sturred to warre by Anaxestus ffoote; and Timotheus with the same incensed kinge Alexander to late, yea, yf Boetyus fitten not, on Tanromitanus by this Phrygian sound hastened to burn a house wher a strumpet was hidden: so little abideth this heavenly harmony our humane finlines, that it worketh wonders, as you may perceue most manifestly by the history of Agamemnon, who going to the Trojan war, left at home a musirian that playde the Dorian tune, who with the foote *Spentius* preserved his wife Clitemnestra in chastity and honesty, wherfore she cold not bee deflowred by Ægistus, before he had wickedly slain the musician. So that as the magnetes draweth iorne, and the Theanides (which groweth in Ægypt) driueth it away, so Musik calleth to itselfe all honest plesures, and dispelleth from it all vaine misdemanors. The matter is so plentiful that I cannot find wher to end, as for beginnings they be infinite, but these shall suffice, I like not to long circumstances wher les doe serue, only I wish you to accompt wel of this heavenly conceit, which is full of perfection proceeding from aboue, drawing his original from the motion of the stars, from the agrement of the planets, fro the whisteling winds, and from al those celestial circles, where is ether perfitt agreement or any *Strophica*.

But as I like Musik, so admit I not of thos that degraue the same: your Pipers are so odious to mee as yourselve, nether alowe I your harpinge merve beggars: although I knewe you my selfe a professed play maker, and a paitry

actor, since which the windmil of your wit hath bin tornd so long wyth the wynde of folly, that I fear me we shall see the dogg returne to his vomit, and the clensed sow to her myre, and the reformed scholemayster to hys old teaching of follye. Beware it be not so, let not your booke be a blemish to your own profession. Correct not Musik therefore when it is praiseworthy, lest your worthlesse misliking bewray your madnes; way the abuse and that is matter sufficient to serue a magistrates animaduersion.

Heere may you aduise well, and if you have any stale rethorik flourish upon thys text, the Abuse is, when that is applyed to wantonnesse, which was created to shewe Gods worthinesse. When the shamefull resorts of shameles curtezanes, in sinful sonnets, shall prophane vertue, these are no light sinnes, these make many good men lament, this causeth parents hate there right borne children: if this were reformed by your policie I should esteme of you as you wysh. I feare me it fareth far other wyse, *latet arguis in herba*, under your fare show of conscience take heede you cloake not your abuse; it were pittie the learned should be ouerseene in your simplenesse. I feare me you will be politick with Machavel, not zealous as a prophet. Well I will not stay long upon the Abuse, for that I see it is to manifest, the remembraunce thereof is discomendable among the godly, and I myself am very loth to bring it in memory. To the wise aduised Reader these mai suffice, to flee the Crocodel before hee commeth, lest we be bitten, and to auoyde the abuse of Musik, since we se it, lest our misery be more, when we fall into folly. *Ictus piscator sapet*, you heare open confession, these Abuses are disclaimed by our GOSSEX, he is sory that hee hath so leudlye liued, and spent the oyle of his perfection in unsauery lampes; he hath Argus eyes to watch him now, I would wish him beware of his Islington, and such like resorts: if now he retourne from his repented lyfe to his old folly, Lord, how foule will be his

fall! Men know more then they speak if they be wise, I feare me some will blushe that readeth this, if he be bitten. Would God, Gosson at this instant might haue a watchman, but I see it were needelesse, perhaps he hath *Os diuina*, and then what auayleth their presence.

Well, I leaue this poynt til I know further of your mynde, mean while I must talke a little with you about the Thyrd Abuse, for the cater cosens of Pypers, theyr names as you terme them; be Players, and I thinke as you doe, for your experience is sufficient to enforme me: but here I must loke about me, *quarante a tiger's claws* &c. here is a task that requireth a long treatise, and what my opinion is of Players ye now shall plainly perceue. I must now search my wits, I see this shall passe through many seuerer sensors handling, I must aduise me what I write, and write that I would wysh. I way wel the seriousness of the cause, and regarde very much the iudges of my endence, whom if I could I would perswade, that I would not nourish abuse, nether mayntaine that which be an universall discredite. I hope they wil not judge before they read, nether condemne without occasion. The wisest will alwaies carry to eares, in that they are to discerne two indifferent causes. I meane not to hold you in suspence / seuerer Judges, if you greatly expect my verdit brefely this it is.

Demosthines thought not that Phillip should overcome when he reprov'd hym, nether feared Cicero Antonies force, when in the Senate he rebuked hym. To the ignorant each thinge that is unknowne seemes unprofitable, but a wise man can forsee and prayse by prooffe. Pythagoras could spy oute in women's eyes two kind of teares, the one of greife the other of disceit; and those of judgement can from the same flower suck honey with the bee, from whence the spyder I mean the ignorant take their poison. Men that haue knowledge what Comedies and Tragedis be, wil comend them, but it is sufferable in the folish to reprove that they know not,

becaus ther monthes will hardly be stopped. Firste therfore, if it be not tedious to GOSSEX to harken to the lerned, the Reder shal perceiue the antiquity of Play-making; the inuentors of Comedies, and therewithall the use and comodi-tye of them. So that in the end I hope my labor shall be liked, and the learned wil soner conceue his folly. For Tragedies and Comedies, Donate the gramarian sayth, they wer inuented by lerned Fathers of the old time to no other purpose, but to yeelde prayse unto God for a happy haruest, or plentiful yeere. And that thys is trewe, the name of Tragedye doth importe, for if you consider whence it came, you shall perceiue (as Jodocus Badius reporteth) that it drewe his original of *Træqns. Hircus, et Odæ, Cuntus*, (so called) for that the actors thercof had in rewarde for theyr labour, a gotes skynne fylled wyth wyne. You see then that the fyrste matter of Tragedies was to give thankes and prayses to GOD, and a gratefull prayer of the countrymen for a happy haruest, And this I hope was not discommendable, I knowe you will judge is farthest from abuse. But to wade farther, thys fourme of inuention being found out, as the dayes wherein it was used did decay, and the world grew to more perfection, so the witt of the younger sorte became more riper, for they leauing this fourme, inuented an other, in the which they altered the nature but not the name; for, for sonnets in prayse of the gods, they did set forth the sower fortune of many exiles, the miserable fal of haples princes, the ruinous decay of many coutryes; yet not content with this, they presented the liues of Satyers. So that they might wiselye under the abuse of that name, discover the follies of many theyr folish fellow citesens. And those monsters were then, as our parasites are now adayes: suche, as with pleasure reprehended abuse. As for Commedies, because they bear a more plesanter vain, I will leaue the other to speake of them. Tulley defines them thus, *Comedia* (saith he) is *imitatio ritæ, speculum consuetudinis, et imago veritatis*; and

it is sayde to be termed of *Comai*, amongste the Greekes  
 which signifieth *Pagos*. and *Ol.* *Comos*; for that they were  
 exercised in the field, they had their beginning with trage-  
 dies, but their matter was more plessaunt, for they were  
 suche as did reprehend, yet *quodam lepore*. These first very  
 rudly were inuented by Susarion Bulbus, and Magnes, to  
 auncient poets, yet so, that they were maruolous profitable  
 to the reclaimyng of abuse: whereupon Eupolis with Cra-  
 tinus, and Aristophanes, began to write, and with ther elo-  
 quenter vaine and perfection of still dyd more stoutly speak  
 agaynst the abuses then they: which Horace himselfe wit-  
 nesseth: nor, sayth he, ther was no abuse but these men  
 reprehended it; a therē was litle to be seene one there  
 spectacle, a coward was neuer present at theyr assemblies,  
 a backbiter abhorred that company, and I my selfe could not  
 haue blamed your Gossion nor exelting y<sup>e</sup> archdeacon from this  
 theater; of troth I shoulde haue lykt your policy. These  
 therefore, these wer they that kept men in awe, these  
 restrayned the unbridled cominaltie, whereupon Horace  
 wisely sayeth.

Oderunt peccare boni, virtutis amore:

Oderunt peccare mali, feruidine p<sup>e</sup> enae.

The good did hate al sinne for vertues loue:

The bad for feare of shame did sin reuena.

Yea would God our realme could light vppon a Lucilius.  
 then should the wicked bee paynted out from the good, a  
 harlot woulde seeke no harbor at stage plaies, lest she should  
 here her owne name growe in question: and the discourse of  
 her honesty cause her to bee hated of the golly. As for  
 you, I am sure of this one thing, he would paint you in your  
 players ornaments, for they best becam you. But as these  
 sharpe corrections were disanulde in Rome when they grewe  
 to more licenciousnes: so I fear me if we should practise it in



our dayes, the same intertainmente would followe. But in ill reformed Rome what Comedies now? A poet's wit can correct, yet not offend. Philemon will mitigate the corrections of sinne, by reprovuing them couertly in shadowes, Menandar dare not offend the Senate openly, yet wants he not a parasite to touch them priuely. Terence wyl report the abuse of harlots under there proper stile, but he can finely girde them under the person of Thais. Hee dare not openly tell the rich of theyr couetousnesse and seuerity towards their children, but he can controle them under the person of Durus Demeas. He must not shew the abuse of noble yong gentilmen under theyr owne title, but he wyll warne them in the person of Pamphilus. Will you learne to knowe a parasite? Looke upon his Dauus. Wyl you seke the abuse of courtly flatterers? Behold Gnato. And if we had some Satericall Poetes nowe a dayes to penn our Comedies, that might be admitted of zeale, to discypher the abuses of the worlde in the person of notorious offenders, I knowe we should wisely ryd our assemblYES of many of your brotherhod.

But because you may haue a full scope to reprehende, I will rip up a rablement of Play makers, whose wrightinges I would wishe you ouerlooke, and seeke out theyr abuses. Can you mislike of Cecillius? or dispise Plinius? or amend Neuius? or find fault with Licinius? Wherein offended Actilius? I am sure you can not but wonder at Terrence? Will it please you to like of Turpelius? or alow of Trabea? You muste needs make much of Ennius: for ouerloke al these, and you shal find ther volumes ful of wit if you examin them; so that if you had no other masters, you might deserue to be a Doctor, wher now you are but a folishe Scholemaister: But I wyll deale wyth you very freendlye, I wil resolue eueri doubt that you find, those instruments which you mislike in playes grow of auncient custome, for when Rossius was an Actor, be sure that as with his teares he moued affections, so the Musitian

in the Theater before the entrance, did mornefully record it in melody (as Seruius reporteth). The actors in Rome had also gay clothing and euery mans aparel was apliable to his part and person. The old men in white, the rich men in purple, the parasite disguisedly, the yong men in gorgeous coulours, ther wanted no deuise nor good judgement of the Comedy, where I suppose our Players, both drew ther plaies and fourme of garments. As for the appointed dayes wherin Comedies were shoven, I reede that the Romaines appoynted them on the festiual dayes in such reputation were they had at that time. Also Jodocus Badius will ascertain you that the actors for shewing pleasure receued some profite. But let me apply those dayes to ours, their actors to our players, their autors to ours. Surely we want not a Rossius, nether ar ther great scarsity of Terrence's profession, but yet our men dare not nowe a dayes presume so much as the old Poets might, and therfore they apply ther writing to the peoples vain wheras, if in the beginning they had ruled, we should now adaies have found smal spectacles of folly. But (of truth) I must confess with Aristotle, that men are greatly delighted with imitation, and that it were good to bring those things on stage, that were altogether tending to vertue: all this I admit, and hartely wysh, but you say unlesse the thinge be taken away the vice will continue: Nay, I say, if the style were changed the practise would profit, and sure I thinke our theaters fit, that Ennius seeing our wanton Glicerium may rebuke her. If our Poetes will now become seuere, and for prophane things write of vertue, you I hope shoulde see a reformed state in those thinges; which I feare me yf they were not, the idle hedded commones would worke more mischief. I wish as zealously as the best that all abuse of Playinge weare abolished, but for the thing, the antiquitie causeth me to allow it, so it be used as it should be. I cannot allow the prophaning of the Sabaoth. I praise your reprehension in that, you did well in discommending the

Abuse, and surely I wysh that that folly wer disclaymed, it is not to be admitted, it maks those sinne, which perhaps if it were not, would have binne present at a good sermon. It is in the Magistrate to take away that order, and appoynt it otherwyse. But sure it were pittie to abolish that which hath so great vertue in it, because it is abused. The Germanes, when the use of preaching was forbidden them, what helpe had they I pray you? Forsoth the learned were fayne couertly in Comedies to declare abuses, and by playing to incite the people to vertues, when they might heare no preaching. Those were lamentable dayes, you will say, and so thinke I, but was not this I pray you a good help in reforming the decaying Gospel? You see then how Comedies (my seuere Judges) are requisit both for ther antiquity, and for ther commoditie, for the dignity of the wrighters, and the pleasure of the hearers. But after your discrediting of Playmaking, you salue uppon the sore somewhat, and among many wise workes there be some that fitte your vaine: the practice of parasites is one, which I meruel it likes you so well, since it bites you so sore. But sure in that I like your judgement, and for the rest to, I approue your wit, but for the pigg of your owne sow, (as you terme it) assuredly I must discommend your verdit: Tell me Gosson was all your owne you wrote there? did you borow nothing of your neyghbours? Out of what booke patched you out Cicero's Oration? Whence fet you Catulin's Inuectiue. Thys is one thing, *alienam olet lucernam, non tuam*; so that your helper may wisely reply uppon you with Virgil:

Hos ego versiculos feci: tulit alter honores.

I made these verses, others bear the name.

Beleue me I should preferr Wilson's. Shorte and sweete if I were judge, a peece surely worthy prayse, the practice of a good scholler: would the wiser would ouerlooke that, they

may perhaps cull some wisdom out of a player's toy. Well, as it is wisdom to commend where the cause requireth, so it is a poynt of folly to praise without deserte. You dislike Players very much, theyr dealings be not for your commodity. Whom if I myghte aduise, they should learne thys of Juuenal.

*Viuum est recte, cum propter plurima, tum his  
Praecipue causis, vt linguas mancipiorum  
Contemnas. Nam lingua mali pars pessima serui.*

We ought to leade our liues aright,  
For many causes moue.  
Especially for this same cause,  
Wisdom doth us behoue,  
That we may set at nought those blames,  
Which seruants to us lay,  
For why, the tongue of euil slaue  
Is worst, as wisemen euer say.

Methinks I heare some of them verifing these verses upon you; if it be so that I hear them, I will concele it; as for the statute of apparrell and the abuses therof, I see it manifestly broken, and if I should seeke for example, you cannot but offend my eyes. For if you examine the statuts exactly, a simple cote should be fitted to your backe. We bereue you of your brauerye, and examine your auncestry, and by profession in respect of that statute, we should find you cater cosens with a, (but hush) you know my meaning: I must for pitie fauor your credit in that you weare once a scholler.

You runne farther to Carders, Dicers, Fencers, Bowlers, Dausers, and Tomblers, whose Abuses I wold rebuke with you, had not yourself moued other matters. But to eche I say thus, for Dicing, I wyshe those that know

it not, to leaue to learn it, and let the fall of others make them wiser. Yf they had an Alexander to gouern they shold be punished, and I could wish them not to abuse the lenitie of their Prince. Cicero for a great blemish reputeth that which our gentilmen use for brauery, but *sufficit ista leniter attigisse*. A word against Fencers, and so an end: whom I wysh to beware with Demonax, lest admitting theyr fencing delightes, they destroy (with the Athenians) the alters of peace, by raying quarrellous causes, they worke uprores: but you and I reprove them in Abuse, yet I (for my part) cannot but allow the practice so it be well used; as for the filling of our gracious princes cofers with pence, as it pertaineth not to me, because I am none of her receiuors, so men think unlesse it hath bine lately you haue not bene of her Maiesties counsel. But now here as you begin folishly, so surely you end unlernedly. Prefer you warre before peace? the sword before the goune? the rule of a Tyrant before the happy days of our gracious Queen? You know the Philosophers are against you, yet dare you stand in handy grips wyth Cicero: you know that force is but an instrument when counsell fayleth, and if wisdom win not, farewell warre. Aske Alphonsus what counsellors be lyketh of? hee will say, his bookes; and hath not I pray you pollicy alwaies ouer-mastered force? Who subdued Hanibal in his great royalty? He that durst knock at Rome gates to haue them opened is nowe become a pray to a sylly senator. Appius Claudius *et senex et caecus*, a father full of wisdom can releue the state of decaying Rome. And was it force that subded Marius? or armes that discovered Catulin's conspiracies? Was it rash reuendg in punishing Cethegus? or want of witt in the discoverye of treason? Cato can correct himselfe for traouelling by sea, when the land profereth passage, or to be fole hardy in ouermuch hazard. Aristotle accompteth counsell holye, and Socrates can terme it the key of certentye. What shal we count of war but wrath, of battel but hastines, and if I

did rule (with Augustus Caesar) I woulde refuse these coun-  
 selers. What made the oracle I praye you accompt of Cal-  
 chas so much? Was it not for his wisdom? Who doth  
 not like of the gouerner that had rather meete with *Unum*  
*Nestorem* then *decem Ajaces*? You cannot tame a Lyon  
 but in tyme, neither a Tigres in few dayes. Counsell in  
 Regulus will, preferring the liberty of his country before  
 his lyfe, not remit the deliuery of Carthaginian captiues.  
 Hannibal shall flesh himselfe on an olde man's carcas, whose  
 wisdom preserued his citye. Adrian with letters can  
 gouerne hys legions, and rule peasablye his prouinces by  
 polecye. Aske Silius Italicus what Peace is? and he will say,

*Pax optima rerum,*

*Quas homini nouisse datum est: pax una triumphis*  
*Innumeris potior: pax, custodire salutem*  
*Et ciues æquare potens.*

No better thing to man did nature  
 Ever giue then peace,  
 Then which to know no greater ioy  
 Can come to our encrease:  
 To foster peace is stay of health,  
 And keeps the land in ease.

Take counsell of Ouid, what sayth he?

*Candida pax homines, trux decet atra feras.*  
 To men doth heauenly peace pertaine,  
 And currish anger fitteth brutish vaine.

Well as I wish it to haue continuance, so I praye God  
 wyth the Prophet it be not abused, and because I think my  
 self to haue sufficiently answered that I supposed, I conclude  
 wyth this: God preserue our peaceable Princes, and confound  
 her enemies: God enlarge her wisdom, that like Saba she  
 may seeke after a Salomon: God confounde the imaginations  
 of her enemies, and perfit his graces in her, that the

daies of her rule may be continued in the bonds of peace,  
that the house of the chosen Isralites may be mayn-  
teyned in happinesse: Lastly, I frendly bid  
Gosson farwell, wyshinge him to  
temper his penn with more  
discretion.

*FINIS.*

AN  
Alarum against Vsurers.

Containing tryed experien-  
ces against worldly  
abuses.

Wherein Gentlemen  
may finde good counsells to confirme them,  
and pleasant Histories to delight them:  
and euery thing so interlaced with  
varietie: as the curious may be sa-  
tisfied with rarenesse, and the  
curteous with plea-  
sure.

Heerevnto are an-  
nexed the delectable historie of Forbo-  
nius and Prisceria: with the lamen-  
table Complaint of Truth o-  
uer England, Written by Tho-  
mas Lodge, of Lincolnes  
Inne, Gentleman.

O Vita! misero longa, fælici breuis.

\* \*  
\*

Imprinted at London by  
T. Este, for Sampson Clarke, and are  
to be sold at his shop by Guyld Hall.

1584.





.

*To the Right worshipfull, Sir Philip Sidne Knight,  
indued with all perfections of learning, and  
titles of Nobilitie: Thomas Lodge, Gen.  
wisheth continuance of honour, and  
the benefits of happie Studie.*

It is not (noble Gentleman) the titles of Honour that allureth me, nor the nobilitie of your Parents that induceth me, but the admiration of your vertues that perswadeth me, to publish my pore travailes under your undoubted protection. Whom I most humbly intreate, not onely in so just a cause to protect me, but also in these Primordia of my studies, after the accustomed prudence of the Philosophers, to confirme with favourable acceptaunce, and continuaunce, as the equitie of the cause requireth. I have set downe in these fewe lines in my opinion (Right Worshipfull) the image of a licentius Usurer, and the collusions of divelish incrochers, and heereunto was I led by two reasons: First, that the offender, seeing his owne counterfaite in this Mirrour, might amend it, and those who are like, by overlavish profusenesse, to become meate for their mouths, might be warned by this caveat to shunne the Scorpion ere she devoureth.

May it please your Worshippe to favour my travailes, and to accept my good will; who encourageth by the successe of this my firstlings, will heereafter in most humble signe of humanitie continue the purpose I have begunne, commending the cause and my service to your good liking: who, no doubt compassed with incomperable vertues, will commend when you see occasion, and not condemne without a cause.

Yours Worships in all dutie to commaund,

*Thomas Lodge.*

•

To the Right worshipfull, my curteous friends, the  
Gentlemen of the Innes of Court, Thomas  
Lodge, of Lincolnes Inne, Gentleman,  
wisheth prosperous successe in  
their studies, and happie  
event in their trauailes.

Curteous Gentlemen, let it not seeme straunge unto you, that hee which hath long time slept in silence, now beginneth publikely to salute you, since no doubt, my reasons that induce me hereunto be such, as both you may allowe of them, since they be well meant, and account of them, since they tend to your profit. I have published heere of set purpose a tried experience of worldly abuses, describing heerein not onely those monsters which were banished *Athens*, I meane Usurers, but also such devouring caterpillers, who not onely have fatted their fingers with many rich forfeitures, but also spread their venim among some private Gentlemen of your profession; which considered, I thought good in opening the wound to prevent an ulcer, and by counselling before escape, forewarn before the mischief. Led then by these perswasions, I doubt not, but as I have alwayes found you favourable, so now you will not cease to be friendly, both in protecting of this just cause from unjust slander, and my person from that reproch which, about two yeares since, an injurious caviller objected against me: you that knowe me, Gentlemen, can testifie that neyther my life hath bene so lewd, as that my companie was odious, nor my behaviour so light, as that it shuld passe the limits of modestie: this notwithstanding, a licentious *Hipponax*, neither regarding the asperitie of the lawes touching slaunderous Libellers, nor the offspring from

whence I came, which is not contemptible, attempted, not only in publike and reprochfull terms to condemn me in his writings, but also so to slander me, as neither justice shuld wink at so hainous an offence, nor I pretermit a commodious reply. About three yeres ago, one *Stephen Gosson* published a booke, intituled *The Schoole of Abuse*, in which having escaped in many and sundry conclusions, I, as the occasion then fitted me, shapt him such an answer as becomed his discourse; which by reason of the slendernes of the subject, (because it was in defence of plaies and play makers) the godly and reverent that had to deale in the cause, misliking it, forbad the publishing: notwithstanding he, comming by a private unperfect coppye, about two yeres since made a reply, dividing it into five sections, and in his Epistle dedicatory, to the right honorable, Sir *Frances Walsingham*, he impugneth me with these reproches, that I am become a vagarant person, visited by the hevy hand of God, lighter then libertie, and looser then vanitie. At such time as I first came to the sight heerof, (judge you gentlemen how hardly I could disgest it) I bethought my selfe to frame an answer, but considering that the labour was but lost, I gave way to my misfortune, contenting my selfe to waite that opportunitie wherein I might, not according to the impertinacie of the injurye, but as equitye might countenance mee, cast a raine over the untamed curtailes chaps, and wiping out the suspition of this slander from the remembrance of those that knew me, not counsell this injurious *Asinius* to become more conformable to his reportes. And now, Gentlemen, having occasion to passe my travailes in publike, I thought it not amisse somewhat to touch the slaunder, and proving it to be most wicked and discommendable, leave the rest to the discretion of those in authoritie; who, if the Gentleman had not plaid bo peep thus long, would have taught him to have counted his cards a little better. And now, *Stephen Gosson*, let me but familiarly reason with thee thus. Thinkest thou that

in handling a good cause it is requisite to induce a fals proposition? although thou wilt say it is a part of Rethorike to argue *A Persona*, yet it is a practise of small honestie to conclude without occasion: if thy cause wer good, I doubt not but in so large and ample a discourse as thou hadst to handle, thou mightest had left the honor of a gentleman inviolate. But thy base degree, subject to servile attempts, measureth all things according to cavelling capacitie, thinking because nature hath bestowed upon thee a plausible discourse, thou maist in thy sweet termes present the sowrest and falsest reports thou canst imagine: but it may be, that as it fortun'd to the noble man of *Italy*, it now fareth with me, who as *Pet\_r\_arch* reported, given greatly to the intertainment of strangers and pleasure of the chase, respected not the brave and gorgious garments of a courtier, but delighted in such clothing as seemed the place where he sojourn'd. This noble gentleman returning on a time from his game, found all his house furnished with strangers, on whom bestowing his accustomed welcome, he bent himself to the overseeing of his domestical preparation, and comming to the stable among the hors keepers of his new come guests, and reprehending one of them for faulting in his office, the fellow, impatient of reproofe, and measuring the gentleman by his plaine coat, stroke him on the face, and turned him out of the stable; but afterward attending on his master, and perceiving him whom he had stroken to be the Lord of the house, he humbly craved pardon: the gentleman, as patient as pleasant, not only forgave him the escape, but pretely answered thus:—I blame not thee, good fellow, for thy outrage, but this companion, pointing to his coate, which hath made thee mistake my person. So at this instant esteeme I *M. Gosson* hath dealt with me, who not mesuring me by my birth, but by the subject I handled, like Will Summer striking him that stood next him, hath upbraided me in person, when he had no quarrell but to my cause, and therein pleaded his owne in-

discretion, and loded me with intollerable injurie. But if with *Zo[i]lus* hee might kisse the gibet, or with *Patacion* hop headlesse, the world shoulde bee ridde of an injurious slaunderer, and that tongue, laboured in suppositions, might be nailed up, as *Tullies* was, for his *Philippicall* declamations. But good *Stephen*, in like sorte will I deale with thee, as *Philip of Macedon* with *Nicanor*; who not respecting the majestie of the king, and giving himselfe over to the petulancie of his tongue, vainly inveighed against him, whom, notwithstanding, *Philip* so cunningly handeled, that not onely he ceased the rumor of his report, but also made him as lavish in commending, as once he was profuse in discommending. His attempt was thus performed: he seeing *Nicanor* sorely pressed with poverty, releevd him to his content; whereupon, altering his coppie, and breaking out into singular commendation of *Philip*, the king concluded thus: Loe! curtesie can make of bad good, and of *Nicanor* an enimie, *Nicanor* a friend. Whose actions, my reprovcr, I will now fit to thee, who having slaundered me without cause, I will no otherwise revenge it, but by this meanes, that now in publike I confesse thou hast a good pen, and if thou keepe thy Methode in discourse, and leave thy slanderiug without cause, there is no doubt but thou shalt bee commended for thy coppie, and praised for thy stile. And thus desiring thee to measure thy reportes with justice, and you, good Gentlemen, to answere in my behalfe if you heare me reproched, I leave you to your pleasures, and for my selfe I will studie your profit.

Your loving friend,

*Thomas Lodge.*

.

Barnabe Rich, Gentleman Souldier, in praise of the  
Author.

If that which warnes the young beware of vice,  
And schooles the olde to shunne unlawfull gaine,  
If pleasant stile and method may suffice,  
I thinke thy travaile merits thanks for paine,  
My simple doome is thus in tearmes as plaine:  
That both the subject and thy stile is good,  
Thou needs not feare the scoffes of Momus' brood.

If thus it be, good Lodge, continue still,  
Thou needst not feare Goose sonne, or Gander's hisse,  
Whose rude reportes part from a slaundrous quill,  
Will be determind but in reading this,  
Of whom the wiser sort will thinke amis,  
To slaunder him whose birth and life is such,  
As false report his fame can never tuch.

John Jones, Gentleman, in praise of the Author.

Though not my praise, yet let my wish prevaile,  
Who so thou be that list to read this booke;  
I never yet by flatterie did assaile,  
To count that good that most did please my looke;  
But alwaies wisht my friends such stile to use,  
As wise might like, though foolish would refuse.

In opening vice my friend who spends his time,  
May count by private good no profit lost,  
What errors scape in young and lustie prime,  
Experience (badge of truth) may quickly cost.  
Who sets the marke that makes men shunne the sand,  
Deserves good words, his proofes for profit stand.

For common good to crosse a few men's vaines,  
Who, like to Midas, would that all were golde,  
I count not misse, since there unlawfull gaines  
Makes some men sink, whom birth might well uphold.  
I know the sore, the scarre is seene to plaine;  
A blessed state where no such wils doo raine.

In brieft, I praise this booke for pretie stile,  
For pithie matter; Gentle, be thou judge.  
O, would my wish some fancies might begile,  
Then faire revenewes should not fit a snudge.  
A world to see how Asses daunce in golde  
By wanton wils, when Gentles starve for colde.

Whose errors if it please succeeding age  
To see with sighs, and shun with sad advice,  
Let him beholde this booke, within whose page  
Experience leaves her chieftest proofes of price.  
And thanke the youth that suffered all these toiles,  
To warne thee shun that rocke which many spoiles.



Gentlemen, since the presse cannot passe without escape, and some things are so mistaken, as without correction they will be very grose, may it please you when you read to correct, especially, such principall errorrs as these that followe.

Folio 30. b. Line 4. For woed, Read wonne.

Folio eod. Line 8. For colde, Read cloudes.

Folio eod. Line 15. For showde, Read shoard.

Folio eod. Line 30. For concluding, Read concluded.

Folio 31. a. Line 34. For presents a secrets meete,  
Read with seemly secret greete.

For the rest I referre them to your discretion, who can distinguish coulours, and either better, or fit words to your fantasies,

Your friend:

THOMAS LODGE.

## An Alarum against Usurers.

No marvell though the wise man accompted all things under the sun vain, since the cheefest creatures be mortall; and no wonder though the world runne at random, since iniquitie in these later dayes hath the upper hand. The alteration of states, if they be lookt into, and the overthrow of houses, if they be but easely laid in open viewe, what eye would not shed teares to see things so transitorie, and what wisdom would not indeavour to dissolve the inconvenience?

There is a state within this our common wealth, which though it necessarily stand as a pillar of defence in this royall realme, yet such are the abuses that are growen in it, that not onely the name is become odious by somes error, but also, if the thing be not narrowly lookt into, the whole land by that meanes will grow into great inconvenience. I meane the state of Merchants, who though to publyke commoditie they bring in store of wealth from forrein nations, yet such are their domesticall practises, that not onely they enrich themselves mightelye by others misfortunes, but also eate our English gentrie out of house and home. The generall facultie in it selfe is both auncient and lawdable, the professors honest and vertuous, their actions full of daunger, and therefore worthy gaine; and so necessary this sorte of men be, as no well governed state may be without them.

But as among a tree of fruite there bee some withered fallings, and as among wholesome hearbes there growes some

bitter colloquintida, so it cannot be but among such a number of Marchaunts there shoulde bee some that degenerate from the true name and nature of Marchaunts. Of these men I write, and of none other: my invective is private; I will not write generall: and were it not I respected the publyque commoditie more then my private prayse, this matter shoulde have slept in hugger mugger. Of these ungracious men I write, who having nothing of themselves, yet greedelye graspe all things into their owne handes.

These be they that finde out collusions for statutes, and compasse lande with commoditie: these bee the boulderers of ungracious pettie brokers; and by these men (the more is the pittie) the prisons are replenished with young gentlemen. These bee they that make the father carefull, the mother sorrowfull, the sonne desperate: these bee they that make crooked straight, and straight crooked; that can close with a young youth while they cousen him, and feede his humoures, till they free him of his farmes. In briefe, such they bee that glose most fayre then, when they imagine the worst, and unlesse they bee quicklye knowen, they easelye will make bare some of the best of our young heires, that are not yet stayed: whome zealouslye I beseech to overlooke this my writing; for what is sette downe heere, eyther as an eye witnesse I will avowe, or informed even by those gentlemen who have swallowed the gudgen and have bene intangeled in the hooke, I have approvedlye sette downe.

Such bee those sorte of men, that their beginning is of naught, sette up by the devotion of some honest Marchauntes, of whome taking up their refuse commoditie, they imploye it to this ungodly and dishonest purpose.

They finde out (according to theyr owne vayne) some olde soaking undermining solicitour, whom they both furnish with money and expence to sette him foorth, and gette him more creditte: this good fellowe must haunte Ordinaryes, canvasse up and downe Powles, and as the catte watcheth the praye

of the mouse, so dilygentlye intendes hee to the compassing of some young novice, whome by fortune eyther hee findeth in melancholyke passions at the Ordinarye, or at pennilesse devotion in Powles, or perhappes is brought acquaynted with him by some of his owne brotherhoode. Him he handeleth in these or such lyke tearmes, both noting place and circumstance.

Gentleman, why bee you so melancholye? How falleth it out that you are not more lyghtsome? Your young yeares, mee thinkes, shoulde loathe such sollome aspectes. I maye not anye waye imagine a cause why you shoulde bee pensive: you have good parentes; you want no friendes; and more, you have lyvely hoodes: which considered, trulye you committe meere follye to bee so mervaylouslye sadde and wonderfullye sorrowfull, where you have no occasion.

If you want money, you have creditte, (a gift which who so ever injoyeth nowe a dayes, hee is able to compasse anye thing) and for that I see so good a nature in you, (if proffered service stinke not) I will verye willynglye (if so bee you will open your estate to me) further you in what I may; and perhaps you shall finde your selfe fortunate in falling into my companie.

The young Gentleman, unacquainted with such like discourses, counting all golde that glysters, and him a faithfull frend that hath a flattering tongue, opens all his minde to this subtill underminer, who so wringeth him at last, that there is no secrete corner in the poore Gentleman's heart, but he knoweth it. After that, framing his behaviour to the nature of the youth; if he be sad, sober; if youthly, riotous; if lascivious, wanton; he laboureth so much, that at last the birde is caught in the pit-fall, and perceiving the vaine of the youth, he promiseth him some reliefe by his meanes. The young Gentleman, thinking he hath God Almightye by the heele, holdes the Divell by the toe, and by this meanes is brought to utter wracke and ruine. The Broker, furnished

of his purpose, having learned the Gentleman's name, lodging, want and wealth; and finding all things correspondent to his purpose, hies him to his setter up, who rejoyceth greatly at his good happe, and rewards this wicked seducer with a peece of gold. To be briefe, at first issue, on the Gentleman's bonde, this broking knave receives fortie or fiftie poundes of course commoditie, making him beleewe that by other meanes monie maye not be had, and swearing to him, that there will be great losse, and that he could wish the Gentleman would rather refuse then take. But the youth, not esteeming the losse, so he supplye his lacke, sets him forward, and gives the willing jade the spurre; who finding all things meate in the mouth, makes sale of this marchaundize to some one of his greatest fraternitie, and if it be fortie, the youth hath a good peniworth if in ready money he receive twentie pound, and yet the money repayable at three moneths ende. The Broker in this matter getteth double fee of the Gentleman, tribble gaine in the sale of the commoditie, and more, a thousand thankes of this devillish Usurer.

Truly, Gentlemen, it is wonderfull to conceive (yet are there some of you can tell if I lie) how this sicophant that helpt our youth to get, now learneth him to spend. What, saith he, my young master, what make you with this olde satten doublet? it is soilde; it is unfit for a gentleman's wearing: apparell your selfe as you shoulde bee, and ere fewe dayes passe, I will acquaint you with as brave a dame, a friend of mine, as ever you knew. Oh, how sweete a face hath she! and thus dilating it with rethoricall praises, to make the Gentleman more passionate, it falleth out that the mand fawlcen stoops to lure, and all things are fulfilled according to his Broker's direction. Promises are kept on both partes, and my youth is brought acquainted with Mistres Minxe. This harlot is an old beaten dogge, and a maintainer of the brothell house brotherhoode, a stale for young novises, and a limme of Sathan himselfe, whose behaviours and jestures

are such as the world cannot imagine better: if the Gentleman weepe, she wil waile: if he sorrow, she will sigh: if he be merrie, she will not be modest. To conclude, her lesson is so taught her as she can reckon without booke. Lorde! what riotousnesse passeth in apparell, what lavishnesse in banketting, what loosenesse in living, and in verie short space our youth, which was fligge, is now at leake; his purse is emptie, and his mistres begins to lowre; which he perceiving, and earnestlye bent to continue his credit with his curtisan, comes to his ungracious broker, whom with faire termes he desireth, and with humble suites more earnestlye beseecheth to further his credite in what hee may. Who, seeing which way the hare windeth, begins to blame him for his liberalitie, and yet only is the cause of his spending; and after a few privie nippes, bearing shew of good meaning, but yet indeed his way is to trie conclusions, he hasteth to the principall, his good master Merchant, whom he findeth altogether prompt and redy at a becke to send abroad his refuse commoditie for crackt angels. What conclusion is betweene them both may easily be imagined, but the end is this: the broker returns to my solitarie youth, and recountes unto him first, to make him feareful, how many places he hath ben at, when he hath not visited one; how many he hath desired, yet how few are redie to plesure: at last he breketh out and telleth him the whole, assuring him that he is to think wel of his master Scrape-penie, the usurer, who is willing, in hope of his wel dooing, to let him have once more of his incommodious commodity upon reasonable assurance. To be briefe, the bargain is quickly beaten out; the broker laieth the losse, the gentleman esteemeth not so his need be served, the Merchaunt laughs at his folly in his sleeve; and to conclude, the bonds are delivered, the cursed commoditie received. And at this second mart how speeds our younker, think you? Perhaps of 50 pounds in ware, he receiveth 30 pounds in ready money, and yet the money repayable at three months' end.

O, incredible and injurious dealings! O, more than Judai-call cousonage! Truly, gentlemen, this that I write is true: I my selfe knowe the paymaster; naie, more, I my selfe know certainly that by name I can reckon among you some that have ben bitten, who, left good portions by their parents, and faire lands by their auncestors, are desolate now, not having friends to releve them, or money to affray their charges. A miserable and wretched state is this, full of inconvenience, when such eie sores are not seene in a common weale, when such abuses are winked at, when such desolation is not perceived; and wonderfull it is that among so many goodly lawes, made for the administration of justice, ther be none found out for these covetous malefactors. Purchased arms now possess the place of ancient progenitors, and men made rich by young youth's misspendings doe feast in the halls of our riotous young spend thrifts.

It will be answered, it is the gentlemen's owne folly, and I graunt it; yet of their folly who should beare the blame? Truly the bier, who having experience to cousin, might also have conscience to forbear them: nay, among the rabblement of such as we find to have falne in their youth, how many experienced men find we at yeares of discretion, who having only the name of gentrie left them to promote them to honor, and finding no releefe any way, are inforced either in forren countries to end their lives miserably, or desperatly? Some more ungratious are a pray for the gallows, choosing rather to die with infamie then to live to beg in miserie. But to leave this to his place, and to return from whence we have digressed.

Our gentleman, having got new supplie, is pricked on to new sinne, and the minister of the devil, serving at his elbow, perswades him to new change; for varietie, saith he, is marvelously to be admitted of, especially in such causes: and withall bringes him a new gamester, a wittie worldling, who more cunningly can handle him then the first, and hath more

shifts of descant for his plain song, (but this by the way is to be noted that the broker hath his part of the gaines with the curtesan, and she cosins for them both) this minion so traineth our seduced youth in folly, as not only himselfe is at her command, but also his substance remaineth to her use. This high prised commoditie is imploied to the curtisan's bravery, and she which makes him brutish in behavior doth empty his replenished purse. Thus the eie of reson is closed up by sensualitie, and the gifts of nature are diminished by the disordinate usage of bestly venery. Supplies are sought for every way by this wicked broker to bring him to ruine, and to work his utter confusion. Thus, thus, alas! the father before his eies, and in his elder yeres, beholdeth as in a mirror the desolation of his owne house, and hearing of the profuseness of his ungratious sonne calleth him home, rebuketh him of his error, and requesteth an account of his money misspended. Hee (taught and instructed sufficiently to coulour his follie by his ungodly mistres, and cursed misleader) at his returne to his father maketh shewe of all honestie, so that the olde man, lead by naturall affection, is almost perswaded that the truth is untruth: yet remembring the privie conveiaunce of his youthly yeares, and deeming them incident to his young sonne, he discourseth with him thus.

O, my sonne! if thou knewest thy father's care, and wouldest aunswere it with thy well dooing, I might have hope of the continuance of my progeny, and thou be a joy to my aged yeres. But, I feare me, the eyes of thy reason are blinded, so that neither thy father's teares may perswade thee, nor thine owne follies laide open before thine eyes reduce thee, but that my name shall cease in thee, and other covetous underminers shall injoye the fruites of my long labours. How tenderly, good boye, in thy mother's lyfe wast thou cherished! How deerely beloved! How well instructed! Did I ever entice thee to vice? Nay, rather enforced I thee



not to love vertue? And whence commeth it that all these good instructions are swallowed up by one sea of thy follie? In the Universities thy wit was praised, for that it was pregnant; thy preferment great, for that thou deservedst it; so that, before God, I did imagine that my honour shuld have beginning in thee alone, and be continued by thy offspring; but beeing by mee brought to the Innes of Court, a place of abode for our English gentrie, and the onely nurserie of true lerning, I finde thy nature quite altered, and where thou first shuldest have learnt law, thou art become lawlesse. Thy modest attire is become immodest braverie; thy shamefast seemelynes to shamelesse impudencie; thy desire of lerning to loitering love; and from a sworne souldier of the Muses, thou art become a master in the universitie of love; and where thou knowest not anie waie to get, yet fearest thou not outrageously to spend. Report, nay, true report, hath made me privie to many of thy escapes, which as a father though I cover, yet as a good father tenderly I will rebuke. Thy portion by yeare from me is standing fortie pounds, which of it selfe is sufficient both to maintaine you, honestly and cleanly: besides this, you are growne in arrearages within this two yeares no lesse than 100 pound, which, if thou wilt looke into, is sufficient for three whole yerres to maintaine an honest familie. Now, how hast thou spent this? forsooth in apparell; and that is the aptest excuse, and lavishnesse in that is as discommendable as in anie other. If in apparell thou passe thy boundes, what make men of thee? A prodigall proude foole; and as many fashions as they see in thee, so manie frumpes will they afford thee, counting thee to carrye more bombast about thy belly, then wit in thy head. Naye, my sonne, muse not uppon the worlde, for that will but flatter thee, but weigh the judgement of God, and let that terrefie thee; and let not that which is the cause of pride nussell thee up as an instrument of God's wrathfull indignation. What account reapes a young

man by brave attire? Of the wise he is counted riotous; of the flatterer a man easily to be seduced; and where one will afford thee praise, a thousand will call the proud. The greatest reward of thy braverie is this,—See, yonder goes a gallant young gentleman: and count you this praise worth ten score pounds? Truly, sonne, it is better to be accounted wittie then wealthy, and righteous then rich: praise lasteth for a moment that is grounded on shewes, and fame remaineth after death that proceedeth of good substaunce. Choose whether thou wilt bee infamous with Erostratus, or renowned with Aristides: by one thou shalt beare the name of sacrilege, by the other the title of just: the first may flatter thee with similitude, the last will honour thee indeede, and more when thou art dead. Sonne, sonne, give eare to thy father's instructions, and grounde them in thy heart; so shalt thou be blessed among the elders, and be an eye sore unto thy enimies. A second griefe, nay more, a corasive to my heart (young man) is this: you are both prodigall in apparell and in life, and ungratious and ungodly curtisans (as I understand) are become the mistresses of your masterships: and thinkest thou this report could come to thy father's eare and not grieve him? Sonne, I had rather thou shouldest be accounted foolish then amorous; for the one may be borne withall, the other is most odious. Incontinencie (young man) is the root of all inconvenience: it dulleth the memorie, decayeth the bodie, and perisheth the bones: it maketh stedfast fickle, beautifull deformed, and vertuous vicious: it impayreth man's credit, it detracteth from his honour, and shortneth his daies. A harlot's house is the gate of hell, into the which whosoever entereth his vertues doe become vices, his agilitie is growne to slouthfulnesse, and from the child of grace he is made the bondslave of perdition. The wisest by lewde love are made foolish, the mightiest by lust are become effeminate, the stoutest monarches to miserable mecockes. I wot well (my child) that chast love is necessarie, but I know (my sonne)

that lecherie is horrible: a harlot's wanton eie is the lure of the diuell, her faire speeches the snares of sin, and the more thou delightest in her companie, the more hepest thou the wrath of God against thy selfe. Let Lais looke never so demurely, yet Lais is Lais: measure not thy liking by lookes, for there be some holy diuells. To bee briefe, the end is this: he is best at ease that least meddeleth with anie of them. Demosthenes will not buie repentaunce so deere as with high summes to purchase transitorie pleasures; and I had rather thou shouldest learne of a philosopher then bee instructed by thine owne fancie. Marke this action: there is no vertue which is odious after it is attained to; but the pleasures of love are then most loathsome when they are determind, and therefore no vertues, and, to conclude, not to be sought after. It is idlenesse, my sonne, that seduceth thee, for the minde that is well occupied never sinneth. When thou enterpriseth anie thinges, measure thine owne fortune by other men's sucresse: as thou considerest of theyr ends, so imagine of thine owne. Thinke with thy selfe, the wisest have fallen by love, as Salomon, the richest as Anthonie, the proudest as Cleopatra, the strongest as Sampson; and by how manie degrees they did exceede thee, by so many circumstaunces prevent thy ruine. It is enough for sillie birdes to be lead by the call of the fowler, and for men it is most convenient to flye apparaunt goods, and sticke to that which is indeede. Though thine eie perswade thee the woman is beautifull, yet let thy experience teach thee she is a curtisan; and wilt thou esteeme of painted sepulchres; when thou knowest certaine and determind substaunces? Doe we buie ought for the fairenesse or goodnesse? Spangled hobbie horses are for children, but men must respecte things which be of value indeede. I imploie my money uppon thee, not to the use thou shouldest be lewde, but for that I woulde have thee learned. It greeveth mee to heare of thy companie keeping, for where thou offendst in the two formost,

thou art altogether misledde in this; and truelye I cannot but mervayle at thee, that beeing borne reasonable to make election, thou art so untoward in picking out thy choice. Agree light and darkenesse? Or the Icknewmon with the Aspis? Doeth the weezell love the cockatrice? Or gentle borne such as bee ungratious? No, my sonne, broking bugges are not companions for continent courtiers; for who so eyther accompanyeth them is eyther accounted a spende thrifte, or one that is Sir John Lackelande, eyther of their fraternitie, or else a verie foole.

Finde me out anie of them that in thy adversitie will helpe thee, or in thy misdemeanors advise thee: nay, such they are as will rather binde thee prentice with Sathan, than exhort thee to eschew sinne. They bee the caterpillers of a common weale, the sting of the adder, nay, the privie foes of all gentrie; and such they be that if they get, they care not how ungodly; and if they cousen, they care not how commonly. So that three vices have now taken hold of thee: first prodigalitie, the enimie to continencie; next, lasciviousnesse, the enimie of sobrietie; and thirdly, ill company, the decayers of thy honestie. The meanes to avoide these evils are manifest, but they must be followed: it is not sufficient to knowe a fault, but it is wisdom to amend it. Humble thy heart, my sonne, to the Highest, and the more thou considerest of him, the lesse wilt thou care for this flesh; for what is the body better by the gay rayment? truly, no more then the soule is by superfluous zeale, for as the one is foolish, so is the other franticke. Leave lust, least it lose thee: use chaste delights, for they will comfort thee: it is better driving a toye out of memorie by reading a good lesson, then by idlenesse to commit an error which is sawced with repentaunce. Of needlesse evils make no accompt: the lesse you accompany the worst, the more wil you be sought to by the best. Easie it is to say well, but the vertue is to doo well. O, my dear childe, as

thy frend I exhort thee, and as thy loving father I command thee to consider the tender care I have of thee, and to imploy all thy indeuours now to my comfort: if thou hast runne awry, call thy selfe home, and waye within thy heart the reward both of vertue, and the discredite by vice; so the honour of the one will incite thee, the infamy of the other will deterre thee. For those debts that have over past thee, in hope of amendement I will see them satisfied, and if heereafter thou fall into the lyke lurch, I promise thee this, that as now I deale with thee as a father, so then will I accompt of thee as a reprobate. Thou seest fire and water before thee; chuse to thy liking: in dooing well, I will rejoyce in thee, in dealing otherwise, I will nothing account of thee.

The father, with teares having ended this exhortarie, is aunswered in humble sort of his dissembling sonne thus.

Whatsoever (good father) is passed is irrecoverable, but what is to come may be considered of: it is naturall in me to fall, and vertuous to recover my selfe. I confesse, good sir, I am guiltie of errour, and have faulted highlye; yet not so creatiye as you intimate. The world now a dayes is rather bent to aggravate then to cover escapes. Wherefore as the first step to amendement is repentance, so (deare father) I am sorrie for that is past, and most earnestly request you to continue your favour, and no doubt but your sonne shall behave himselfe heerafter to your comfort.

The father, delighted with his sonnes discrete and humble aunswere, conceiveth hope of amendment, and returneth him to the Innes of Court againe, and setting him on free foote, exhorteth him to follow vertue, and intently to long after learning. But he, whose heart was pliable to receive all impressions, no sooner is out of the view of his father's house but began to forget his olde promises, and renewes the remembrance of his mistresse, devising by the way how to delight her, and what sutes to provide that may satisfie her. To bee briefe, being returned to London, and quit of his

father's servants, (the newes of his arrivall being blazed abroad) his Broker in post hast comes and salutes him, his mistresse by tokens and sweete letters greetes him, hee maketh his Marchant joyfull in the receipt of the money, and mistresse Minxe merrie for the returne of her young copes-mate.

To be briefe, in post hast he posteth to her chamber, where, Lord! what frendly greetings passe, what amorous regards! how she blameth him of his delaye, and with fained teares watereth his youthly face! how she sweares that she is constant, and yet a curtesan! howe she vowes she is continent, and yet common! Truly, it were matter to make a Comedie on, to see both their actions, and to note their discourses. There needes not many or long sermons on this: master Broker's help in short space is sought for; for the money my youth's father gave him hath bought his mistresse a sute of the new fashion. The Broker, readie at a becke, without delay furnisheth him with money: it is lamentable to report every losse; and sith in another place I meane to set them downe, I will not motion them heere. In short space our Marchant beginneth to looke after more assurance; and where to fore he was content with obligation, he now hunteth after statutes. (This kind of bond, gentlemen, is well knownen among you: the usurers by this time have built mannor houses upon some of your lyvelihoods, and you have lost that for little, which will not be recovered with much.) The force whereof our youth considering not, so he have foyson of money, the world, to be short, at the last falleth out thus: both land, money, and all possibilities, either by father or friende, are incroched upon by this gentle master Scrape-peny, so that now our youth, finding neither suretie nor similitude, by his flattering Usurer is laid up close for escaping. Let him write to his huswife, mistresse Minxe, she disdaineth him: let him intreate the Broker, he refuseth him: let him make sute to the Usurer, he saith hee shall not cousen him. Thus this gentleman, that neyther by his father's counsell

woulde refuse, nor by his owne experience be perswaded to avoyde the eminent daunger that hanged over his head, is brought to confusion, and those friends that fawned on him before in prosperitie, now frowne at him in his adversitie: those that depended with flattering words in time of wealth on his finding, now altogether disdain him that cannot finde himselfe.

Loe, gentlemen, what it is to winke at good counsell, and to preferre young attempts before old experience! See here the fruites of contempt, and lette these lessons serve you to looke into: had this gentleman regarded advice, had he considered of his estate, himselfe had bene at libertie, his friends in quiet. But (alas the while!) our heires now a dayes have running heads, which makes their parents abounde in teares: some are led with novelties in forreine nations: some with prodigalitie in their owne countrey: some with pride, the first fruites of all impietie: some by love, the ladie of loose-nesse. If one hunteth after vertue, how many hundreds doo dayly practise vice? Let the experience of this young novice (my youthly countrey men) make you warie, and see but unto this one parcell of his lyfe, and give your judgement of his misfortune. His wit was sufficient to conceive vertue, yet knowing (with Medea) the best, he headlong came to the worst. Nature's gifts are to be used by direction: he had learning, but hee applied it ill: he hadde knowledge, but hee blinded it with selfe opinion. All graces whatsoever, all ornaments what so they be, either given us by our foreparent, or grafted in us by experience, are in themselves as nothing, unlesse they be ordered by the power of the most Highest. What care, conceive you, may be comparable to this young gentleman's father's sorrow, who seeth his house pluckte over his head, his sonne imprisoned, to his great discredite, and the Usurer the onely gainer, and yet the most vilest person.

Nowe, what becommeth of our youth, thinke you? His

father refuseth him, disposseſſing the ryghte heyre of what hee maye, and poore hee is left desolate and afflicted in prison. And in these dayes how many are infected with this desperate disease, gentlemen, judge you. I my selfe with teares have heard some privie complaints, and lamented my friends misfortunes, falne so sodainly. My good friends, that are heerafter to enter into this world, looke in this glasse: it will show you no counterfait, but the true image of a rebellious sonne, and the rewarde of contempt of parents. Account your selves happie to learne by others experience, and not to be partakers of the actuall sorrowe. Obey your parents, for they love you; trust not to straungers, for they will upbraide your of their benefite: it is better to have the stripes of a friend, then the kisses of a flatterer. Plato would have young men to looke in the glasse for two causes; the one, that if they founde themselves beautyfull in visage and of exquisite stature, they might indevor to make the vertues of their minde aunswerable to the liniaments of the bodie; the other, that if they found themselves of deformed shape, they should seeke to beautifie the same by the inward perfections of the minde. And for two causes, my good friends, woulde I wish you to consider of this man's fall, and read his misfortune; the one that not being yet nipped, you may prevent; the other, that being but yet a little galled, you woulde holde backe.

*Est virtus placidis abstinuisse bonis.*

As the loadstone draweth yron, so let good counsaile conquere your affections: as the Theamides of Aegypt driveth awaie yron, so let the feare of God dispell all worldly pleasures. If a simple man fall to decay, it may be borne withall: if a man of wisdome grow in arrearages, may we not blame his follie? It is better to bee envyyed then pittyyed, for thou art pittied alwayes in misfortune, but envied at time of thy prosperitie. To bee briefe (gentlemen) overlooke this ad-



visedly, and you shall finde many things worthy the noting, and no few matters written for your commoditie. This miserable young man, overwhelmed thus on everie side with manifolde and sundry cares, beholding his most unfortunate state, in wofull termes, in the prison house, breketh into these complaints.

Alas! unhappie wretch that I am, that having a good father that did cherish me, a tried mother that tenderly nourished me, many friends to accompanie me, faire renewes to inrich me, have heaped sorrowe on my owne head by my father's displeasure, refused of my friends for my misde-meanour, and dispossessed of my land by my prodigalitie. O, incestuous lust! that enterest the hart and consumest the bones, why followed I thee? And O, ungodly pleasure! why didst thou flatter me? O, wicked and ungracious man, that hast undone me, and woe be unto thee, (vile wretch) that in my miserie doest thus leave me! What shall become of me, poore wretch? faine now would I begge that bread, which vainlye I have spent: now too too late doo I see that fainednesse is no faith, and he that trusts to this world cleaves to a broken staffe. Alas! how should I attaine to libertie, or by what meanes may I escape my confusion? My father hath accepted of another sonne, and all by reason of my lewdnesse. O, that I had respected his unfained teares! O, that I had accepted of his good advice! O, that I had rejected my flattering friends! But I see no hope is lefte to me: my creditour is too cruell, yet hath he cousoned me; and faine would I be his slave, woulde he release me; but since no hope is lefte me of recoverie of my estate, I referre my cause to God, who as he will remit my offence, so will he redresse my miserie and grieve.

Whilest in these, or such like tearmes, the poore young man bewayles his heavie happe, sodainly enters his cousoning creditour; and in outward shew bewailynge his misfortune, but in very truth the onely originall cause of

his destruction, comforteth him in these, or such like termes.

Gentleman, the exigent and extremitie that you are now at, though it be most tedious unto you, it is most lamentable in my opinion. These young yeeres to taste of sorrowe so soone is straunge, considering all circumstaunces; but since the cause proceedes of your owne lewd misspending, mine be be the losse in part, but the greter must your affliction be. I, hoping of your well dooing, neither denied your pleasure nor profit, yet in liew and recompence of all, I finde just nothing: a few subscribed papers I have, and some money I have receyved, but nothing to my principall; and yet notwithstanding, so favourable wil I be unto you, as if you procure me any one suretie, I will release you. To leese my money I were loath, and to keepe you heere it were more loathsome. I wold doo all for the best, not hindering my selfe, so you would straine your selfe to satisfie me somewhat.

The gentleman, knowing in himselfe his inability, be-ginneth in truth to open his state, protesting that neither of himselfe, nor by any one at the present he is [able] to doo any thing; no, not so much as if he released him to pay his charges; such is his miserie, in that all his frends had given him over, whereupon most humbly he beseecheth him to way his cause, promising him any service what so ever may be, if so he wil please him to set him free. Mas. Usurer, smelling out the disposition of the youth, beginnes to bring him to his bowe after this sort.

The world at these dayes is such, (my friende) as there is small respect had of those which have nought, and great honour attributed unto them that will most neerly looke to themselves: which I perceiving, have given my selfe (as naturally men are inclined to seeke after glory) to the hoording up of riches, to the end that my posteritie might be raised up, and my father's name (which as yet is of no accompt) might by my meanes become worshippfull. To the

performance of this, trulye, I have neither been idle nor evill occupied: my thoughts have beene wholly set of gettings, and who so nowe a dayes hath not the like meaning, his purpose will grow to small effect. And though of my selfe I doo what I may, yet (as it is necessary) I must have ministers, wherby that which I looke for may be brought to my hands: otherwise my stocke might lye without usaunce, to my utter undoing. Whereupon, if thou wilt followe my direction and be ruled by my counsell, I will release thee of prison, and set thee at libertie, restore thee to thy wonted credite, and countenaunce thee with my coyne, so that in shorte space thou maist have money in thy pursse and other necessities to set thee up againe. Thou seest that now thou art miserable, but I will make thee fortunate: thou now art almost foodlesse, by me thou shalt be satisfied with the best: thy friends now disdaine thee, the day shall come that they shall seeke to thee: now art thou without aparell, through me thou shalte bee costlye attired: naye, what pleasure soever thou shalt either imagine for thy preferment, or wish for to doo thee good, thou shalt both finde me readie to performe it, and friendly to continue it.

The gentleman, surprised with this sodaine joye, and unacquainted good speeches, (not dreading that the serpent laye hidden in the grasse) most willinglye assented, promising to the adventure of his lyfe (so his creditour woulde be his wordes master) to doo his indeavour to perfourme his will, as hee ought to doo. The Usurer, seeing the minde of his prisoner preciselye bent to doo his commaunde, openeth his heart unto him thus.

Gentleman, for that I have an opinion of your honestye, and truste in your secrecye, I will open unto you my minde, and according as I finde your aunswere, I will shape your deliveraunce. Such time as you were at libertie, you know you had acquaintaunce with manye gentlemen, and they not of the meanest, who at sometimes, as well as

yourselfe, were destitute of silver. Such as those you must finde out for me. I will delyver you presentlye; apparayle you in print, give you money in your pursse, and at such an Ordinarye shall you lye, where the greatest resorte is. Your behaviour and usage towardes all men must be verye honest; especiallye in all causes looke into the nature of men. If you spie out any one gentleman pensive, enter into discourse with him: if you maye perceive that either by parentage or possession hee is worthie credite, laye holde on him, feede him with money if he want, and (as though it proceeded of your own good nature) profer him to be bound for him: if he accept your offer, come to me; I will furnish him. Nowe, you may devide the commoditie or the money between you, and out of your part (considering me after the bignesse of the summe) take the rest for your owne fee; which, if you looke into, in a yeaere will growe unto no small summe. This is the load-stone must lead you; and by all meanes you must fashion your selfe to feede humours. This is the honest meanes to lyve by: this is a way to libertie: by this you may pleasure your selfe, and conclude in doing this you maye mightilye in short space enrich me. When you have found out one fit to your vaine, remember this lesson, that what so-ever vauntage you get of him, either for me or for your self, care not how little paper and inke he can shewe of yours: keepe still your owne stake cleere. In these matters you must be verie circumspect, for there be now a daies such underminers start up, that scarce a man can imagine his owne profit, but they preach it a broad, and laye it open. Thus you see wherto you must trust: howe saye you now? will you be content to do this?

The young man aunswereth: Good sir, there is nothing that you have sayde that by mee shall anie wayes be forgotten. I am readie and willing to put in practise what you have taught, and no doubt you shall finde me so diligent that your selfe shal say, you were happie in putting me in trust.

In briefe, the conclusion is this: the Usurer, glad of this new gentleman broker, dischargeth him, sets him afloat. Now who so brave as our late prisoner, or who so frolicke? The olde sorrowes are forgotten, and new inventions to cousin possesse the receptacle of his reason. His olde acquaintance flocke about him, some rejoycing at his recovered libertie, some wondering at his sodaine braverie, yet few suspecting his pretended and hidden knaverie. Of them some he saluteth humblye, some ordinarilye: he was not so well instructed, but it is as well performed. Now who but our gentleman is a companion for the best, and a cousiner of the most: he staies not long before he be provided of a praie, whom he so ordereth as himselfe is partaker of the halfe, though the other be paymaster of the whole; and as those who are in the heate and extremitie of an ague desire drink to satisfie their drought, so this young gentleman that is brought into bondes by one cousining spend thrift, having once entered foote in the high waie of prodigalitie, continueth headlong his course to his owne confusion.

But by the way it is to be noted, that this gentleman which is brought into the laps by our late prisoner, hath his possession and portion allotted to him, so that our Usurer and his mate worke upon sure groundes. Two or three obligations and commodities received, our Usurer grows to new devises, and sets his schollers to practise them. Saith he, I must now have you learne to bring in this your friend to paie your debtes, and by this meanes you shall bring it about. You shall, when next time he shall demaund your helpe, tell him that of me there will be had no money, before your olde bondes be canceled: so that unlesse he deale with me by some meanes to acquit that, it is impossible to attaine unto anie farther supplie. You may alleadge unto him, howe in such like extremities you have stucke, and will sticke unto him, and desire him in so easie a request he wil not leave you destitute. By this meanes shall you be rid of your olde

debts, and be as free from inconvenience as ever you wer. No sooner hath our seducer learnt this lesson, but forth he trudgeth to find out this young master, if possible may be: if so be he is as yet stored, he doth either make him spend it or lend it, and upon his new request of supply openeth unto him all the circumstance which before he had learned, and so cunningly handleth him, that the gentleman, desirous of money, is easilye content.

Whereupon the matter is handeled thus betwixt the merchaunt and this gentleman broker, to prevent inconvenience: if the broker's bond be an hundreth pounds, the merchaunt will lend fiftie more, and maketh the young man to seale an absolute bond as his owne debt, so that the desperate debte of the decayer, cousoned by his meanes, is brought to be the true debt of this silly gentleman. Naie, when they have fatted both their fingers, they leewe not thus, but from money shoote at land; for if the gentleman have 500 pound in stocke payable at 24 or 25 yeares, they will so worke as all that shall be their proper goods, which they will recover out of the executors hands, either by attachment or otherwise; and besides that so cunningly will they deale, that although they have sufficient assuraunce in hand alreadye, yet wil they not leave till they get an other more sure string to their bowe, therby to compasse the poore gentleman's lands.

At his want they will deale thus. This gentleman and the broker must bee invited by the merchant, when amongst other table talke, M. Scrape-penie feesles my youth if his monie be gone, and offering speeches of willingnes to provide him alwaies at his need, sets on, by a becke, his cousoning mate to procure the gentleman to crave more mony, which he doth. The merchant cunningly coulering his craft, answereth him thus.

Gentleman, you see I am far out already, and upon your single bond I have disburst a round sum of money, no lesse than 500 poundes, which in a poore man's purse, as I am, is no small quantitie: nevertheles, if you will affoord me farther

assurance, I wil not stick in redie mony once more to lend you 30 pounds. The gentleman, never tofore used to receive redy mony at the first hands, begins to yeeld him harty thanks, and humbly to pray him to demand and he will performe; for, saith he, considering your honest dealing, I cannot think you may imagine any resonable assurance which I wil not seale to. Why then, quoth the merchant, the matter standeth thus: if so be you will seale me an estatute for my mony, no sooner shall you have done it, but you shal have the mony, all your bonds in, and a defesance to: this that I offer is reasonable, and to morrow, if you will, I will doe it. Agreed, quoth the gentleman, and so takes his leave. The next morrowe, according to promise, the gentleman sealeth the assurance, acknowledging an estatute before some one Justice of the bench, and comming to his merchant's house for his money, is delaied for that day of, and in fine his absolute answere is this, that without a suretie he promised him none. He takes witsesse of his friend, (as he tearmeth him) a prety peece of witsesse! When he seeth no remedie, he demaundeth his bondes, and he withholdeth them: he craves his deceafance, and cannot have it. Thus is the poore gentleman brought into a notable mischief, first in being cousoned of his mony; next deluded by his estatute without defeasance, (for if the defeasance be not delivered the same time or daie the statute is, it is nothing available); thirdly, by his bonds detaining, which may be recovered against him, and continue in full force; and the Usurer that playes all this rie will yet be counted an honest and well dealing man. But flatter them who list for me, I rather wish their soules health, then their good countenances, though I knowe they will storme at me for opening their secrets, yet truth shall countenance mee, since I seeke my countries commoditie.

Heere you see two houses destroied manifestly, the one of them from a gentleman made a cousoner, the other of them from a landed man, a silly poore wretch. And wonderfull it

is to see, considering the asperitie of the penal statutes set downe by her Majestie and her honourable Peeres in the Parliament, how pretie collusions these conning merchants can find to infringe them. One private practise they have in deliverie of the commoditie, to make the condition of the obligation thus:—The condition, &c., is this, that if the within bound T. C., his heires, executors, or assignes, doe well and truely pay, or cause to be paide to the above named M. S. the sum of 40 pounds of lawful mony of England, at his owne dwelling house, scituated and being in Colman Street, which he the said T. C. standeth indebted to him for, if so be that the said M. S. or S. his wife be in life, that then; otherwise &c. Now in this condition the casual mart bringeth it out of the compasse of the statute. Thus by collusions M. Scrape-penie gathers up his money.

Others worke by statute and recognisaunce, making their debter to discharge in their bookes of account the receipt of so much money, where indeede they had nothing but dead commoditie. Other worke by lives; as if such a one live thus long, you shall give mee, during his or her life, 10 pounds a yeare for 30 pounds, and be bound to the performaunce of that by statute. Other some deale in this sorte: they will picke out among the refuse commoditie some pretie quantitie of ware, which they will deliver out with some money: this sum may be 40 pound, of which he will have you receive 10 pound readie money, and 30 pounds in commoditie, and all this for a yeare: your bonde must be recognisaunce. Now, what thinke you by all computation your commoditie will arise unto? Truely I my selfe knew him that received the like, and may boldly avouch this—that of that thirtie pounds commoditie there could by no broker be more made then foure nobles: the commoditie was lute stringes; and was not this, thinke you, more then abhominable usurie? Naie, common losses, and the reasonablest is, for 36 pound for three months, accounted a good penie worth, if there be made in



readie mony 20 pounds; naye, passing good, if they make 25 poundes; and I have knowen of fortie, but fifteene pound and tenne shillings. These be general payments and receits incident to the most part of the young gentlemen that I knewe deale that wayes: and truely I my selfe knowe within my time no few number of gentlemen which are utterly undone by this meanes, and unlesse this evill be prevented, and gentlemen take not more heede, more will followe after. But if the punishment of these men were *in discretione judicis*, notwithstanding the lawe were coloured with all by them, yet the conscience of the judge woulde cut such ill members off. In former ages, these things being knowen, were lookt unto, and now, when most punishment is menaced, usurie is most practised. Well may we now see that the craftie have as many cautiles as the discreet cautions. If we had as severe lawes in England as once in Athens Solon set downe, wee shoulde then cast a rayne over the head strong unrulynesse of these caterpillers: there it was not lawfull, the father beeing living, that anye money shoulde bee lent unto the sonne; who, beeing under his father's government, was not to bee ordered according to his owne lyking: and there, whosoever did transgresse this lawe, it was ordayned that hee might have no recoverye, nor bee releevd anye waye by justice, for it was doubted that the sonne having no wayes to aunswere that he did owe, should eyther be inforced by practising conjurations in the Citie, or exercising privie thefte in his Father's house, to ridde and discharge himselfe of the burthen of his debte.

The Aegyptians and Athenians, seeing the errour of covitious usurie to take footing in their provinces, by approved judgement concluded, that by no instrument, plea, execution, or other meanes in lawe a bodie might be detained; the originall beeing for corrupt gaines.

The Romanes, who not onely invented, but imitated those lawes which confounded errour, by decree of Senate with the

Athenians, in the very same termes as they didde. sette downe that no money should bee lent to young heyres uppon interest, neyther allowing the detinue pleadable, nor the usurie aunswerable, having a private eye into the unmeasurable and greedie intents of those covetous earles, who compasse the father's landes before the sonne come to it.

In the lawe of the Twelve Tables orders in this cause were prescribed, and directions set downe by the Tribunes: among whome a man of rare vertue, Lucius Gomatius, instituted and made a law, wherein he enacted that no usurie nor usurers shoulde bee allowed.

Lucius Lucullus, seeing this errour alreadye creapt thorough all Asia, and (lyke a wise governour) wylling to prevent, not onelye made a law to avoyde all occasion of unlawfull gaines, but also appoynted punishmentes to those that were subject to the errour.

Tiberius Cæsar, as curious as the rest for common good, didde, with as great circumspection as might bee, take awaye the cause, and displace the effecte of this mischiefe; not suffering that to take heade in his government, that was the capytall enemye of a well ordered state. Claudius Cæsar, not yeelding to his auncestours in honourable actions, renewed these lawes. Vespasian continued them, and Marcus Antonius Pius, with Alexander Severus, established them with publike instrumentes; who, to the fore-passed erroures, by farther insight joyned this, that by this unlawfull getting manye of the best and most auncient houses in all Italy were brought to utter ruyne and confusion.

The Indians, disdayning such servile attemptes, not onely mislikte of lending, but also forbad borrowing: neither is it lawfull for an Indian to proffer, nor agreeable for one of the nation to suffer injuries, disdayning among them both the use of oblygations, and the abuse of pawning.

Hatefull was this errour in Licurgus Common weale of

Sparta, whereas not onely the name was odious, but also the thing it selfe was asperlye punished.

Agis, king of the same citie, seeing the practises of the covetous to work so wonderfully as they seemed, not onely punished the attempters of unlawfull profite, but also in the open market place hee burnt all the bondes and oblygations of the rich Bankers in the citie.

In Thebes it was by statute forbidden, that anye man should be put in office, that within tenne yeares before the election had practised any unlawfull chaffering.

The Germanes, in theyr taxations of antiquitie, whereas they bound the theefe to restore double the thing he stole, they ordeyned that the usurer shuld make recompence foure folde for his injurie. And in borrowing the felicitie of all these countries, wee are not so happie as to abridge those errours that they most mislykt of. But heere, perhappes, some curyous maintainer of unnecessarie members will conclude that the state cannot anie wayes be hindered by anie these actions, inferring that the dissolution of one familie is the setting up of another, which in as many vertues maye match, and with as greate value imploie it selfe in the state as the other that is decayed.

Heereunto I shape this aunswere—that if it be true that the nobilitie of the father worketh in the childe, I cannot see howe these upstartes maye anie waies employe themselves in honourable actions, when as neither their auncestours ever knewe more then their beads, or their fathers other then unlawfull gaines: and howe can it bee, that where the minde onely worketh in servile subjects, it should anie waies be elevated to attempt honourable exploits? But be it these sorte of men are necessarie both in themselves and for their countrie, which cannot be concluded, in that they be broken members, yet must they conclude by (the touchstone of truth) the Scriptures that their necessarinesse in this world makes them unnecessary for God; by whose presidents if they

should leuell their lawes, I am afraid the graft wold be so stiffe in the bending, that it would be rather thought more necessarie for the fewell, then worthy the correction. In the most happiest man that ever was, whether philosopher or otherwise, I find this, that one onely blemish in his actions hath made them ben noted for an error. Now, if these men shuld in their enterprises be gazde into, I feare me that as in the black jet is seene no white, in the deadlye poison is founde no preservative, in the sprouting iwie no fruite, on the unnecessarie thistle no grapes, so in these men the mischiefe woulde be so manifest, that the shew of virtue would be extinguished. So that I can necessarily conclude this—that both these sorte of men are unnecessarie for themselves, unmeete for their countrey, unfit for a family, yea, convenient for nothing, but to present the painter with the true image of covetousnes. For themselves, how can they be profitable in destroying their soules, and martering their bodies? in consuming themselves with thought in divising of newe attemptes to delude? If they compare but their hearts' sorrow with their excesse of gain, they shall finde this most certain, that the encombrances of the minde are so peysant, that they doo by oddes weigh downe their commoditie in the ballaunce. What is it to get good, and to loose happinesse? to enjoye much riches and little rest? to have manye lordships, and much heart-breake? Alas! what are the goods of fortune, that they should entice, or the plesures of the flesh, that they should allure? If our stately pallaices were to continue permanent; if our worldly riches were to make our after yeares renowned; if every thousand of our ducates were to benefit us but with a hundred good precepts, I would beare with covetousnes with the best, and practise it with the most: but since we see that much hording cannot be without sinne, much getting without grieffe, much increase of goods without decrease of vertues, I cannot but conclude with the philosophers, that the hoording up of riches maketh many

impressions of vices; and that those that are no wayes profitable for themselves are not worthy the names of citizens in a state: whereas, when all things should be limited by vertue, how can usury be winkt at, when it is no way legitimate?

Our lawes in this state, although they suffer a commoditie, yet confirme not they taking, concluding heerein a mer-vaylous pollicye to those have in sight, which is that leaving it evident that where neither lawe of God can limit them, nor disposing of right suffer them, nor prevention of errours withdrawe them from punishing this error and not letting it slip, they, as willyng to pul away by peece-meales as to confound altogether, like wise surgions eate out the dead flesh by sundrye plaisters, and no sodaine corosive, thereby wisely warning the wise to pull back by curtesie, and the indurate, by beholding their forberance, to feare the scourge when it shal come.

Yet some will here adde and inferre (though unnecessarily) that those whom I heere so asperlye reprehend are as religious as the best, haunt the church with the most, at their buriall be as bountifull as the goodliest; and therefore it may not be thought, that seeing so many goods, they should follow the bad. To whom I aunswere—If they beare correction of sin by often haunting of sermons, yet continue their wickednesse when they know what it worketh, their actions are wicked, their lives dissolute, their endes desperate. For theyr bountie at their burialls, that is but their last action and their best attempt; but if we looke into the considerations of their benificence, I doubt not but we shall finde whereas their shooe wringeth them. If they are liberall to leave them a memorie when they are gone, alas! they strive against the streame; for this it will fall out: perhaps they will have a few poore women's praiers for their blacke gownes, but a thousand decayed gentlemen's curses for their high exactions. If they be bounteous in hope to recompense that which is past, alas! it is as much as to cast water to stoppe a

gappe, or gather brambles to builde manor houses. If they be lookt into in this their penie doale, we shall finde a kinde of impulsion in all thinges. Truely, truely, I feare mee, if Mas. Usurer knewe he shoulde live, hee had rather have a fayre pawne for his foure nobles, then a thousand prayers of a poore woman; and the forfeiture of a lease of his xx poundes, then the funerall epitaph of the universities for his last willes liberalitie.

Since, therefore, impulsion forceth them to be bounteous, not free will liberall, we must accompt them thus—that both they are unworthie praise, being unwilling to be bountifull, and little to be esteemed of, though their pretence bee never so perfect. What praise deserveth he that will proffer medicines to a whole bodie, or the spur to a willing horse, or the raine to an unwildie colt, or honor to a perverse man? shall we conclude because the usurer is rich, he is righteous? because wealthie, wise? because full of gold, therefore godly? I feare me it will fall out that some of our scrape penies are worthie to be delivered to perdition as Savanarola of Rome, (of whom Marabus maketh mention) who not satisfied with excessive gain in his life time, at his death became a prairie to divells. It grieveth me to consider of the unhappie state of some who, like fine cloth, are devoured with these moths; like white cambricke, are stained with this yron mould; and silly birds are deceived with the call of this fowler. O, unhappy state! stained with unprofitable members, whose feete tread the wayes of errours, mindes imagine mischeife, heartes are indurate, confounding the fatherlesse, oppressing the widow, making all poore, and themselves onely rich.

A lamentable case it is to see how true simplicitie, the maintainer of peace, is almost altogether exiled out of our common weale; and that worldlye wit doeth wade so farre, as heavenly wise are brought into admiration of their mischiefe. In other notable governments and common weales this one vice hath had a fall, and heere, where it should be most detested, it is most used. Great hath bene our wis-

domes in repression of conspiracies, great our policies in maintaining peace, circumspect our preventions to eschew mutinies; and yet the long time we have laboured in this, yet dayly more and more it groweth to head: and whereas the other vices have bene exterminated by good looking to, this (though altogether loathed) is most lookt after. And in this case I must appeale to you (right honourable) whose wisdom is continually employed to the maintenaunce of our state, and crave you cast your eye aside, and but looke into the worlde a lyttle. Lette your Herauldes Bookes be spied into; consider the state that hath bene and now is, and I feare me, there will some teares fall, and more care be conceived. Alas! I know it well, that many auntient coates will be found there uncountenaunced; and it is to bee found out that some sleepe on their beds of downe in those mannor houses, which were builded for the staye of some of our best seigniors. Nay, is it not true that more are eaten out with usury then anye other abuse whatsoever? And although commissions are graciously graunted from her Majestie, as a most mercifull prince, and from your honours, as most sage, fatherly, and prudent tenderers of gentry grown into povertie, yet such is the contempt of some men, as they neither measure commaund, nor have respect to conscience. The reverend fathers and eyes of religion in the common weale, how exclaime they on this vice, and pronounce the wrathfull threatres of the Almighty against these ungracious gatherers! yet how slenderly they regârd them, their manifest and notorious mischiefes beare record. So that it is to be feared, that when neither honourable commaund may controll them, nor divine admonition reclaime them, they are grown into a reprobate sense, and have forsaken the law of the Lord, and hunted after the whore, and are dronken with the lycour of her abominations.

*Principiis obsta, sero medicina paratur,  
Cum mala per longas invaluere moras.*

Noble Lords, may it please you a little more to give me leave, that as I have manifested the mischiefe so (to my slender conceit) I may imagine a salve. The nobilitie, gentrie, and other heires whatsoever, either by reason of their father's tenour are wardes unto her Majestie, or else by the tender provision of their parents they are lefte to the discretion of their kinsfolke. For those that by her Majesties prerogative, by the death of their fathers, fall into her protection, the most part of them are begged by gentlemen, and committed to their tuition: among whome, as there be some provident and carefull to consider of the childes commoditie, so (I feare me) other some are selfe minded, and greedie of their owne gaine; which if so be it fall out, I feare me, the childe that is under this government will happely miscarrie, for if the maintenance come from the protector slenderly, the nature of the youth beeing noble will covet after supplie, and so through the covetousnes of the one growes the confusion of the other; and by this meanes growes the gentleman unto the Merchant's booke in arrerages, when his warden furnisheth him not according to his degree and calling. But it may be, that there bee purposes imagined by the governour, and practised by the Merchaunt, so that the one will not bee pertaker of the shame, yet will he not sticke to beare part of the gaine.

But to let further matters wittingly overslip, for that I finde it good to winke at somewhat, returne we to the other sortes of heires, left in the tuition of friendes: among whome there growe lyke inconveniences as in the former; for nowe a dayes kinsfolkes are as covetous as others, and as craftye as the best, whose private conveyances the young heires knowe, and severallye, when they be sought into, will open. But for the ordering of all these thinges, and the recovering of this state, it were convenient that the Warden of the wardes under her Majesties protection, should, at the receit of the gentleman, be bound, according to the value, to



the honourable that have authoritie in that case, for the usage of the gentleman, and that certaine stipend might be set downe annuallye for his provision, rather with the most then least, so that then it will fall out that, having sufficient of his owne, he will not depend on the supplye of an other. The like animadversion, if it bee had in respect of the other, and the care of taking the bonds, and prefixing the portion set downe by the direction of certaine justices of peace in everie sheere, we should have lesse complaints to trouble your honours, and Merchants should want young ministers to ridde them of their refuse commoditie. I have glanced into the matter, (my good Lord) which if wisdome considerably looke into, there will growe an exquisite platforme.

These causes, right honourable, are necessarie and needfull to be noted, and such they be, that, no doubt, they will be as beneficiall to the state as any other whatsoeuer; for by this meanes your honours shall be praised, the Wardens well thought of, the gentlemen kept in good state, and the Merchant abridgde of his craftie dealings. I have heard this cause lamented of among the most part of that profession, who loth their title should be attributed to so outrageous dealers. If they will desire the name, let them use the nature, and let not the whole order be blemished by a few disordered dealers blame.

But to leave this to your honourable and grave consideration, and to returne to your curteous gentlemen, to whome this matter most pertaineth, and for whose onely cause this pain is taken, I most earnestly beseech you, looke into your owne states, and consider with your selves the misery and mischiefe that groweth by these follyes. Consider the end of all these practises, which the usurers doe put in ure: forsooth, it is to make you beggers, where now your supplyes be plentifull, and to emptie your purses, where now they are replenished: consider of their mercy; either it is imprisonment, or else libertie with more shame: weygh of their ends, agree-

ing to their life. It was a pretie and wittie saying which was written—

*Avaro quid mali optes ni ut riat diu.*

With a covetous man no more mischief, then that he may live long, for he dieth daily in care, and consumeth in thought. Refraine prodigalitie, so shall you have no need of them: bee continent, so shall you be sought to of them: leave them to their owne lusts, they are not of the Lord. Let your garments be comely, and not costly; for a comely continent man is more esteemed of than a costly spende thrifte accompted of. It is the vertues of your mindes, the perfections of your understandinge, your intellectuall contemplations, that makes you accounted of among the wise, and beloved among the learned. In your professions be studious, for y<sup>t</sup> brings profit: an houre well spent, is better than a dayes pleasure: eschew those things that may decay your memory, and in every good action continue to the end: trust not to apparant goodes; beleve not credulously the faire spoken; be as provident to eschew trouble, as the envious is prudent to procure your discomfort: looke on nothing that may altar you from a man; thinke on nothing that may mislead you: if you promise, performe it, but in promising use discreation. These be the fruites of experyence, learnt by some in sorrowe, and lette them bee practised by you in securitie. Let not the garish shew of a present pleasure, the sillie shadowe of an earthlye delyght, a transitorie similitude of a momentanye glorye, make you followe that which wyll coste you manye sighes and sundrye sorrowes, (when you looke into your state) and see howe you are compassed of friendes, smilde upon by fortune, beautified by nature, pe[r]fected by art, when you perceive care hath not yet forrowed your forehead. Labour even then to continue friendes, to make peace with fortune, to maintaine nature, to studye arte, and beeing freed as yet from trouble, fence your

actions so strong, as they may never become troublesome. Aurelius in his Court seeing certaine Philosophers using unseemely jestures, wagging their heads, toying wyth theyr garments, and stamping with their feete, gathering by their exterior behaviour how unapt their actions were in respect of their precepts, expulsed them the Court, as unmeete to be preferred to honours. Although not Marcus Aurelius, but wise *Saba*, now governing, think you that gracious Elizabeth cannot as well finde out a vain head under a waving feather, a dissolute minde under a codpeece dublet, a wanton thought under a straunge habite, as the Emperour under a lyght jesture. Yes, truely (Gentlemen): no doubt but that eie, that winketh at most things, seeth many, and that wonderfull capacitie, that comprehendeth so much discipline, cannot overslip the mislyke of masking braverie. If one error were as much banished England as it was in Rome, neither should idlenesse offer the covetous opportunitie, neither the idle be cousened by the covetous. It is idlenesse that maketh amorous, it is idlenesse that maketh fascionative, it is idlenesse that breedes excesse, it is idlenesse that destroyeth all humane happinesse. The eye fixed on heavenlye contemplations gazeth not on earthlie beautie; the thought occupied on remembrance of moral preceptes never vouchsafes the misdeemings of the fantasie; the bodie subdued by assiduous travaile is never altered by the motions of the flesh; the hope grounded on immortality hath not reference to an houres pleasure. So that man is never altered in himself, enemie of himselfe, procurer of his parents troubles, but even then chiefly when idlenes is predominant, folly preferred, and fashions to feed, fantasies allowed of. The meanes, then, to avoyd the Usurer's booke, is to be continent: the way to be continent is not to be idle: the reward of not beeing idle, is the daily increase of more knowledge; and the increase of more knowledge maketh a man happie. The sting of the aspe confoundeth in slumbers; the venome of idlenesse

waiteth carelesse opportunities. Truly, gentlemen, the first step to avoyd expence, is to grow in contempt of braverie, which if our noble younge youtnes wold practise for a while, it would so fall out that, not onely vaine fantasies should cease, fonde fashions finde no favourers, and the Usurer, having his odde refuse commodities dead in his hand, would either affoorde better peniworths, or seeke for forreigne traffique.

But to leave you Gentlemen to your good counsailes, and returne to you, good master Usurers, whose eares glowe at the rehearsall of these enormities, I must pray you give mee leave to make up a conclusion, and to finish these fewe lines with an admonition for your cause; and though the corrections I use be bitter, account of them the better, for why, they be more cordiall. A greedie desire of gayne is the disease that infecteth you: some terme it thriftinesse, some neernesse, but in plaine tearmes, it is usurie; and that is nought els but a greedie desire of other men's goods, and this by the commandement is forbidden to be followed, and therefore irreligious are they that use it. The man that coveteth gold conceiveth not goodnesse; his appetite is of the earth, and those that are earthly minded savor not the things that are of God. What though you cloath your selves in simplicitie of doves, and your inwarde habite be worse than the voracitie of wolves, he that made you knoweth you, and he whom you offend can (and will) punish you. You wil say you were naturally borne (as Tully witnesseth) to take care for your selves, and to provide *victum et vestitum*, meate and clothing: and I graunt it; but where find you either Ethnike, prophane, or sacred sentence, to confirme your extreame hoording up of golde, yea then most earnestly when you are most rich. The laboursome ant gathereth not in excesse, but sufficient provision for the winter, yet without reason; and you which are reasonably borne, hoorde up more then orderly (at first sight) you well knowe how to

imploie. You long after Nabals vineyard with Jesabel, but the dogs shall devour you in the gate: you heape house upon house, land upon land, *Quasi nunquam sit perituum sæculum*, as though this world would last ever, but sodainely shal the wrath and curse of the Lord fall upon you, and (without speedie repentaunce) he will consume you in a moment. O turne speedely unto the Lord, and put not off from daie to daie, least his wrath be hot against you, and he make you pertakers of the plagues of Chore and Abiram. Remember your olde escapes that have past you, consider of their falls that are decayed by you, and your selves, if you have anie contrition and compunction of heart, wil lament the generall misfortune with me. Did you arise of nothing? Were you calde from base degree to high estate? From poore servants wer you made rich masters? Why, your goods make answere, saying, you have more then you can well spend, and I deeme the greater your talent is, the more you have to answere for. But weigh in your selves howe this great masse of money grew unto you: you must count that this Farme came to your handes by the forfayture of such a Lease; this money became yours by the vertue of such an obligation; you have scrapte up this ready coyne by making *centum pro cento*: nay, you have undone these manye poore gentlemen onely by enriching your selfe. Too true it is, (alas! and wisdom privately bewaileth it, to looke into your crueltie and gentlemen's folly) that many houses are decayed by your meanes, and you are lords of that, which should be the portion of more profitable subjects, whose miserie driveth them to trie conclusions in all places, and both to forsake their countrey, I pray God, not to alter their conscience.

Nay, in these extremities that they are driven into, which of you either releeveth or comforteth them in their sorrowes? So farre are you (you worldlings) from lessening their miseries, as that (Perillus like) you invent new tortures to drive them from your doores, calling them vacabonds, and bride

well birdes, who, in very truth, were your best masters and setters up. But your selves, with Perillus, shall tast of the engines you have provided for others, and the Lorde shall pittie the fatherlesse, and comfort the afflicted, when that dreadfull daye shall come in which the heavens shall be opened, and the sonne of man shall come to judgement. How will the case then stand with you? shall your welth then acquite you? No, no; the Judge is not partiall: he is just in all his dooings, and true in all his sayings. In that day the horror of your conscience shall condemne you. Sathan, whom you have served, shall accuse you, the poore afflicted members of Christ shall beare witnesse agaynst you, so that in this horror and confusion you shall desire the mountaines to fall upon you, and the hils to cover you from the fearfull indignation of the Lord of hostes. and the dreadfull condemnation of the Lambe Jesus. When it shal be found out that you wer rich, yet releevd none; that you were of wealth, yet comforted none: that you rather replenished the prisons, then released the prisoner; that your life be found sawced with crueltie, and no one action savoring of mercie, the Lord shal place you among the goates, and pronounce his *Ve!* against you: he shall thunder out this sentence, Goe, you cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the divell and his aneles.

This is the reward of wickednesse, this is the punishment of crueltie: looke upon this, therefore, (you worldly minded men) and consider of these sayings: harden not your hearts, but be you converted; releve the poore, be harboursome, restore to the owner that you have wrested from him, and turne, turne, turne unto the Lord, (I beseech you) least you perish in your own abominations. And to conclude, accompt of me as your wel wisher, who for publike commoditie have opened your inconveniencies, and for brotherly amitie counsailed you to call your selves home; and, I beseech you, as speedely reclaime you from your errors, as I

doo brotherly admonish you of your escapes. How happie were I, that, haveing lesse cause, might have lesse matter to write on! and haplesse are you, if not won with these warnings, you give more occasion to be written on. Now stay you where you are, and alter your natures, and where you were accustomed to doo ill, now acquaint your selves to follow goodnes: and then it will thus fal out, that I which exclaimed upon you for your vices, will then honour you for your vertues; and where in common assemblies your name growes odious in publike audience, you maye be praised for your good life. The Lord send our gentlemen more wit, our usurers more conscience, and ungodlinesse a fall: so  
nobilitie shall not decay, but the  
sinner shall be reclaimed, and  
wickednes confounded.

FINIS.

.

•

THE  
DELECTABLE HISTORY  
OF  
FORBONIUS AND PRISCERIA.





## The delectable Historie of Forbonius and Prisceria.

In Memphis, (the chieftest citie of Aegypt) a place most renowned by reason of the opulencie of the princes that have governed that Monarchie, at such time as Sisimithres was head Priest of the same, and Hidaspes governour of the Province, a noble Gentleman called Forbonius (highly accounted of for his unreprouable prowesse, and among the best sort allowed of for his unspekeable vertues) made his abode, whose tender yeares not yet subject to the experience of more riper judgement, (as the winding iwie about the stately oke) entangled it selfe with many amorous objects, now allowing this choice, now approving that person, straight admitting a third. But the Fates having registred his last opinion in everlasting and permanent destinie, made his manifolde aspectes (as yet not stayed) to light upon one seemely impression, and to allow of but one onely paragon: yet so sealed they his opinion, as (if it be true that the gods ever were lascivious) I thinke the chieftest commaunder of the Heavens might vouchsafe of such dalliance, and be onely amorous in this, that knowing heavenly perfections to be resident in earthly substance, he would either borrow fire of Venus, to make the creature pliable, or carrie fire into the heavens from whence Prometheus first did steale lightning. Favorable was the climate, that allowing universally to all the creatures it compassed onely blacknesse, vouchsafed Prisceria (Forbonius mistres) such sweet favor, who borne of noble parents within the citie, (as of Solduvius, vizerioe of that Province adjoyning to the citie, and Valduvia, daughter and heire of

Theagines of Greece, the compartener of sorrowe with Caricleala, the straunge borne childe of the Aegyptian king) not onely match<sup>ed</sup> al titles of honour with exquisitenesse of proportion, but also so coupled the perfections of the minde with the proportion of the bodie, as rather nature might dislaine her industriye, not art repent her of the dowrie she had granted her. This sweet fixed comet coasted Forbonius affections, who like the careful Marriner, having (amidst the frostie night) sought for his loadie starre, and at breake of morning (his eies almost dazled with looking) found it out; so our noble young gentleman, having past over many personages with a slight over looke, at last finding out his mistres alotted him by fate, yeelded willingly unto importunitie of the Destinies, and wonne altogether to bee subject, beeing captived with fancie, hee applyed himselfe wholye to the accomplishment of his desires, and the attainment of his Mistresse favour. And for that the Goddesse of love is plyable to all benignitie, as not suffering a true servitour to bee long unrewarded, it so fortunéd that she prosperously furthered our noble Aegyptian in his purpose, preferring him by opportunitie to the sight of his desired pleasures: for the propinquitie of their abode was such, as that Prisceria's chamber windowe had a prospect into Forbonius garden, by which meanes, the gentleman in his meditations might beholde his Mistres, and Prisceria (beeing by the equitie of the destinies prefigured to straunge misfortune) might have occasion to looke, and seeing, might love. But as this convenience was favourable one waie, so was the frowarde disposition of the parents untoward on the other parte; for Souldanius, whether lead thereto by appointment, or driven to the exigent by some former mallice borne by the progenitors of Forbonius, had neither a lyking to the youth, nor a longing to have his daughter married; eyther lead by covetousnesse, for that he woulde not stresse his coffers, or by envie, for that he contemned Forbonius. Yet

what is concluded secretly amidst the heavens cannot be circumvented with man's circumspection; for Forbonius, as one which depended onely on the favour of Prisceria, though fortune had bereft him of occasion to injoy, yet would not he be severed from the benefite to behold her whom he loved; who, waimed with the same fire, in increasing his flame kindled her owne tancie, and being as willing as the other to procure remedie to her passion, with manye chaunge of colours, and sundrye sweete aspects, opened that to her servant, which he wished for in his Mistres: who, with like sorrowes requiting everie circumstance) as one willing and borne to attempt, at such time as Prisceria solitarily solaced her selfe at her windowe, in mournfull melodye (making his lute tunable to the straine of his voice) he recorded this sonnet.

The Turtle, pleased with his she compeare,  
 With sweet aspects, and many a turning lure,  
 Describes the zeale in tearmes should well appeare,  
 If nature were so gracious to assure  
 The silly bird with speech as well as I,  
 Who, stopt of speech, by turnes my woes descrie.

And though perhaps my tearmes by distance be  
 Seajoynd from thee, I wis my mournfull mone  
 Doth pearce thine cares, and Eccho tells for me,  
 In sowre reports: would she and I were one,  
 For whom I live, and whom I onely love,  
 Whose sweet aspects my dying fancies move.

And if the aire, by yeelding calme consent,  
 Make sweet Prisceria privie to my suite,  
 Vouchsafe, deere sweet, that beautie may relent,  
 And graunt him grace, whom distance maketh mute:  
 So either hope shall make me climbe the skie.  
 Or rude repulse enforce my fancies flie.

Prisceria, not altogether privie to the report, yet concluding all purposes to hir owne fantasie, conceyving, by his manifolde sighes, aspectes, and motions, whereunto he applyed his actions, with a solempne sighe, as wishing him present, and a seemely bent, as requiting his curtesie, betooke hir selfe to hir pillowe, where comparing everye accident together, both of the zeale shee bare to Forbonius, and of the profer he proffered to her, she brake out into these speeches.

Alasse! (unhappie Prisceria) what untoward destinie hath befallen thee, that in thy flowring yeares and prime of beautie thou art become a thrall to uncertaine pleasure, neyther knowing from whence the error first sprong, nor by what treacles it may at last bee expelled. If it bee that nature, envying my perfections, hath allotted mee this purgatorie, that having at free becke all the benefites of Fortune, yet I should with inwarde bondes bee inchained with the holdefast of fancie, alasse! that in prefixing the torment, shee hath not proffered a remedye, or in bestowing an ulcer, hath not vouchsafed a corrosive. Howe straungely am I martyred, sillie maide that I am! that by one onelye looke have conceyved such an impression, as neyther arte can alter with medicine, nor time eate out with continuance.

Woe is mee that I love! yet fortunate am I that I hate not, for by the one I am deprived of lybertie, by the other, I shall overpasse the sorrow by surenesse. Yet are thy thoughts more favorable to thee, Prisceria, then the successe in thy love will be fortunate. Thou lovest Forbonius; and why? for his vertue: yet thy father hateth him upon olde grudges, with whom, when rancour prevayleth, what may be more lookt for then contempt and denyall? But Forbonius seeketh Prisceria's favor, not Solduvius friendship; but Prisceria cannot enjoy Forbonius without Solduvius favor. But Forbonius will by happie marriage conclude all mallice, but thy father, having an envious mind, will have a suspitious eare. Alas! why imagine I wonders in my fancy, hoping that those

destenies (which inthralld my affection) wil subject my father's resolutions; since neither reason alloweth me any probabilitie to worke upon, neither hath Forbonius any motion, as I see, to compasse ought. Well, to the satisfaction of my friend, and to the contentment of my sorrowing hart, my freend shall know my zeale, and I will continue my affection, which being begun with so wonderfull causes, must needes finish with a miraculous effect.

With these conclusions she fell a sleepe, leaving me to returne to Forbonius, who, being tormented with the same furie, and troubled with equall rancie, seeing his light to be eclipsed, I meane his Mistresse vanished, began heavily to complaine himselfe in these or such lyke termes.

Alas! you destinies, whose courses are inevitable, how fortuneth it that, in bestowing casualties in man's life, you prescribe not meanes to prevent misfortunes? and, onely beginning to fester the heart, prefixe no presidents whereby the humours may be expelled. If all things are to be referred unto an ende, what may I wel imagine of my estate? who, intercepted by all occasions, must either finish my misfortunes miserably, or desperately. O, love! justly maist thou be counted licentious, whereas thou neither proscribest limites to thy selfe to inthrall, nor meanes to thy subjects to attain libertie. But why exclaime I on him, that hath blest me with a benefit? as though the fate that made Forbonius happie in loving cannot establish his successe, as that it shall not be measured by misfortune. I glorie in the benefit of my martirdome, since a certain inward hope assureth me that divine beautie cannot be sequeste[r]d from just pittie, nor a tried service in love requited with a disdainfull hate. But, foolish man that I am! how maye it be, that in seeking beautie I labour not to attaine it? and desiring to enjoy a benefit, I attempt not to make triall of my Mistresse bountie? Why, by last night's becke she vouchsafed some shew of acceptaunce, and that may as well be of reproofe as lyking.

O, Forbonius, it is a silly hope that is conceived by signes: either attempt further, or perswade thy selfe of no favour. Her father (silly wretch) envieth thee, and thinkest thou to compasse his daughter? Alas! faint hope is this, when as those that should build up doo destroy; when such as shoulde perswade doo dissuade; when as he that dooth commaunde most earnestly dooth forbid. But love hath no respect of consanguinitie, but having onely relation to him which he favoureth, delighteth onely in the possession of his choyce: yet is not Forbonius sure she loveth. Well, I see he that will be fortunate must hazard, and that man that will be gracious in his Mistresse eye, must by outward attempts and unaccustomed purposes seeke to confirme his happinesse.

Whereupon (upon sundry conclusions) he inferred thus; that the next day, by certaine rare attemptes, hee would either finish that he had so long sought for, or perish in the perfourmance of his enterprise: and the day serving to attempt that which he imagined by night, he bethought himselfe of the Gymnosophists of the countrey, among whom remembring one of singular experience and notable lerning, he resorted unto him, opening first, how he was intralld by fancie, how precluded by all occasions, especially by the father's disdain; next, how some opportunitie served him; lastly, how the agony tormented him; desiring the Philosopher, whose wisdom could see into all causes, to search out the fatall exigent of his love. Apollonius, (for so the Gymnosophist was called) having calculated the gentleman's nativite, and seeing some planets retrogate, covering the asperitie of the destenies with the hidden secrecie of an artist, discoursed thus.

O, Forbonius! if, as Socrates did his golde, thou drown thy affections, it would follow that with him thou shuldest enjoy free libertie of thy selfe, and not suffer thy affects to rule thy reason. Art thou bewitched by Circes? of a humane shape hast thou gotten a beastly forme? of a man borne to

reasonable actions, wilt thou now swallow an unreasonable misfortune? If many cares be the decayers of the minde, if many sorrowes the consumers of the body, better were it by day to studie the lyberall sciences, then at such time as we shoulde imploye our selves to honourable attempts, to become unhonourably licentious. Alas, Forbonius! considering what a lover is, what a lover suffereth, what a lover seeketh, I finde the person idle minded, I finde his patience an insupportable sorrow, I finde him-selfe not himselfe, in that he is unreasonable. The daily actions of a lover are discommendable, the night exclamations so odious, as that they in this convert nature, who shadowing the world with darknes, limittig each creature his rest, yet they even in that time labor in out-cries in which they shuld take convenient rest. My good friend, the grettest wisdom is to measure every attempt with his casualties, and if ought hapen that may seeme impossible, to cast off the rayne, and suffer it to passe in that forme it was concluded in.

Thou lovest (Forbonius): better were it thou didst leath; for by loathing thou canst but be compted unnaturall, but by loving thou mayst fortune to be unfortunat. If all thinges be ordered by the higher powers, it is vayne, you must conclude, to infringe what is concluded on: if the destinies have appoynted that Forbonius shall not be happie in injoying Prisceria, Forbonius is not reasonable in suing for Prisceria. Unhappie Paris in Helen, though fortunate in injoying her leautie: but when love begins with a fading benefit, it endeth with an everlasting sorrow. The conclusion of a wise man must be, to yeelde to the necessitie of Fate, and to continue contented with that which cannot be altered by succession. Tell me, by the immortall Gods, my good friend, I beseech thee, what happines conceivest thou possible to follow, either in enjoying thy lady, or finishing thy love? Alas! the greatest sweete is a continuall sower, and after many unfortunate repulses, a sodain misfortune makes an ende of many a



yeares courting. I speake all this to this ende, (my Forbonius) because I would prevent that by counsell in thee, which otherwise (if thou follow thine owne lure) will be a confusion to thy selfe. Thou comest to me for counsell to compasse love, and I would confirme thee, that thou shouldest avoyd the occasions of following love. Thou wouldest by my meanes strayne arte to subdue nature, yet I labour both to direct by arte, and to suppress by nature. Truly, (my good friend) looking but to the hidden secretes of nature, I finde thee subject to manye misfortunes, and no way to be remedied but by one only vertue. Thou shalt (after long toyles) compasse that thou hopest for, yet when the greatest plesures begin to take the originall, even then shall they finde their exigent. Since, therefore, the revolutions of the hevens conclude that by onely continent forbearaunce thou shalt be disburdened of many misfortunes, I beseech thee, lette this transitorie pleasure be accompted of as it is, and finish up thy love with my counsell: so shalt thou be fortunate in preventing destinie, and continue in happines, wher too much love may make thee unluckie.

Forbonius, lead by the inconstant opinion of his young yeares, not waying the grave and fatherly counsell of Apollonius, answered him thus.

O, father! when the wound is given, it is ill counsayling how to avoyd the stripe, and when the heart is captivated, there can be but small recovery by counsell: how wer it possible for me to restrain that in my selfe, which the Gods could not limit in their deities? Easie it is for the whole phisition to counsell the sick patient, but when the extremitie wringeth excessively, none bideth the martirdome but the afflicted. O, Apollonius! my minde measureth not the iniquitie of fate, neyther doo I seeke limits for that, which by no direction can be exterminated from out my heart. So that, good father, rather respect my present sute, then my future discommoditie, and by your counsell make ende to

my sorrowes: whereby it will thus come to passe, that enjoying the pleasure I long wish for, I may more boldly beare the assault of froward fortune when it commeth. If it be onely death that my enemie Fate thretheneth me with, let me enjoye this benefit: as for Fortune, I will be friende to her enemie, the which is the grave, and acquainting my soule but with the onely idea of my Mistresse, thinke my selfe as happie as they that have waikt the Elisian fieldes a long space to their content.

Appollonius, willing to doo him good, yet sorrie he could not prevaile with his counsaile, at length began thus.

Since, my Forbonius, thou wilt be ruled by no counsaile, thou must be partaker of thine owne sorrowe. As for thy request, I will so satisfie thee, as not onely thou shalt at thy pleasure conceive thy Mistresse minde, but also open unto her the secrettes of thy heart, by which meanes thou shalt heerein have accomplishment of thy wish, though in so dooing thou shewe but lyttle wisdom. Whereupon, resorting to his studdie, he brought forth a mirrour of notable operation, a practicke in prospective, which delivering to Forbonius, he commended it thus.

O, my friend! I deliver thee that heere to feede thy humour which was composed to comprehend arte. In this myrrour thou maist, after thou hast written thy minde, taking the sunne beame, send the reflection to thy Mistresse eye, wherby she may as legeably read thy letters, as if they were in her handes, and by thy instructions made privie to the secrets of thy glasse, retourne thine aunswere in that very forme in which thou sendest. For the rest, I leave it to your discretions and good fortune, wishing all things to fall out as prosperously in your love as you would, and as I wish.

Our noble youth, (*in amours*) having furnished himselfe of that he sought for, repayred unto his studie, where devising in what tearmes he might sollicite his Mistres, at last he cyphered out his sorrowes in this sequell.

That fancie that hath made me thrall to thy beautie, (sweete Prisceria) commendeth my submission to thy good grace, beseeching thee to be as favourable in ministring a remedie, as thy beautie was readie to procure my thralldome. I make no resist in this my loving torment, but onely yeeld my self subject to the impression. Maye it therefore please thee (sweete Prisceria) to be as beneficial in this, as the Gods are in their bounty, who, for every faithfull intreatie, returne a gratefull satisfaction. And heerein maist thou see my faith to be stedfast, since arte it selfe serveth opportunities, and ministreth me both a meanes to open my hidden sorrowes, and thee a messenger to bewray thy silent secrets. I beseech thee (by the sweete statues that are builded for the Goddesses that is honoured in Paphos) to be as just in returning favour as I am forward in bewraying my fancie: so shalt thou have the possession of him that is by destinies appoynted thy assured beads-man, and I enjoy those plesures in which I may be only fortunate. Till then I must write my self as I am, thy most unhappiest lover that liveth.

FORBONIUS.

This, cyphered out in faire charecters, and disposed in such termes as his rancie then prefixed him, he tooke his way into his garden, waiting some necessarye opportunitie to put his purposed attempts in practise, and to bewray his woes to Prisceria; who, wounded with the remembraunce of Forbonius perfections, and seeing no waye but his presence a meane to expell sorrowe, betooke her selfe to her accustomed prospecte. and with longing lookes she levelled at his love, which was alreadye stroken with her beautie.

The gentleman, fitted by these convenient occasions, beganne his philosophicall demonstration, and taking his aspecte as necessariely as hee might, hee presented Prisceria with his pensive submission: who, confirmed by so convenient opportunitie, betaking her selfe with all speede possible to her

studie, and by a becke charging him with no lesse dispatch to give attendaunce, she gave aunswere to his amorous intreaties with this gracious anſabilitie.

The climate, Forbonius, where under I was borne, beleeve me) either hath prefigured me the destinie to be inamoured by thee, or thee the subject that shoulde besot me: and truly heerein the working[s] of the Gods are secret, who imploy such thoughts in me, as now by thy letters I finde wrought in thee, making a unitie in both those hearts, who, by reason of parents envies, are like to finde fatal conclusions. And whereas by necessitie of fate I finde my selfe wholly captivated to thy pleasures, I doubt not but that God, whome wee honour for his brightnesse, and who by his lightening ministrerth to our misfortunes, will be favourable in our proceedings. For me, if thy constancie be such as my true zeale is, I beseech thee, by the same Goddess, to succour me, by whome I rounde my selfe first intralld and made subject to thee: meane while, I will write as thy selfe, and rest as I am, the most unhappiest lover that lyveth.

PRISCILLA.

These conclusions being ministered with the same aspectes they were proiered, the two poore couple had no other meanes to noate the effecte of their private jeyes, but onely by silent smiles, gracious regardes, and trickelyng teares, and such lyke amorous actions; each one wishing the other, either happie in possessing their delyght, or fortunate, if by death they were releevd of their sorrowe: and being intercepted by the closure of the evening, they betooke themselves both of them to their restlesse pillowes, concluding upon many purposes how to finish their languishing and tormenting martirdome.

Forbonius, as one born to attempt, concluded with himselfe (considering how favourably all occasions fawned upon

him) to attempt the stealing awaie of Prisceria; who, poore soule, in carefull dreames imagining of her dayes fancies, was forestaled of all favour by the unhappie approach of her father, who furnished with all worldlye policies to prevent what he mislyked, and compasse that he suspected, perceiving by his daughter's solemne aspects some secret sorrow that troubled her, having remembred that axiome of the philosophers, that dreames are the prefigurations of dayes sorrowe, watched his time so neerely, that even at that verie instant he entered the chamber of his daughter, when, drowned in her sweet delightfull dreames, she began at his entrie to cry out thus, O, fortunate Forbonius! which her father marking verie precisely, and concluding whereupon the sigh tooke his holde fast, awaking his daughter on a sodaine, verie cunningly compassed her thus.

O, my Prisceria! let it not seeme straunge unto thee, to beholde thine aged father's unaccustomable accesse, since he is now perplexed with unacquainted feares. Alasse, my daughter! thy father, seeing thee beautifull, is not carelesse of thy comfort, neither can he that laboured to bring thee to lyght suffer thee to passe thy dayes in loathsome mislyke. At this instaunt when I entered thy chamber, in thy dreame (as me seemed) thy soule betokening (as it shuld seeme) some daies sorow or plesure, exclaimed thus, O, fortunate Forbonius! Thou knowest how hatefull the person thou diddest name is to thy father, who if he be fortunate in thy dowrie I love him: I shal esteeme him unfortunate in the favour thou wilt assure him, who, beeing a collop of my flesh, wilt not allowe of that which is loathsome to thy father. O, Prisceria! Solduvius seeth, and thy secrete dreames bewraie, that the fortunacie of Forbonius is eyther unfortunate for thy selfe, or not allowable by thy father's opinion. Thy change of constitution, thy hidden sorrowe, my sweet child, made me suspitious; but now the verie true messenger of thy minde confirming me, I must without cir-

cumstance conclude that Prisceria loveth her father'semie, that Prisceria desireth Forbonius favour, and detesteth her father's choice; which if it be so, O, my daughter! I feare me thy love will not be so favourable as my disdaine bitter. Wherefore, if thou art intangled, since thou knowest my opinion, forbear, or if no wisdom will conclude thee within limites, my displeasure shall exclude thee from out all benefit of my favour. Choose, now, Prisceria, whether with calme perswasions thou wilt yeeld to my bent, or by unaccustomed displeasure bee partaker of thy father's wrath.

Upon these conclusions, Prisceria, all abashed, shaking of the drowsinesse of her dreaming, made aunswere to Solduvius in these tearmes.

These straunge suppositions, my good father, argue the slender opinion of your self, who, by the uncertaintest signs that may be, confirme your opinion as you please. In my dreames you said I called Forbonius fortunate; and may it not bee, that as my tongue uttered that it thought not, your minde imagineth that which is not, counting everye lyght shadowe a substaunce, and every little similitude of truth an undoubted demonstration? Did I call thine enimie fortunate? Truly, father, I feare me I might justly conclude it, for he, poore gentleman, little dreameth on displeasures, when at such time as rest should occupie your sences, you most travaile in your rancour: by certaine tokens, as you saie, you conclude that I am affectionate, and by this silly conclusion of a dreame you inferre an undoubted trueth, that I am enamoured with Forbonius. And if perhaps the necessitie of the fates be such, Prisceria shall finde her selfe happie in loving Forbonius, by whose meanes her father may cease rancour, and take rest, and his daughter, satisfied with that she seeketh for, be no farther troubled with dreaming fantasies.

Solduvius, perceiving by these speeches the certaintie of his daughter's affection, as one altogether enraged, calling up

his wife, and raising his servaunts, left the sillye maide all amased at his sodaine departure: whereas the olde man exclaiming uppon the disobedience of his daughter, and thundering out many revenges against poore Prisceria, caused his horses to be saddled, and perforce (contrarie to her expectation) made her bee conveyed to Farnusium, a mannor house of his owne, a place, for the solytarinesse, more fit for a Tymon, then convenient for a beautifull ladie, the onely companie there being shepheards, who upon the Vast mountaines recorded the praise of the countrie favourer, Pan, and the rurall amitie betweene them and their countrie lasses. Thus from stately Court, from the regards of her sweet friend, from the plesures that follow the citie, her companions were rurall maidens, her retinue frolicke shepherdes; whose slight capacitie not yeelding anie comfort to allaie the gentlewoman's sorrowings, made her (to her more hart grieve) continue her pensivenesse, and sup up her conceived sorrow in silence. But to repeat the moane on the other side that amorous Forbonius made, when by certain report he had notice of his Mistres departure, were wonderfull; who beeing in himselfe altogether confounded, not knowing where to finde her out which was the onely mistres of his fantasie, Lord! with how many sighes breathed he forth his sorrowe, and compassed on everie side with dispairing joyes, in the verie same garden where tofore hee repeated his pleasures, hee in these waylefull tearmes recounted his miseries.

Alas, unfortunate Aegyptian! whose faithful affections are so immutable, as thy naturall colour is unstainable. How injurious are the destinies, that, graunting thee life, they dayly hasten thy destruction; that, vouchsafing thee plesure, they suffer it not to be permanent; that, admitting thee the benefit of beauties good grace, they deprive thee of the possession and blessing of that thou desirest. Alasse, what shall befall mee, when the glorie[s] of my eyes are dimmed? when the pleasures of my heart are determined? when she whom I love nearest is

farther off from my presence? when the injurious repulses of the father makes every attempt of Forbonius unfortunate? Wo is me! what way may I imagin to make an end of my miserie? Should I with despairing rashnesse finish up the catastrophe of my troubles? Should I, beeing bereft of her by whom I live, dispossesse my selfe of that she most doth like? Should I, in making my selfe onelye fortunate by the alaie of my sorrows, leave Prisceria to her daily mournings, both to lament my deceasure, and her froward destinie? No, Forbonius, it is but vaine quiet that is to her discontentment, who, beeing equally inthrall'd with thy selfe, will as willingly be pertaker of thy torment as thy self. But why waile I thus in feminine sorrow, when my happinesse is to be accomplished by manly attempt? Solduvius rigour hath caused Prisceria's absence, yet cannot the father's displeasure determine the daughter's love: she liveth to thy wish, Forbonius; she loveth to thy weale, Forbonius; she wilbe constant til death, Forbonius: why shouldest thou, then, leave her unsought for, Forbonius? Attempt, vain man, to seke out thine assured; let not the distance of place disanull thy good hap? Solduvius banishment is concluded within the limites of Aegypt, and since it is so, either Forbonius will attaine her he desireth, or revenge the unjust rigour of an injurious father.

Upon this resolution, as a man quite dispossessed of himselfe, he hasted to Apollonius, recounting unto him how all things had fortun'd, beseeching him (not without foison of teares) to seeke out by art where Prisceria was conversant, and to direct him by counsell, who altogether was confounded with dispaire. Apollonius, by exteriour signes conceiving the interiour heartes-griefe, and seeing the poore young gentleman martyred so miraculously, comparing times and revolutions, attained to the knowledge of her abroad, and concluding in himselfe to comfort him which almost dispaired, hee spake thus to Forbonius.



My good friend, whence groweth it that neyther the nobilitie of thy auncestors, nor thy forepassed attempts, neither the benefit of thy Mistres favour, can confirme thee, but that thou wilt be carefull for that which thou hast alreadie almost compassed. Pluck up your heart, my sweete Forbonius, for thy Prisceria is not farre from thee. Farnusium, a mannor house of her father's, seated east out of this citie, whereas she is so circumspectly lookt into, that [not] by anie meanes, unlesse by secret and convenient pollicie, thou canst come to the accomplishment of thy desire. Thou must therefore, attyred altogether like a shepheard, depart this citie, and by some convenient meanes procure the keeping of some one farmer's sheepe which is resident among those mountaines, by whose meanes thou shalt fall in acquaintance with the garden[er] of thy Mistres, called Sotto, and, having convenient occasion to satisfie thy affection, possesse thy selfe of that thou hast long desired.

Forbonius, concluding his replie with hartie thanks, sodainly departed, and remembring himselfe of one Corbo, a tenant of his, which had his mansion house verie conveniently seated hard by the mannor house of Solduvius, he hastily shaped his journey unto him, and making him privie to that he desired, and swearing him to be constant and continue secret, he betooke himselfe to the keeping of his tenant's sheepe; and not forgetting to drive his flocke neere unto the lawnd wher as Solduvius servants grased their sheepe, he so demeaned himselfe, that not onely he attayned the favor of Sotto which he sought for, but also for his curteous affabilitie was accounted of among the whole troupe of heardsmen for the best singer and the tunablest musition, his Aeglogs were so delectable, and the delivery of them so delicate. Wherupon by good fortune it so fel out that Forbonius, under the coulourable name of Arvalio, was desired by Sotto to resort unto the mannor house, who informed him of all that hapned, telling him of the careful demeanour of his sorrowing young

Mistres, who, pleased with nothing but with solitarie musicke, pined her selfe awaie with melancholy; and not without cause, (said he) for my old master hath forbidden me the admitting of any one to her presence, not suffering her to passe the limits of my warie eie, nor allowing her to walke without the castel walles for her recreation. For my sake, therefore, chaunt her some melodie, and resort with me to a convenient harbour within our garden, whereas she, walking for her recreation, may perhaps take some delight in thy sorrowfull mournings, in that they most fit her fantasie. Forbonius, as willing to wend as he desirous to perswade, accompanied Sottoto Farnusium, wher having a place appointed him to apply his Aeglogs, and the Goddesse before him whom he should devine upon, hee under these secrets described his passions.

Amidst these Mountaines on a time did dwell  
 A lovely Shepheard, who did beare the bell  
 For sweete reports and many loving layes;  
 Whom, while he fed his flocke in desart wayes,  
 A netheard's daughter, deckt with lovely white,  
 Behelde and lovde, the lasse Corinna hight.  
 Him sought she oft, with many a sweete regard,  
 With sundrie tokens she her sutes preferd,  
 Her care to keepe his feeding flocke from stray,  
 Whilst carelesse he amidst the lawnes did play.  
 Her sweete regards she spent upon his face;  
 Her countrie cates she sent to gaine his grace;  
 Her garlands gaie to decke his temples faire;  
 Her doubled sighs bestowd on gliding aire;  
 Her pleasant kisse where she might steale a touch,  
 Corinna's zeale to Corulus was such.  
 He, wanton shepheard, glorying in her sute,  
 These signes of zeale to folly did impute:  
 Not waying of her many loving sightes,  
 Her watrie eyes, her secret moane by nights;

Her carelesse comfort in her fruitfull ewes;  
Her monefull Aeglogs, full of carefull shewes;  
But scorning that, (which might that Godhead move,  
Who in a shepherd's forme, for Jove's behove,  
Did charme the watchman of the heifer faire,  
For whose behoofe the thunder[er] left the aire)  
He left the place where she did love to bide,  
And drave his flocke another way beside:  
Whose dire disdaine, (the God that kindles love,  
And makes impressions straungly from above,  
Misliking) strake with fancie at that stower.  
The silly shepherd, wounded by his power,  
Now sought for that which he tofore did shun,  
And now the heate of fancie first begun  
To straine a yeelding in his restlesse minde.  
Such are the wounds that passe from fancie blinde,  
That Corulus will now Corinna woe,  
Though earst he loath'd and scorned so to dooe.  
Now she that sought with many a sweete aspect,  
Is sude to now by him that did neglect.  
Now bountifull is sweete Corinna's grace,  
Now like the sunne in welkin shines her face;  
Her eyes, like Gemini, attend on Jove;  
Her stately front was figured from above;  
Her daintie nose, of ivorie faire and sheene,  
Bepurfurate with ruddie roses beene;  
Her cherie lip doth daunt the morning hiew,  
From whence a breath so pleasant did insew,  
As that which laide faire Psiches in the vayle,  
Whome Cupide woode and woed to his awayle.  
Within the compasse of which hollowe sweete,  
Those orient ranks of silver pearles doe meete,  
Prefixing lyke perfection to the eie,  
As silver colde amidst the summer's skie:

For whence such wordes in wisdome couched be,  
As Gods from thence fetch their philosophie.  
Her dimpled chin, of alablaster white,  
Her stately necke, where nature did acquite  
Her selfe so well, as that at sodaine sight  
She wisht the worke were spent upon herselfe,  
Her cunning thus was showde upon the shelve,  
For in this pile was fancie painted faire.  
In either hand an asure pipe she bare ;  
By one repeating many a sweete consent,  
By other comfort to the heart she sent.  
From which a seemely passage there doth show  
To strangers pleasures that are plast alow,  
Like to the forrowe Phæton did leve  
Amidst the welkin, when he did receive  
His father's charge, and set the world on fire.  
In this faire path oft paced sweete desire,  
At everie turne beholding with delight  
That marble mount that did affect the sight.  
Of virgin's waxe the sweet impression was,  
The cunning compasse thereof did surpasse,  
For art, concluding all perfections there,  
Wrote this report, All graces bideth here.  
Which Cupide spying, built his mansion so,  
As scorning those sweete graces to bestoe  
On mortall man, with bowe ibent doth waite,  
Least Jove should steale impressions by deceit :  
And, wondring at the crisped coment faire,  
In thought concludes it meeter for the aire  
Then mortall mould : next which the stately thies,  
Like two faire compast marble pillers rise,  
Whose white dooth staine the daintie driven snow :  
Next which the knees with lustie bent below,  
Conjoynd with nerves and cords of amber sweete,  
This stately pyle with gladsome honour greete,

Such stately knees, as when they bend a lite,  
All knees doo bend and boow with strange delyght.  
Her calves with stronger compasse doo succeed,  
In which the asure streames a wonder breede :  
Both art and nature therein laboured have,  
To paint perfection in her coulours brave.  
Next which, the pretie ground worke of the pile  
Doth shew it selfe, and wonder doth beguile,  
The joyntes whereof combind of amber sweete,  
With corall cords, yeeld bent to seemely feete :  
From which, whose list to lift his gasing eye,  
Shall greater cause of wonder soone espie.  
When on the backe he bends his wavering looke,  
In which the worke and taske Diana tooke,  
When with Arachne for the prise she strave,  
Both art and nature there excelled have :  
Where from Pigmalion's image seemely white,  
Where close conveyance passing Gordian's plight,  
Where lovely nectar, drinke for all the Gods,  
Where everie grace is stained there by ods,  
Will, not content with gasing, looke for more,  
And spie those armes that stand his sight before,  
Which for their mould the Aegyptian wonders passe,  
Which for their beautie staine the christall glasse,  
Which in their motion maister natures sweete ;  
Where blushing streames present a secrets meete,  
Will, now amazde, conclude at last of this,  
That in the hands all grace concluded is ;  
Where Nature limits ever fatall time,  
Where Fortune figures pleasure in her prime,  
Whence spred those fingers tipt with ivorie,  
Whose touch Medusa's turne may well supplie,  
Where to conclude as now the shepherd deemes,  
All grace, all beautie, all perfections seemes.

Thus Corulus with many secret thoughts  
 Divines on her whom erst he set at naughts,  
 And first by scorch of inward shrowded fire,  
 He seekes for her his fancie did require;  
 Who, fraught with woes, in secret shrowdes renude  
 Her silent grieve, unsure of that insude.  
 Her Corulus with warie search at last  
 At sodaine found: and as a man agast  
 At that he saw, drew backe with feare, and than,  
 Remembring of his woes, his sute began.  
 O, sweete Corinna, blessed be the soyle  
 That yeelds thee rest amidst thy dayly toyle,  
 And happie ground whereon thou satest so:  
 Blest be thy flocke, which in these lawnes doo go,  
 And happie I, but having leave to looke.  
 Which said, with feare he pawsd, and bloud forsooke  
 His palie face, till she that wrought the fire  
 Restorde the red, and kindled sweete desire.  
 And with a bashfull looke beholding him,  
 Which many months her pleasant foe had bin,  
 She cast her armes about his drooping necke,  
 And with her daintie fingers dawde him up;  
 And kissing of his palie coloured face,  
 (Like as the Gods) by touch did soon displace  
 The sowre that alterd the poore shepheard's sweete,  
 When thus she gan her Corulus to greete.  
 O, lovely shepheard, happie be the hower  
 In which (I know not by what secret power)  
 The Gods have sent thee hether to thy frend!  
 Alas, what grieve should Corulus offend?  
 Whom fairest Nymph might well a liking lend. }  
 Thy grasing ewes, with udders full of milke,  
 With fruitfull fleece, and wooll as softe as silke,  
 Take glory in the fatnesse of this soyle,  
 And prayse theyr mastres care and busie toyle,

And now accuse thee of thy drooping mone.  
'Tis but enough for me to wayle alone,  
For why Corinna onely haplesse is.  
Poore Corulus, at last revivde by this,  
Gan sighing, silence now to interrupt,  
And banish feare, which did his hope corrupt.  
And thus he said. O, Nymph of beauties traine,  
The onely cause and easer of my paine,  
'Tis not the want of any worldly joy,  
Nor fruitlesse breed of lambes procures my noy,  
Ne sigh I thus for any such mishap;  
For these vaine goods I lull in fortune's lap.  
But other greefes and greater cause of care,  
As now Corinna my tormenters are.  
Thy beautie, Goddesse, is the onely good;  
Thy beautie makes mine eyes to streame a flood;  
Thy beautie breakes my woonted pleasant sleepe;  
Thy beautie causeth Corulus to weepe:  
For other joyes they now but shadowes be,  
No joye but sweete Corinna's love for me.  
Whereon I now beseech thee, by that white  
Which staines the lilly, and affects my sight,  
By those faire locks whereas the graces rest,  
By those sweete eyes whereas all pleasures nest,  
Doo yeelde me love, or leave me for to die.  
Corinna, studious for to yeeld reply,  
With many teares bedewd the shepheard's face,  
And thus at last she spake: O, happie place  
The which the Gods appoynted for my good!  
What blessed Nymph within this sacred wood  
Hath pleaded poore Corinna's lawfull cause?  
Or be they dreames that now my fancie drawes?  
O, Corulus, ne neadst thou sue to me,  
Nor spend the teares for to accepted be,

Since long ere this I would have bent to bow,  
 If modest feare could well have taught me how.  
 In happie bonds of Himen I am thine:  
 Ne plead thou grace to her that dooth incline.  
 Thus with a kisse she sealed up the deed,  
 When as the shepheard, glad of happie speed,  
 Embracing her he had desired long,  
 Gan call for grace to her he so did wrong.  
 Confirmed thus with mutuall glad consent,  
 They finisht up the marriage that they ment.  
 Great was the day, and every field compeere  
 Delighted in the pleasure of his deere.  
 Poore I alone in sad lamenting layes,  
 Deprived of the pleasure of my dayes,  
 In carefull tunes in briefe concluding thus:—  
 O, happie times, and planets gracious,  
 When in a mirrour beautie did behold  
 The hidden woes my muse could wel unfold,  
 And with a liking looke shape some replie.  
 But woe is me! since father's crueltye  
 In changed formes hath altered termes of sute,  
 And altering place hath made my Goddesse mute.  
 Who, honouring Pan, may hap the person see,  
 Whom habit strange perswades it should be me.

This delectable Aeglogue finished by the amorous Forbonius, gave occasions to Prisceria to satisfie the thoughts that then troubled her fantasie. For, confounded in her selfe, not knowing what to conclude of that the shepheard Arvalio had reported, yet welnigh perswaded that the reporter was he she liked off, with a seemely grace, not minding to incurre the lightest suspition, turning toward Forbonius, whose hand was on his half-penie, shee sayd thus.

Gentle Shepheard, that Nymph thou lovest shuld alter from womanhood, that considering thy true zeale and exqui-



site proportions, would not requite thy loyaltie with the benefit of her love. Truly, Madame, (aunswered the imagined Arvalio) and I thinke my selfe gracious in this, that for her whom I love I am enjoyned this torment. Whereupon turning himselfe a side, and drying up the teares which should bewray his fancie, he was at last knowen by Prisceria, who, altogether amazed at the presence of Forbonius, forgetting welnie the infortunacie she was intangeled in, cast her armes about his necke, yet colouring with a seemly disdain to shadow her opinion, and blindfold subtill Sotto, shee sayde thus. Truly, Shepheard, if I may prevaile with thy mistres, thou shalt not be unrewarded for this curtesie. And, Madame, (said Forbonius) might I counsell your Ladiship, you should not sorrow for that maye be compassed at your pleasure.

This said, Sotto, taking Arvalio by the hand, tooke his leave of his young Mistresse thus: My young ladie, I, as studious of your pleasure as maye be, have brought you this young shepheard to laugh at, and if his musick like you, you shall have every day at the least a lay or two. And heerin shalt thou doo me no small pleasure, said Prisceria. And so, with a seemly regard shaping a loth departure, the two shepheards resorted to their flocks, Arvalio, altogether amazed at his Mistres beautie, and Sotto very jocond he had fitted his young ladies fancy so well: wherupon the old shepheard, turning to our solitarie and distressed Arvalio, said thus. What maks thee thus sollom, my youthly compeere? Cease to greeve thy selfe about those thinges that may be compassed: if thou love, time shal eate out that which treacle cannot, and thou shalt either be fortunate in possessing hir thou desirest, or in overpassing thy passions with good government, leave love to those that like her. Arvalio, not to seeke of curteous humanitie, gave him this aunswere. O, Sotto, it is not the love that greeveth me, but the meanes to compasse love: I labour not to attain love, but to possesse the profits of my long service in love. As for time, it may

worke wonders in them that are repulsed; but when Cupid is gracious, and occasions unfortunate, thinke you that this is not a bitter sowre? Yea, but answered Sotto, and if it be so, Arvalio, plucke up thy sprights, and doubt thou not, but if thou proove dilygent in pleasing my young Mistresse, I meane not to be idle, if I may know whom thou likest of. As for that, doubt not, said our disguised Forbonius; for since I know by thy onely meanes my love is to be compassed, I wil not stick in so slight a pleasure to profit, when as by thy meanes I may onely succor my selfe. In such lyke termes passing over their werisome walke, at last they betooke themselves each of them to the folding of their sheep, for it was welnie night, and the sunne was steeped in the ocean: wher upon Arvalio, the shepheard, becomming now Forbonius indeede, hasted him home unto his tenaunt's house, making him both privie of his happie fortune, and concluding with himselfe howe to performe that he wished for: and for that long travayle requireth some quiet, he betooke himselfe to rest, where recompencing al his night's wakings with a quiet sleep, at dawne of day he returned to his counterfeit habite unto the field, and unfolding his flocke, he drave them into those pastures that wer adjoyning to Sotto's walk; who no sooner spied Arvalio, but saluting him very curteously, he earnestly intreated him (setting all excuses apart) to go to Farnusium, and in the best sort that hee might to solace the unfortunate Prisceria; who onely wayting that occasion, commending his flocke to the over-sight of the old man, and accompanied with Saracca, the daughter of olde Sotto, he was presented to his desired within the castle, who, by the absence of Sotto, finding all occasions to serve her turne, having sent sillye Sarraca about some sleevelesse arrant, she, taking the occasion profered, said thus to Forbonius. Blest be that sweete conceipt of thine, (O my friend) which to the unfortunate rigour of my father hath adapted so convenient an end! Now maist thou with as great plea-

tures enjoye thy desired, as with deepe perplexities thou hast sorrowed in her absence. Now neither distaunce can sever us from imbracing, nor the watchfull eye of my father intercept thee of thy wish. See heere thy Prisceria, who, though the Fates worke never so contrarie, will live to Forbonius, and onely love Forbonius.

This said, with many kisses comforting him which was almost overcome with pleasaunt imaginations, she was returned this aunswere by her most assured favourer.

O, Prisceria! if overpressed with manye suspitious thoughts, if made pertaker of the infernall tortures in Phlegeton, if subject to the punishment of the daughters of Danaus, or affixed to the torture that martereth Titius, I should be confirmed by this onely benefit in opinion, and made constant in all misfortunes; yea, even to overcome the insupportable travailes of the Sisters, and be enabled with constancie to subdue all torments what so ever, by remembraunce onely of one gracious regard. It is neither thy father's rancor, sweet Prisceria, nor distance of place, nor any one occasion what soever, can either sequester me of my hope, nor thee of the possession of thy wishes. Cast off, therefore, all doubt of after dole, and assure your self, that as this plesure hath his originall this present instant, so by my meanes ere long it shalbe continued for everlasting memory. Passing the time in such like pleasures, and ministering a remedie unto each other's torments, I cannot tell whether by the iniquitie of destinie, or otherwise, Solduvius, learning out Forbonius departure, and suspitious of his forward attempts, at that very instant arrived at Farnusium, when the two amorous couple, little doubting his sodaine approach, were coasted with this sower, in midst of all their sweete, that the enemie of their pleasures even then entred the castle, when as it seemed the fates had prefixed them that conveniencie and opportunitie to allaye their long sorrowing. The brute of whose advent, brought to the eares of Prisceria, Lorde! how

she was confounded in her self, how dismaid was Forbonius at that instant, how at that very time were they both astonished, when most circumspection should be had; so that scarce they had then dried up their teares, when as Solduvius entring the chamber, quicklly discovered the whole counterfaite, (for jealous eyes inflamed with rancour pretermitt nothing): whereupon the olde man at first, nothing at all deluded by the straunge habite, spying out their proceedings, laying violent hands on Forbonius, caused him forcibly to be conveyed to the strongest tower in the castle, and, tounring himselfe to Prisceria, he began thus.

O, thou wicked and ungracious mayd! degenerating from the nobilitie of thy auncestours, and led by unseemly affections, not directed by the likings of thy tender parents, in what tearmes shuld I accuse thee, or bewray my sorrowes? Woe is me, that am inforced to be an eie witnesse of mine owne sorow, and to behold that with mine eyes that I hate in my heart. Is this the reward of breeding children? Is this the benefite that is reapt by issue? Are these the pleasures that befall parentes? O, Solduvius! happie hadst thou bene, if either Prisceria had beene unborne, or thou unmarried: by the one thou shouldest have escaped this present miserie, by the other, prevented the untoward sorrow that now confoundeth thee. Is thy love to be fixed there where I hate? or shuldest thou be amorous of him who is odious to thy father? O, vile wretch, borne among the Hircan tygres, which, respecting not thy father's felicitie, overburthenest his olde yeares with unlooked for calamitie. But, if ever just Gods pittied a lawfull complaint, I doubt not but they, that minister justice to all men, wil wreak the injuries thou hast done to me.

Thus sayd, he sate down altogether confounded with melancholie. When as Prisceria, finding occasion to speake for her selfe, began thus.

Who seeketh, O father! to prevent the destinies, laboreth

in vaine, and who indeavoureth to alter nature, as he striveth against the streame, so must he perish in his owne overweening. The Gods have concluded our love, and will you, being a creature, seeke to infringe it? Alasse, my father, why should my pleasure be your discomfort? or that by which I live prove that which most you hate? Doe not you heerein breake nature, who laie violent hands on your owne flesh, and seeke to alter that by rigor that was ordained by divine instinct? O, lette your rancor overslip, (my good father) and if ever humble sute prevailed with an honourable minde, cease to hate him whom I love, and couple us both together whom the Gods having joyned in an assured league of friendship, it cannot be but injustice to alter their proceedings.

Solduvius, not able to digest the furie of his passion, nor willing to weigh of the submissive request of his daughter, interrupted her thus:—And is it not sufficient for thee (vaine wench as thou art) to passe the limites of nature, but to continue thy error too? Thinkest thou to compasse me with teares, who without sighes cannot call to memorie thy escape? No, Prisceria; both thou shalt see, and that varlet shall knowe, that my displeasure wil not be finished but with blood. nor my anger satisfied till I have confounded him who hath discomforted me. Wherupon flinging out of the chamber in a great rage, and fastening both boltes and lockes, he with his traine resorted to the imprisoned poore shepheard, his capitall enimie Forbonius, whom after he had taunted with these unjust tearmes, he proceeded further to this unjust revenge. Thou cursed and abhominable caitife, is it not sufficient by the injuries of thy father Clunamos to move my patience, but that thou in person must violate my daughter? Thinkest thou that the Gods detest not these injuryes, when as with wicked attemptes thou bewitchest the daughter, and massacrest the father? Naie, nether in justice will they pretermit the offence, nor will nature suffer me to beare with thine errour: prepare thy selfe, therefore, to

make him recompence with thy bloud, whom thou hast troubled with thy attempt.

Forbonius, confounded with sorrowe, and amazed at this austere judgement, yet remembring the nobilitie that was alwayes accounted in him, answered him thus.

Although enraged rancour hath made thee passe the limits of honour, (O, Solduvius) yet passe not so farre in thy resolutions as to staine the dignitie of thy person with the martyrdome of a guiltlesse gentleman. If I did hate thy daughter, that lyttle envye that grewe by my father's displeasure might by reason grow to deepe and rooted mallice; but when I love Prisceria, why shoulde I bee contempned of Solduvius? It should seeme that love was not accompted lothsome among the Gods, when as prefixing a punishment to all escapes, they prescribe an honour to this, chiefly concluding it to be a vertue: whereuppon thou must conclude, that eyther thou contemnest the decrees of the Gods, or measurest all thinges by thine owne malice. Thou threatnest me with death, (vaine man) and I weigh not the dissolution of my bodie; for this I assure thee, as long as I may live I will honour Prisceria, and beeing dead, my ghost shall persecute thee with revenge, and prosecute my affections towarde my best beloved. So Prisceria lyve, Forbonius careth not to dye, the onely memorie of whome shall make mee constaunt in misfortunes, and willing to withstande the brunt of thy crueltie: whereupon my conclusion is, that if Solduvius for faithful assurance wil become a friendlye allower of Forbonius, he, which by reason of the mallice of his father had once cause to hate him, will now honour him, and that strife which separated two so noble families, shal now be finished in our happy marryage: If this like not, proceede as thou pleasest. In granting mee favour, thou shalt finde honour, in bereaving mee of lyfe, thou shalt finish all my misfortunes.

The discourse of Forbonius thus ended, Solduvius began thus, after that he had somewhat digested his cholar.

Although, Forbonius, the injuries thou hast offered me, together with former displeasures, be sufficient to continue my resolution, yet weyghing with my selfe that it is vaine to alter that which is prefixed by destinye, wonne by reason, which directeth all men, and by the tender love I beare my daughter, which shoulde prevaile with a father, I yeelde thee thy love to injoye in chast wedlocke; and wheres thou lookedst I shoulde bee thy tormentour, loe, I am nowe contented to be thy unlooked for father. Whereuppon taking Forbonius by the hande, and conveying him to Prisceria's chamber, hee confirmed the gentleman in his former purpose, and his daughter of his assured favour, using these kind of tearmes to discover his intention: My daughter, that father that even now hainously mislikt of thy lover, now gloryeth in thy lyking, and he which whilome hated Forbonius, now vouchsafeth him his son in lawe: whereupon comfort your selves with mutuall solace, and to morrow we will to the citie to finish up the ceremonies. The two lovers, compassed with incredible pleasures, and not able to suppress the affections that possessed them but by breaking out into speech, they both humbled themselves to aged Solduvius, returning him by the mouth of Forbonius these thanks. O, noble gentleman! it may not be expressed by tongue what I imagine in heart, who by your meanes, of the most unfortunatest man that liveth am become the only happie man of the world. Notwithstanding this, in lew of all favour, I wil returne you, that both by that meanes all private quarralls shall cease betweene our two families, and you registred in our Aegyptian records for the onely peace-maker of Memphis. In these sweete speeches over passing the daie and night: the next morrow the whole traine posted to Memphis, whereas by the high Priest of the Sun they were solempnly espoused, and after many sorowes were recompensed with nuptiall pleasure.

Now, ladies and gentlewomen, I must leave this to your consideration, whether the lovers for their constancie are

more to be commended, or the olde man for his patience more to be wondered at. I leave you to fit that conclusion till you have read what is written, promising you that if my rude discourse have wrought you anye pleasure, I will both labor heerafter to serve all occasions, and so fixe my studies as they shall not farre differ from your fantasies: and thus craving you to winke at an errour, and commend as the cause requireth, I take my leave, willing to be made privie if I have anye wayes travayled to your contentment.

FINIS.





•

TRUTH'S COMPLAINT

OVER

ENGLAND.



## Truth's complaint over England.

My mournfull Muse, Melpomine, drawe neere,  
Thou saddest ladie of the sisters three,  
And let her plaints in paper now appeere,  
Whose teares lyke ocean billowes seeme to bee:  
And should I note the plaintiffes name to thee?  
Men call her Truth, once had in great request,  
But banisht now of late for craft's behest.

Amidst the rest that set their pen to booke,  
She pickt me out to tell this wofull tale,  
A simple Poet, on whose workes to looke  
The finest heads would thinke it verie stale:  
Yet though unworthie to my friends availe,  
I take the toile, and praie my Muse's aide  
To blazon out the tale of Truth dismaide.

Such time as Phœbus from the couloured skie  
Did headlong drive his horses t'ord the West,  
To suffer horned Luna for to prie  
Amidst the duskie darke, new raisde from rest,  
As I in fragrant fields with woes opprest,  
Gan walke, to drive out melancholy grieffe,  
Which in my heart at that time had the cheefe,

It was my hap, fast by a river's side,  
To heare a rufull voice lamenting thus.  
You lulling streames, even as your waves divide,

So breakes my heart with passions perillous,  
Which faine I would unto the world discusse,  
Were anie heere for to recount my moane,  
Whose wofull heart for inward grieve doth grone.

Which sayd, she cast her dewed eyes askance,  
And spying me, gan rowse her heavie head,  
And praide me pen her sad and heavie chance;  
And she recounted it that present sted.  
I did agree, and graunting Truth me fed  
With these reportes, which I set downe in vearse,  
Which greeve my Muse for sorowes to rehearse.

Whilome (deere friend) it was my chaunce to dwell  
Within an Iland compast with the wave,  
A safe defence a forren foe to quell,  
Once Albion cald, next Britaine Brutus gave,  
Now England hight, a plot of beautie brave,  
Which onely soyle should seeme the seate to bee  
Of Paradise, if it from sinne were free.

Within this place, within this sacred plot,  
I first did frame my first contented bower;  
There found I peace and plentie for to float;  
There justice rulde, and shinde in everie stowre;  
There was I lov'de and sought too everie howre:  
Their Prince, content with plainnesse, loved Truth,  
And pride by abstinence was kept from youth.

Then flew not fashions everie daie from Fraunce;  
Then sought not nobles novells from a farre;  
Then land was kept, not hazarded by chaunce;  
Then quiet minde preservd the soile from jarre;  
Cloth kept out colde, the poore releevd were.  
This was the state, this was the luckie stowre,  
While Truth in England kept her stately bowre.

Justice did never looke with partiall eyes,  
Demosthenes was never dum for golde;  
The Princes eares were ope to pesant's cries,  
And false suspect was charely kept in holde;  
Religion flourisht, livings were not solde  
For lucre then, but given by desart,  
And each receiv'd, and preacht with zealous hart.

Then learning was the loadstone of the land;  
Then husbandman was free from shiftes of lawe;  
Then faithfull promise stode in steed of band;  
The drones from busie bee no mel could drawe;  
Then love, not feare, did keepe the state in awe;  
Then, then did flourish that renowmed time,  
When earth and ashes thrust not to clime.

For as the horse well mand abides the bit,  
And learnes his stop by raine in rider's hand,  
Where mountaine colt, that was not sadled yet,  
Runnes headlong on amidst the fallowed land,  
Whose fierce resist scarce bends with anie band:  
So men, reclaimde by vertue. tread aright,  
Where, led by follies, mischiefes on them light.

Use masters all, use nurtereth mortall wayes;  
Use, use of good, continues happie state;  
Use, use of mee, made England then have praise:  
But since abuse hath banisht me of late,  
Alasse the while! there runnes another rate,  
Which while by sad insight I looke into,  
I see the want of those that have to doe.

And yet I see not Sodome: some are good,  
Whose inward bowels dayly melt in mone,  
To see how Britane, now in raging wood,

Hard hearted, flintie minded, all in one,  
Bent to abuse, and leaving me alone,  
Alonely lead, with carelesse shew of peace,  
Whereas secure regard doth sinne increase.

Some, some there be whom zeale hath swallowed up,  
First, blessed Prince, of whom I finde releefe,  
Some noble peeres, that tast [of] errors cup,  
Some godly prelates in the Church are cheefe,  
Some lawiers, lead by zeale, lament my greefe.  
Some merchants follow God, not swallow golde,  
Some countrie swains love truth you may be bolke.

Yet as great store of darnell marres the seed  
Which else would spring within a fertile field,  
And as the fruitfull bud is choakt by weede,  
Which otherwise a gladsome grape would yeeld,  
Some sometimes wicked men doe overweeld,  
And keepe in covert those who would direct  
The common state, which error doth infect.

Yet Truth must never alter from his name :  
Good Prince, sayd I, ye good : what of her selfe ?  
And that is good, for Princes that doe frame  
Themselves to private good, doo subjects good ;  
Yet that's not that same goodnesse I would name :  
Good Prince, good people, that's the good I crave,  
Of Princes goods that goodnesse would I have.

For as the great commaunder of the tides,  
God Neptune, can allay the swelling seas,  
And make the billowes mount on either sides,  
When wandering keeles his cholar would displease,  
So Princes may stirre up and soone appease  
The commons heart to doc, and to destroy  
That which is good, or this, which threatens anoy.

For common state can never sway amisse,  
When Princes lives doo leuell all a right ;  
Be it for Prince that England happie is,  
Yet haplesse England if the fortune light,  
That with the Prince the subjects seeke not right.  
Unhappie state, unluckie times they bee,  
When Princes lives and subjects disagree.

I know not I whence come these wayward woes,  
Whose sodaine shoves portend this sodain change,  
Yet dooth misdoubt such sodaine feares disclose,  
As Truth this present doubts the sequell strange :  
When stable head lets staillesse members range,  
I feare me, as the buildings trust to sand,  
So every blast will stroy with turne of hand.

When as in Court by proud contempt I see  
A fashion feedes the fancies now a dayes ;  
When as in Court promotions passed be  
By selfe opinion, oft the wise man sayes,  
The turnes are strange, and favour soone decayes :  
And those whom fortune windeth now a floate,  
By change of favour soone may change their coate.

When as election dooth but passe by sence,  
Then must I deeme the world is fed by shoves ;  
When garish beautie causeth vaine expence,  
It seemes the man should see, but little knowes,  
Repentaunce is the fruite by loving growes :  
So when in Court nought but such pleasures be,  
Repentaunce must ensue, we well may see.

But leaving Court, where though the bramble groes,  
Yet zealous care there sets her selfe, I see,  
I doo in Court but now complaine of those



Who practise that that fits not their degree,  
Whose vaines by powre full oft corrected be :  
But now such colours cloake each bad pretence,  
That shoves doo hold the wise in some suspence.

But I, poore I, though greevd at courtlike scapes,  
Lamenting there the lavish vaine expence,  
Have farther cause abroad to note escapes,  
Where craft doth keepe true meaning in suspence,  
And wily worldlings cover their pretence  
With holy shapes, and in a holy coate  
Dooth flattery praise those men that swim a floate.

In nobles traines who secs not strange misdeemes,  
Where each dooth gape and catch at private gaine[s],  
And fleece the Lord, who, though he blindfold seemes,  
By oft attempts dooth barre them of their vaines ;  
The painfull wretch who toiles with often paines,  
He hath faire words, when flattrie sucks the sweete :  
Thus shoves take place, and Troth's trod under feete.

In England, giftes can compasse each reproofe ;  
The bad for gold may soone be counted good ;  
The wicked gainer, for the state's behoofe ;  
The blindest buzzard to give heavenly food ;  
The faintest heart in warlikst place hath stood ;  
And who gives most hath now most store of farmes,  
Rackt rents the Lord with golden fuell warmes.

And Justice sore I feare by powre is led.  
The poore may crie, and gladly creepe to crosse,  
The rich with wealth, though wealthie, now are fed ;  
The simple man now onely beares the losse ;  
The lawier he the golden crownes doth tosse,  
And now hath fees at will with cap and knee,  
And each man cries, good sir, come plead for me.

O, sweete the time, when neither folly might  
Mislead your hopes, nor alter olde decrees !  
O, happie Truth, when as with sweete delight  
She laboured still for conscience, not for fees !  
O, blessed time, when zeale with bended knees  
Gan blesse the heavens, that bent their powres divine,  
The English hearts to wisdom to encline !

But now refus'd, disdain'd, and set at naught,  
Inforst to seeke for rest in place unknowne,  
I wayle, poore wretch, that no redresse is sought :  
But well I wot my griefes are not mine owne,  
Some beare a part and helpe to waile my mone,  
But all in vaine : such colours now are made,  
That those would mend the misse doo daunce in shade.

This said, bewetting all the place with teares,  
And from her eyes expelling flouds of mone,  
Her lovely lockes bespred about her eares,  
She wayde her wings as willing to be gone :  
And after pause she soard away anone,  
And thus she said : You Nlanders, adieu ;  
You banisht me, before I fled from you.

*Lenroy.* Beleeve me, Countrimen, this thing is true.



## NOTES.

---

### REPLY TO GOSSON.

Page 1.] As elsewhere noticed, there is no title-page to the original.

Page 3, line 10. The right M.] Here, and at page 9, line 8, "M." apparently stands for Master.

Page 3, line 13. There came.] In the original there is no division of paragraphs, which are introduced for the sake of rendering the tract more intelligible.

Page 4, line 9. Deceived.] In the original, "decnied."

Page 4, line 12. Virgil's Gnatt. and Ouid's Fley.] It is scarcely necessary to add, that this refers to the minor poems, "Culex" and "Ibis," attributed to these two Latin poets. Among the "Complaints," or minor poems of Spenser, printed in 1591, there is a translation of Virgil's Gnat.

Page 5, line 5. Dauus.] In the original, "Danus." Some obvious typographical blunders like this have been corrected, but of too little importance to be worth noticing.

Page 5, line 9. *Cirpo*.] So in the original—error for *scirpo*. This proverb, signifying, to seek a difficulty where there is none, or, a knot in a bulrush, occurs first in Lucilius—*Nodum in scirpo insane facere vulgus*. Likewise, both in Plautus and Terence, we have—*In scirpo nodum quæris*.

Page 5, line 10. Inconuiences.] Probably a mistake for "incontinencies;" and line 30, "denocated" should no doubt be "denoted."

Page 7, line 16. Maximus.] In the original, "Maximins"

Page 7, line 33. Erasmus labor in Euripides tragedies?] He translated into Latin verse the tragedies of Hecuba and Iphigenia; as Buchanan subsequently did the Medea and Alcestis.

Page 8, line 32. Tullie.] Ciceronis Orat., xxvi., 7. Pro Archia Poeta.

Page 9, line 9. What Cellarius, a learned father, attributeth to it.] It might not be easy to trace any early ecclesiastical writer of this name. The genuine reading may possibly be *Cassiodorus*, who is mentioned in

the next page. Besides various other works, he has left treatises on grammar and rhetoric. Lodge's printer has committed as glaring errors as the substitution of *Cellarius* for *Cassiodorus*.

Page 10, line 7.] Hiroaldus should probably have been Beroaldus. Philip Beroaldus, an eminent scholar, published, at Bologna, in 1488, "*Annotationes in varios Auctores*." These are included in a later publication from the Ascensian press, "*Annotationes doct. Virorum in Grammaticos, Oratores, Poetas*," &c. Paris. 1512, folio.

Page 11, line 1. A well of the Muses, which Cabelmus calleth Porum.] This passage, as it now stands, is utterly unintelligible: but it is not perhaps improbable that Lodge wrote, "which Caballinus calleth Persius:" that is, which Persius calleth Caballinus, in the first verse of his prologue:

"Nec fonte labra prolui Caballino."

Page 14, line 1. Tirtheus pollicy.] Meaning Tyrtæus, the Greek elegiac poet.

Page 16, line 3. A silly Tirthetus.] Silly, or feeble, as applied to Tyrtæus, who is described as being short of stature, lame, and blind of one eye. In the war between the Lacedæmonians and Messenians, the former, having consulted the oracle of Delphi, were promised victory, if they obtained a General from Athens: Tyrtæus was in derision sent to them by the Athenians, but his martial strains so animated the Spartans, that the Messenians were reduced to subjection.

Page 19, line 32. I must play the Musitian right nolesse buggs now come in place but pauions and mesures.] This is unintelligible nonsense. Mr. Collier has ingeniously suggested the right reading to be, "no loose jiggs," as contradistinguished from "pauions" (pavins) and "measures," which were slow country-dances.

Page 21, line 9. Cretensis.] Error for Cretenses.

Page 21, line 11. Yf Boetyus fitten not.] "Fitten" seems to be a misprint for "feign." The passage here referred to by Lodge occurs in the treatise by A. Manl. Sev. Boethius, *De Musica*, lib. i.—"*Tanta igitur fuit apud eos Musicæ diligentia, ut eam animos quoque obtinere arbitrarentur. Vulgatum quippe est, quam sæpe iracundias cantilena represserit, quam multa vel in corporum, vel in animorum affectionibus miranda perfecerit. Cui enim est illud ignotum, quod Pythagoras ebrum adolescentem Taurorominitanum sub Phrygii modis sono incitatum, spondeo succinente reddiderit mitiorem et sui compoten. Nam cum scortum in rivalis domo esset clausum, atque ille furens domum vellet amburere, cumque Pythagoras stellarum cursus (ut ei mos nocturnus erat) inspiceret, uti intellexit sono*

Phrygii modi incitatum, multis amicorum admonitionibus a facinore noluisse desistere, mutari Modum præcepit atque ita furentis animum adolescentis ad statum mentis pacatissime temperavit." (*Opera*, p. 1064 Basilæ, 1546, folio.)

Page 21, line 17. With the foote *Spondeus*.] Sir Walter Scott, in republishing Gosson's *Schoole of Abuse*, in vol. iii. of his edition of the Somers' Tracts, has added a few notes: in one of these, where the author speaks of the effects produced by music, he says—"This is a very whimsical anticipation of the arguments of the learned Cornelius Scriblerus in favour of ancient music: 'Did not Pythagoras stop a company of drunken bullies from storming a civil house, by changing the strain of the pipe to a sober *spondeus*?' and yet your modern musicians want art to defend their windows from common nickers. It is well known that, when the Lacedæmonian mob were up, they commonly sent for a Lesbian musician to appease them, and they instantly grew calm as soon as they heard Terpander sing yet I don't believe that the Pope's whole band of music, though the best of this age, could keep his Holiness's image from being burned of a 5th of November.'" (*Memoirs of Martinus Scriblerus*, chap. vi.)

Page 21, line 20. As the magnetes draweth iorne [iron]. and the Theamides driueth it away.] See note to page 57.

Page 23, line 11. *Te tigeris*.] Typographical mistake for *tetigeris*.

Page 24, line 12. Jodocus Badius.] An "eminent printer, scholar, commentator, and critic." (Dibdin's *Bibliogr. Decameron*, vol. ii., p. 115.) Badius Ascensius commenced his career as printer at Lyon, towards the close of the fifteenth century, and afterwards removed to Paris. The books from his press are usually distinguished with a woodcut of the interior of a printing-office, and the inscription, "Prelum Ascensianum." His notes on Terence are included in the edition printed at Strasburg, 1496, and in later impressions. He published an edition of Horace in 1503.

Page 24, line 34. *Comedia*, &c.] This definition, as Gosson specially takes notice of in his "Playes Confuted," does not occur in Cicero. His words are: "Yonge Master Lodge, thinking to iett upon star-toppes, and steale an ynche of his hight by the bare name of Cicero, allegeth from him, that a Play is *the School-mistresse of life; the lookinge glasse of manners; and the image of trueth*. But finding him selfe too weeke in the knees to stand it out, neither alleadging the place where Tullie saith it; nor bringing any reason of his owne to prove it; hee flittes from this to the Etymologie of Plaies, from thence to the inventors,

and so gallops his wisdom out of breath. It seemeth that Master Lodge saw this in Tullie with other folkes eyes, and not his owne. For to my remembrance I never read it in him, neither doe I thinke that Master Lodge can shewe it me..... But because Master Lodge will needes father these wordes upon Tullie that never spake them, I will first sette downe the matter, and the persons of both kindes of playes, then rippe up every part of this definition, that you may see how this Gentleman, like the Foxe at the banquet of the Storke, lickes the outside of the glasse with an empty stomacke, when his heade will not suffer him to enter in. ....Master Lodge, finding some peevish index or gatherer of Tullie to be a sleepe, is very wel contented to winke for company, and thinking his worde so currant to goe for payment, woulde gladly perswade us upon Tullies credite that a Play is *the Schoolmistres of life*. Wherein I perceive hee is no changeling, for hee disputeth as soundly. being from the Universitie and out of exercise, as hee did when hee was there, and at his booke," &c. (*Playes Confuted* Sign. C 4., C 5, C 8)

Page 25, line 6 Susarion Bullus, and Magnes, to auncient poets.] "To" is an evident mistake for "two." Susario, born in the Megaren-sian territory. "primus omnium versibus comœdias docuisse creditur." (Meineke, *Historia Critica Comicarum Græcorum*, p. 18.) In reference to the history of Magnes, see Meineke, p. 29.

Page 26, line 15. "Wrighters," for writers; line 23, "verdit," for verdict; and line 26, "fet," for fetched, derived.

Page 28, line 31. I should preferr Wilson's.] Mr. Collier, from this passage. concludes that a play on the subject of Cataline's Conspiracy was written by Robert Wilson, a player and dramatist. (*Annals of the Stage*, vol. i., xxxii.; vol. iii., 93, 246.)

Page 30, line 8. The alters of peace.] In the original, "theatters of peace."

Page 31, line 12. Silius Italicus.] In the original, "Silvius Italicus."

Page 31, line 24, Candida, &c.] In one of his later tracts, Lodge quotes this line from Ovid. with this translation:—

"Peace is for men, and wrath for fellow beasts."

*Wits Miserie*, &c., 1596, p. 70.

## ALARUM AGAINST USURERS.

Page 47, line 7. Our youth, which was fligge, is now at leake.] Evidently meaning, who was flush with money, is now exhausted, or left bare *Fligge*, properly, is fledged. Thus Peele, in his "Edward the First:—"—

"Baliol shall live; but yet within such bounds,  
That if his wings grow *flig*, they may be clipt."

*Works*, by Dyce, vol. i., p. 180.

Page 57, line 28. As the Theamides of Aegypt.] "There is another mountain in the same Ethyopia, and not far from the said Zimiris (for so they cal the sandy region of Ethyopia), which breedeth the stone Theamedes, that will abide no yron, but rejecteth and driveth the same from it." (Holland's Pliny, vol ii., p. 587.)

Page 65, line 14. Thus by collusion.] In the "Looking Glass for London and England, written jointly by Lodge and Greene, a Usurer is brought upon the stage, giving bribes to the Judge and opposite Counsel, in order to obtain a decree that a Client had forfeited his recognisance on his land; and the following paragraph is worked up skilfully—the said Client having granted a receipt or assurance for forty pounds, "Whereof I received ten pound in money, and thirty pound in lute-strings, whereof (he says) *I could by great friendship make but five pounds.*" Here, in the Alarum, the sum said to be received for thirty pounds' worth of lute-strings was four nobles.

Page 71, line 7. The funerall epitaph of the universities.] Alluding to the custom of publishing a series of Funeral elegies by the members of the Universities of Oxford and Cambridge, upon the death of persons of distinction.

Page 71, line 18. Savanarola of Rome.] The person here mentioned is obviously to be distinguished from Savonarola, Prior of the Convent of St. Mark, at Florence, whose denunciations against the Court of Rome led to his death, in 1498. See Roscoe's *Life of Lorenzo de Medici*, vol. ii., p. 309.

Page 72. The two lines at the foot of this page are quoted from Ovid:—

Principiis obsta: sero medicina paratur,  
Cum mala per longas convaluere moras.

*Remedia Amoris*, lib. i., l 91.



LONDON.

F. SHOBERL, PRINTER, 51, RUPERT STREET, HAYMARKET

.

REPORT OF THE COUNCIL  
OF  
THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY  
TO THE  
FIRST ANNUAL MEETING OF THE SUBSCRIBERS,  
HELD ON THE 26th APRIL, 1842. AT THE ROOMS OF THE ROYAL SOCIETY  
OF LITERATURE, No 4, ST. MARTIN'S PLACE, CHARING CROSS.

---

At the close of the duties of the first Council of the Shakespeare Society, it may be proper to state briefly the object of the association, that it may be seen how far that object has been attained.

The illustration of the Life and Writings of our great Dramatist was the primary design in the formation of the Shakespeare Society ; and in the original Prospectus it was stated that “ every thing, whether derived from manuscript or printed sources, that would throw light on our Early Dramatic Literature and Stage,” would also come within its purpose. With this view it was proposed not merely to print works which would directly elucidate some point in the biography of Shakespeare, or in the history of his productions, which works must necessarily be of comparatively rare occurrence, but others which would indirectly come in aid of such an undertaking. Thus, Old Plays, by the predecessors or contemporaries of Shakespeare, were pointed out as peculiarly appropriate : it was considered indisputable that few Tracts of the time by rival authors, adverting to existing manners and opinions, would fail in various respects to explain Shakespeare's character, plays, or poems ; and the early publications, friendly or hostile to the

progress of Theatrical Amusements, would, of course, afford information in connection with the rise and progress of our Stage, and with its condition at the time when Shakespeare became an author and an actor.

The mention of the Works already issued by the Society will tend to shew in what manner and to what extent the Council has carried into effect the intention of its establishment; but it may be right, in the first place, to remark that the funds of an association of the kind must, in the outset, be unavoidably limited. When the full number of One Thousand Subscribers shall have been attained, it is obvious that the Council will be able to accomplish more, than in the present year they have had the means of attempting.

The volumes already issued are seven in number, making in the whole more than 1300 octavo pages; but it is to be observed that the last volume is not included in the first year's subscription. The following are the titles of the Publications of the Society, in the order in which they have come from the press.

1. MEMOIRS OF EDWARD ALLEYN, the Actor, Founder of Dulwich College, from original sources: with new information respecting Shakespeare, Ben Jonson, Lodge, Dekker, Marston, and other contemporary Dramatists and Actors. By J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A.

2. THE SCHOOL OF ABUSE: containing a pleasant Invective against Poets, Pipers, Players, Jesters, &c. By STEPHEN GOSSON. From the edition of 1579, compared with the impression of 1587.

3. AN APOLOGY FOR ACTORS, &c. By THOMAS HEYWOOD. From the edition printed by Nicholas Okes in 1612, compared with Cartwright's edition printed during the Civil Wars.

4. LUDUS COVENTRIÆ: a Collection of Mysteries, formerly represented at Coventry on the Feast of Corpus Christi. From a MS. in the British Museum of the Reign of Edward IV. Edited by JAMES ORCHARD HALLIWELL, Esq., F.R.S., F.S.A., &c.

5. THE DEBATE BETWEEN PRIDE AND LOWLINESS, pleaded in an Issue of Assize, &c. by FRANCIS THYNN. Imprinted at London by

John Charlwood, &c. n.d. B.L. 8vo. This work is in verse, and is the original from which Robert Greene, the Dramatist, took his "Quip for an Upstart Courtier," 1592, 4to.

6 THE PLEASANT COMEDY OF PATIENT GRISSELL. By THOMAS DEKKER, HENRY CHETTLER, and WILLIAM HAUGHTON. 1603. With an introduction on the origin of the story, and its application to the Stage in various countries of Europe.

7. EXTRACTS FROM THE ACCOUNTS OF THE REVELS AT COURT IN THE REIGNS OF QUEEN ELIZABETH AND KING JAMES I., from the original Office Books of the Masters and Yeomen. With an Introduction and Notes, by PETER CUNNINGHAM, Esq.

Upon the manner in which these publications contribute, both immediately and incidentally, to the illustration of the Life and Writings of Shakespeare, it is unnecessary to enlarge; and to the preceding enumeration of Works already delivered to Members, may be added a list of those at present in the printer's hands, or which the Council has ordered for press, without more delay than is consistent with the convenience of the respective Editors.

1. NOTES OF BEN JONSON'S CONVERSATIONS WITH DRUMMOND OF HAWTHORNDEN, in the year 1619. Edited by DAVID LAING, Esq., F.S.A.

2. THE OLD PLAY OF TIMON OF ATHENS, which preceded that of Shakespeare, and from which he adopted the banquet scene, and other circumstances in his drama. Edited by the Rev. ALEX. DYCE, from the original manuscript in his possession.

3. A COLLECTION OF ALL THE DOCUMENTS which have reference to the Events of Shakespeare's Life. The Will edited by SIR FREDERICK MADDEN, F.R.S., F.S.A., Keeper of the MSS. in the British Museum, with Fac-similes of the Signatures. The Marriage Licence, transcripts from the Registers at Stratford-upon-Avon, and all the other Documents, edited by JOHN BRUCE, Esq., F.S.A.

4. THE FIRST SKETCH OF SHAKESPEARE'S MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR, printed in 1602, 4to., which has never been reprinted. To which will be added a collection of early tales, upon which the play is supposed to have been founded. Edited, with an introduction

5. **THE DIARY AND ACCOUNT BOOK OF PHILIP HENSLOWE**, between the years 1590 and 1610, in which he entered his various Transactions relating to Plays, Players, and Dramatic Authors, (parts only of which were imperfectly printed by Malone), from the original MS. at Dulwich College. By permission of the Master, Warden, and Fellows. Edited by J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A.

6. **DIE SCHÖNE SIDA**. An early German Drama, thought to be a translation of an English Drama from which Shakespeare derived the plot of "The Tempest." Edited, with an English translation, by WILLIAM J. THOMS, Esq., F.S.A. To be followed by translations of three other German Plays, supposed to contain similar versions of Dramas on which Shakespeare founded "Much ado about Nothing," "The Two Gentlemen of Verona," and "Titus Andronicus."

7. **EDWARD THE FOURTH**: a Historical Play, in two parts, by THOMAS HEYWOOD. To be edited by BARRON FIELD, Esq., from the earliest impression of 1600, in the library of Lord Francis Egerton, collated with the later impressions in 1605, 1613, 1619, and 1626.

To these fourteen Works already issued, or in progress, the Council begs leave to subjoin a list of such as have been recommended to the Society, and all of which, having been approved, will make their appearance with a rapidity proportioned to the means at the disposal of the Council.

1. **SIR THOMAS MORE**: an unprinted Historical Play, on the Life and Death of that great Statesman and Lawyer: written and licensed for the Stage about the year 1590, and preserved in the original manuscript in the British Museum. To be edited by the Rev. ALEX. DYCE.

2. **THE DIARY OF A BARRISTER OF THE NAME OF MANNINGHAM**, preserved in the British Museum, containing Anecdotes and Notices of Shakespeare, Ben Jonson, Spenser, Marston, Sir W. Raleigh, Sir John Davys, &c., with some curious Historical particulars in the years 1601 and 1602.

3. **TRANSLATIONS OF TWO ITALIAN COMEDIES, GL' INGANNI AND GL' INGANNATI**, the plots of which bear a strong resemblance to Shakespeare's Twelfth Night.

4. A VOLUME OF BALLADS UPON WHICH OLD PLAYS WERE FOUNDED, OR WHICH WERE FOUNDED UPON OLD PLAYS; including, of course, all those employed by Shakespeare. To be edited by W. D. COOPER, Esq., F.S.A.

5. THE TRUE TRAGEDIE OF RICHARD THE THIRD, which preceded Shakespeare's play. From a complete copy of the 4to. of 1594, in the Library of his Grace the Duke of Devonshire, supplying the omitted leaves, and correcting many important errors in the imperfect copy in Malone's Shakespeare by Boswell.

6. THE CHESTER WHITSUN-PLAYS: a Collection of Early Dramatic Representations by the Incorporated Trades of Chester. From a MS. in the British Museum, collated with two other transcripts in the same institution, and with the oldest MS. yet discovered, in the Library of his Grace the Duke of Devonshire. To be edited by THOMAS WRIGHT, Esq., M.A., F.S.A., &c.

7. FUNEBRIA FLORE. The Downfal of May-Games, &c. By THOMAS HALL, B.D. 1668, 4to. To be edited (with an Introduction and Notes) by W. B. D. D. TURNBULL, Esq., F.S.A., &c.

8. HONOUR TRIUMPHANT, OR THE PEER'S CHALLENGE, BY ARMS DEFENSIBLE AT TILT, TURNEY, AND BARRIERS, &c. Also, THE MONARCH'S MEETING, OR THE KING OF DENMARK'S WELCOME INTO ENGLAND. By JOHN FORD. 1606. A totally unnoticed production, in prose and verse, by the celebrated Dramatic Poet.

9. AN ACCOUNT of and extracts from the OLD PLAYS, (some of them *unique*) in the Library of the Right. Hon. Lord Francis Egerton, M.P.: accompanied by remarks historical, bibliographical, critical, and biographical, illustrative of our early Stage and Dramatic Poetry. By J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A.

10. A NEST OF NINNIES, SIMPLY WITHOUT COMPOUNDS. By ROBERT ARMIN, the celebrated Actor in Shakespeare's Plays. From the only known edition of 1608. It contains anecdotes, in verse and prose, of various celebrated Fools and Jesters.

11. TARLTON'S NEWS OUT OF PURGATORY: only such a Jest as his Jig, fit for Gentlemen to laugh at an hour, &c.; published by an old companion of his, Robin Goodfellow. From the earliest edition, printed by Edward White about 1590, compared with the impression of 1630.

12. AN ANSWER TO STEPHEN GOSSON'S SCHOOL OF ABUSE. By THOMAS LODGE. This work was printed about the year 1580; but, as the writer informs us, it was "suppressed by authority," and the only copies known are without title-pages.

13. *PIERCE PENNYLESS, HIS SUPPLICATION TO THE DEVIL.* By THOMAS NASH. To be printed from the first edition of 1592, compared with the two other impressions in the same year.

14. *A COLLECTION OF BROADSIDES AND MANUSCRIPT PIECES*, in prose and verse, principally relating to Authors, Plays, Actors, and Theatres, during the Reigns of Elizabeth, James I., and Charles I.

15. *A ROYAL ARBOUR OF LOYAL POESIE*, consisting of Poems and Songs. By THOMAS JORDAN. 1664. It contains various Dramatic Ballads, particularly those founded upon Shakespeare's *Much Ado about Nothing*, *Winter's Tale*, *Merchant of Venice*, &c.

16. *PASQUIL'S JESTS*, mixed with Mother Bunch's Merriments. Whereunto is added a dozen of Gulls. Pretty and pleasant to drive away the tediousness of a Winter's Evening. From the earliest edition of 1604, compared with later impressions.

17. *A volume of the Names, Lives, and Characters of the Actors in the Plays of MARLOWE, GREENE, PEELE, SHAKESPEARE, LODGE, BEN JONSON, CHAPMAN, MASSINGER, FORD, WEBSTER, MIDDLETON, DEKKER, HEYWOOD, &c.*, alphabetically arranged, and embracing various particulars hitherto unknown.

18. *A TRANSLATION OF ECHTERMEYER'S INTRODUCTION TO THE "QUELLEN DER SHAKESPEARE,"* containing an account of the sources of the Plots of Shakespeare's Plays.

In this, as in other literary societies, it has been found expedient to appoint Local Secretaries for the management of its affairs in distant situations; and the following gentlemen have kindly consented to act in that capacity in the different places to which their names are attached. To their services the Society at large is greatly indebted.

BRISTOL—Robert Lang, Esq  
CAMBRIDGE—W. A. Warwick, Esq  
DUBLIN—Sir William Betham, *Ulster*.  
DUCKINFIELD—Rev R. B. Aspland.  
EDINBURGH—W. B. D. D Turnbull,  
Esq, F S A.  
GAINSBOROUGH—John Mozly Stark,  
Esq.  
GLASGOW—R. Malcolm Kerr, Esq  
IPSWICH—W. Stevenson Fitch, Esq  
MANCHESTER—James Crossley, Esq.

NORWICH—Robert Fitch, Esq., F.G.S.  
OXFORD—Rev. Philip Bliss, D C L.,  
F S A.  
PARIS—Rev.H. Longueville Jones, M.A.  
PORTSMOUTH—Henry Slight, Esq  
READING—John Richards, Jun, Esq,  
F S A.  
SOUTHWOLD—Jonathan Gooding, Esq.  
WARWICK—John Twamley, Esq.  
WORCESTER—J M. Gutch, Esq.  
LEAMINGTON SPA—J Sharp, Jun., Esq

The Council with great pleasure adverts to the prosperous state of the finances of the Shakespeare Society. At the end of the year which closed on the 31st December, 1841, there was a considerable balance in the hands of the Treasurer, as will appear by the annexed Report of the Auditors; and there is every reason to believe that the sum to be placed, in the present year, at the disposal of the Council now to be elected will, by the addition of Members, be greater than that obtained in the first year of the existence of the Society, when its design and character were less known and understood. There is already at the Bankers of the Society a larger amount than the total expenditure of the last year.

In the commencement, various expences were also unavoidable, which it will not be necessary again to incur; and the whole of the Subscriptions will thus in future be applicable to the payment for transcripts of manuscripts or printed books, and to the cost of printing and paper, which, with some trifling incidental charges, will henceforward constitute the whole expenditure of the Society.

The Council cannot conclude without calling the attention of the admirers of Shakespeare, and of our early Dramatic Literature, to the fact that this Society is the only one existing for the purpose of illustrating the character and works of our great National Poet: if the undertaking be followed up in the manner hitherto pursued, it is hoped that some honour may be done to the Members, although it is impossible to add any thing to the universal admiration which adheres to the name of Shakespeare.

*By order of the Council,*

J. PAYNE COLLIER, *Director,*

F. G. TOMLINS, *Secretary.*



## REPORT OF THE AUDITORS.

We, the Auditors appointed to audit the Receipts and Expenditure of the Shakespeare Society, certify that the Treasurer has exhibited to us his Accounts from the Institution of the Society to the 15th April, 1842; that we have examined the same, together with the Vouchers relating thereto, and find the same to be correct and satisfactory.

And we farther report that the following is a correct abstract of the Receipts and Expenditure of the Society during the period to which we have referred :—

RECEIPTS.	EXPENDITURE.
£ s. d.	£ s. d.
Amount of Subscriptions for the first year received to the 31st Dec. 1841 . . . . .	Mr Shoberl, Jun., for Printing . . . . .
552 3 0	174 19 0
Amount of Subscriptions for 1841 and 1842 received to the 15th April, 1842 . . . . .	Mr. Bonsor, for Paper . . . . .
440 4 0	119 14 9
Compositions from Two Members . . . . .	Messrs Westley, for Bind- ing . . . . .
21 0 0	63 10 0
	For Transcripts . . . . .
	49 9 0
	Mr. Rodd, the Society's Agent, for Postage and Delivery of Books, &c. . . . .
	17 10 0
	The Secretary, for Adver- tisements, Postage, &c. . . . .
	20 0 0
	Printing Prospectus . . . . .
	4 4 6
	Do. Fac-Simile of Coventry Mysteries . . . . .
	4 5 0
	453 12 3
	Balance in the hands of the Treasurer . . . . .
	559 14 9
<u>£1013 7 0</u>	<u>£1013 7 0</u>

And we, the Auditors, further report that, against the balance of £559 14s. 9d., there are outstanding liabilities to the amount of £50 13s., besides the expences of printing and binding the first publication of the second year.

And we, the Auditors, further state that, over and above the present Balance of £559 14s. 9d., there are still outstanding various Subscriptions, for the First Year, of Foreign Members, Members resident in places distant from London, and of Members recently elected, amounting to nearly £60.

And, also, that about the sum of £200 is still outstanding upon Subscriptions for the Second Year.

EDWARD F. RIMBAULT.  
WM. DURRANT COOPER.  
SCROPE AYRTON.

Dated 18th April, 1842.

On the reception of the report by the General Meeting, the following resolutions were passed:—

RESOLUTION I. That the Report of the Council for the past year be received and printed, and that the thanks of the Society be given to the Council for their services.

RESOLUTION II. That the thanks of the Society be given to his Grace the Duke of Devonshire for a loan of a copy of the Comedy of "Patient Grissell," and to the Right Honourable Lord Francis Egerton for permission to reprint Thynn's *unique* Poem of "Pride and Lowliness."

RESOLUTION III. That the Report of the Auditors be received and printed, and that the thanks of the Society be given to them for their services.

RESOLUTION IV. That the thanks of the Meeting be given to the Director for his services.

RESOLUTION V. That the thanks of the Meeting be given to the Treasurer for his services.

RESOLUTION VI. That the thanks of the Meeting be given to the Secretary for his services

The following Members of the Council retiring in compliance with Law IX ,

DOUGLAS JERROLD, ESQ.,  
JAMES KENNEY, ESQ.,  
SIR F. MADDEN, F.R.S , F.S.A., &c.,  
MR. SERGEANT TALFOURD.,  
CHARLES M. YOUNG, ESQ.,

the vacancies were filled up by the unanimous election of

BARRON FIELD, ESQ.,  
HENRY HALLAM, ESQ., F.R.S., V.P.S.A.,  
J. OXENFORD, ESQ.,  
T. J. PETTIGREW, ESQ., F.R.S., F.S.A.,  
J. R. PLANCHE, ESQ., F.S.A.,

and the remaining Members of the Council being elected, the Meeting separated.

---

#### AGENT TO THE SOCIETY,

MR. THOMAS RODD, Bookseller, 2, Great Newport Street, Long Acre, London, who is empowered to receive Subscriptions, and to whom all letters relative to the delivery of the books must be addressed. Subscriptions also received at the Union Bank, 4, Pall Mall East, London. The Secretary does not receive Subscriptions.

•

REPORT OF THE COUNCIL  
OF THE  
SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY  
TO THE  
SECOND ANNUAL MEETING,  
APRIL 26, 1843

•

# PRESIDENT, VICE-PRESIDENTS, AND COUNCIL,

FOR THE YEAR COMMENCING APRIL 26, 1843.

---

## President.

THE MOST NOBLE THE MARQUESS OF CONYNNGHAM.

## Vice-Presidents.

RT. HON. LORD BRAYBROOKE, F.S.A.

RT. HON. LORD FRANCIS EGERTON, M.P.

RT. HON. THE EARL OF GLENGALL.

RT. HON. EARL HOWE.

RT. HON. THE EARL OF POWIS.

## Council.

AMYOT, THOMAS, ESQ., F.R.S., TREAS. S.A.

AYRTON, WILLIAM, ESQ., F.R.S., F.S.A.

BOTFIELD, BERTIE, ESQ., M.P.

BRUCE, JOHN, ESQ., F.S.A.

CLERKE, MAJOR SHADWELL.

COLLIER, J. PAYNE, ESQ., F.S.A., DIRECTOR.

COOPER, C. PURTON, ESQ., Q.C., F.R.S., F.S.A.

CORNEY, BOLTON, ESQ.

CUNNINGHAM, PETER, ESQ., TREASURER.

DICKENS, CHARLES, ESQ.

DYCE, REV. ALEXANDER.

FIELD, BARRON, ESQ.

HALLAM, HENRY, ESQ., F.R.S., V.P.S.A.

HALLIWELL, J. O., ESQ., F.R.S., F.S.A.

PETTIGREW, T. J., ESQ., F.R.S. F.S.A.

PLANCHÉ J. R., ESQ., F.S.A.

SHARPE, THE REV. LANCELOT, M.A.

THOMS, WILLIAM J., ESQ., F.S.A.

TOMLINS, F. GUEST, ESQ., SECRETARY.

WATSON, SIR FREDERICK BEILBY, K.C.H., F.R.S.

WRIGHT, THOMAS, ESQ., M.A., F.S.A., CORRESPONDENT  
OF THE INSTITUTE OF FRANCE, ETC.

.

REPORT OF THE COUNCIL  
OF  
THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY  
TO THE  
SECOND ANNUAL MEETING OF THE SUBSCRIBERS,  
HELD ON THE 26th APRIL, 1843, AT THE ROOMS OF THE ROYAL SOCIETY  
OF LITERATURE, No. 4, ST MARTIN'S PLACE, CHARING CROSS.

---

The Council of the Shakespeare Society, in making a Report of the proceedings of the Second Year of the Society's existence, have little more to do than to insert the titles of the works published, and to shew the application and present state of the Funds.

It has been a ruling principle with the Council to adhere closely to the aim proposed in the foundation of the Society, viz., the publication of productions existing only in manuscript, and the reprinting of such rare works as should illustrate the progress of our Early Drama, and, wherever it was possible, throw a light on the origin and formation of the plays of Shakespeare, and of the School of which he was the great ornament, although not the founder.

Some objections have been taken, by those unacquainted with the extended purposes of the Society, to the publication of works apparently not sufficiently im-

portant in themselves; while others have recommended the reprinting of nothing that did not immediately relate to Shakespeare. To such objectors the Council beg to reply, that they consider they are best satisfying the wants of the dramatic antiquary and historic student by putting within reach, and into the safe custody of printing, such tracts, illustrating the progress of this magnificent portion of our Literature, as are *unique*, or nearly so, and thus unapproachable by general readers, and which would otherwise be at the mercy of any unfortunate casualty.

The following list of publications, embracing a great variety of literature, will, it is hoped, be deemed a sufficient answer to all objections, and will have proved satisfactory to the members.

The following seven volumes have been printed and distributed during the year which closed 31 December, 1842.

1. **EXTRACTS FROM THE ACCOUNTS OF THE REVELS AT COURT IN THE REIGNS OF QUEEN ELIZABETH AND KING JAMES I.**, from the original Office Books of the Masters and Yeomen. With an Introduction and Notes, by **PETER CUNNINGHAM, Esq.**

2. **NOTES OF BEN JONSON'S CONVERSATIONS WITH WILLIAM DRYDEN OF HAWTHORNDEN**, in the year 1619. Edited by **DAVID LAING, Esq., F.S.A., &c.**

3. **THE FIRST SKETCH OF THE MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR**: being an accurate copy of the 4to., 1602, never until now reprinted; with an Appendix of the Novels which contributed to the plot of that Comedy. Edited by **JAMES ORCHARD HALLIWELL, Esq., F.R.S., F.S.A., &c.**

4. **FOOLS AND JESTERS**; with a reprint of **ARMIN'S NEST OF NINNIES**. 4to., 1608. From the unique copy in the Bodleian Library. Edited by **J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A.**

5. **TIMON**, a Play, which in all probability preceded that of Shakespeare. Edited by the Rev. ALEXANDER DYCE, from the original manuscript in his possession.

6. **PIERCE PENNYLESS'S SUPPLICATION TO THE DEVIL**. By THOMAS NASH. From the first edition, 4to, 1592, compared with later impressions. Edited by J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A.

7. **THE FIRST AND SECOND PARTS OF KING EDWARD THE FOURTH**. By THOMAS HEYWOOD. Reprinted from the first edition, 4to, 1600, collated with the editions of 1605, 1619, and 1626. Edited by BARRON FIELD, Esq.

Two works have been issued since the commencement of the year 1843, viz.—

1. **A TREATISE AGAINST DICING, DANCING, PLAYS, AND INTERLUDES, WITH OTHER IDLE PASTIMES**. By JOHN NORTHBROOKE. From the first edition, printed about A.D. 1577. With an introduction and notes, by J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A.

2. **THE FIRST SKETCHES OF THE SECOND AND THIRD PARTS OF HENRY THE SIXTH**: the one published in 1594, under the title of "The First Part of the Contention between the Houses York and Lancaster;" and the other in 1595, under the title of "The True Tragedie of Richard Duke of York." Edited by JAMES ORCHARD HALLIWELL, Esq., F.R.S., F.S.A., &c.

These will speedily be succeeded by other works, some of which are now printed, and others in a state of considerable forwardness. The following are those already printed, but not yet delivered.

1. **OBERON'S VISION** in the "Midsummer Night's Dream," illustrated by a comparison with Lylie's "Endymion." By the Rev. N. J. HALPIN.

2. **THE CHESTER WHITSUN-PLAYS**: a Collection of Early Dramatic Representations by the Incorporated Trades of Chester. From a MS. in the British Museum, collated with other public and private manuscripts. Edited by THOMAS WRIGHT, Esq., F.S.A., Correspondent of the Institute of France, &c.



The following works are now in the press, or have been placed, by order of the Council, in the hands of the printer.

1. **SIR THOMAS MORE**: an unprinted Historical Play. From the original MS. (licensed for the stage by the Master of the Revels about the year 1590) in the British Museum. To be edited by the Rev. **ALEXANDER DYCE**.

2. **THE TAMING OF A SHREW**, which preceded Shakespeare's Comedy. From the *unique* copy, 1594, 4to, in the collection of his Grace the Duke of Devonshire, collated with the edition of 1596, also *unique*, in the collection of the Rt. Hon. Lord Francis Egerton, M.P. To be edited by **THOMAS AMYOT, Esq., F.R.S. Treas. S.A., &c.**

3. **A COLLECTION OF ALL THE DOCUMENTS** which have reference to the Events of Shakespeare's Life. The Will to be edited by **SIR FREDERICK MADDEN, F.R.S., F.S.A.,** Keeper of the MSS. in the British Museum, with Fac-similes of the Signatures. The Marriage Licence, transcripts from the Registers at Stratford-upon-Avon, and all the other Documents, to be edited by **JOHN BRUCE, Esq., F.S.A.**

4. **THE TRUE TRAGEDIE OF RICHARD THE THIRD**, which preceded Shakespeare's Play. From a copy printed in 1594, 4to., in the library of his Grace the Duke of Devonshire. To be edited by **BARON FIELD, Esq.**

5. **RALPH ROISTER DOYSTER**, the oldest Comedy, and **FERREX AND PORREX**, the oldest Tragedy, properly so called, in our language: the one from the *unique* copy in the library of Eton College, and the other from the earliest edition in the collection of the Right Hon. Lord Francis Egerton, M.P. To be edited by **W. D. COOPER, Esq., F.S.A.**

6. **THE DIARY AND ACCOUNT BOOK OF PHILIP HENSLOWE**, between the years 1590 and 1610, in which he entered his various Transactions relating to Plays, Players, and Dramatists. To be edited (by permission of the Master, Warden, and Fellows of Dulwich College) by **J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A.**

7. **FUNEBRIA FLORÆ**. The Downfal of May-Games, &c.: an attack upon popular amusements. By **THOMAS HALL, B.D.** 1660, 4to. To be edited by **W. B. D. D. TURNBULL, Esq., of Edinburgh, F.S.A., &c.**

The list of suggested publications, some having been accepted by the Council, and others remaining under consideration, includes the following :

1. *THE JOURNAL OF A BARRISTER OF THE NAME OF MANNINGHAM*, for the years 1600, 1601, and 1602, containing Anecdotes of Shakespeare, Ben Jonson, Marston, Spenser, Sir W. Raleigh, Sir John Davys, &c. To be edited from the MS. in the British Museum, by THOMAS WRIGHT, Esq., F.S.A., Correspondent of the Institute of France, &c.

2. *THE PASSIONATE SHEPHERD*: a collection of poems by NICHOLAS BRETON. Written in imitation of pieces in *The Passionate Pilgrim* of Shakespeare. From the only existing copy, 1604, 4to.

3. *RICH'S FAREWELL TO MILITARY PROFESSION*. From the *unique* copy of the first edition, in 1581, in the Bodleian Library, containing novels upon which were founded several dramas of the age of Shakespeare. To be edited by J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A.

4. A Volume of *BALLADS UPON WHICH OLD PLAYS WERE FOUNDED, OR WHICH WERE FOUNDED UPON OLD PLAYS*; including, of course, all those employed by Shakespeare. To be edited by W. D. COOPER, Esq., F.S.A.

5. *THE MIRROR OF MONSTERS*: an attack upon theatrical performances in 1587. By WILLIAM RANKINS, who afterwards became a Dramatic Poet, and the Author of Satires, &c., printed in 1596.

6. *TRANSLATIONS OF TWO ITALIAN COMEDIES, GL' INGANNI AND GL' INGANNATI*, the plots of which bear a strong resemblance to Shakespeare's *Twelfth Night*. By GEORGE MACIBONE, Esq.

7. *TARLTON'S NEWS OUT OF PURGATORY*: only such a Jest as his Jig, fit to make Gentlemen laugh for an hour, &c.; published by an old companion of his, Robin Goodfellow. From the earliest edition, printed by Edward White about 1590, compared with the impression of 1630.

8. *HONOUR TRIUMPHANT, OR THE PEER'S CHALLENGE*. 1606, 4to. An unknown production, by JOHN FORD, the Dramatist: together with *THE LINE OF LIFE*, a prose tract by the same author, which the late Mr. Gifford supposed to be a lost play.

9. A COLLECTION OF BROADSIDES AND SHORT PIECES, PRINTED AND MANUSCRIPT, in prose and verse, relating to Authors, Plays, and Actors, during the Reigns of Elizabeth, James I., and Charles I.

10. A TRANSLATION OF ECHTERMAYER'S INTRODUCTION TO THE "QUELLEN DER SHAKESPEARE," containing an account of the sources of the Plots of Shakespeare's Plays.

11. A volume of the Names, Lives, and Characters of the Actors in the Plays of MARLOWE, GREENE, PEELE, SHAKESPEARE, LODGE, NASH, BEN JONSON, CHAPMAN, DEKKER, WEBSTER, HEYWOOD, MIDDLETON, MASSINGER, &c., alphabetically arranged.

12. PASQUIL'S JESTS, mixed with Mother Bunch's Merriments. Whereunto is added a dozen of Gulls. Pretty and pleasant to drive away the tediousness of a Winter's Evening. From the earliest edition of 1604, compared with several later impressions.

13. A ROYAL ARBOUR OF LOYAL POESIE, consisting of Poems and Songs, and including Dramatic Ballads founded upon Shakespeare's Much Ado about Nothing, Winter's Tale, Merchant of Venice, &c., as well as upon several other plays of the time.

14. DIE SCHONE SIDEA. An early German Drama, thought to be a translation of an English Play from which Shakespeare derived the plot of The Tempest. To be edited by WILLIAM J. THOMS, Esq., F.S.A., and to be followed by translations of three other German Plays, supposed to contain similar versions of Dramas on which Shakespeare founded Much ado about Nothing, The Two Gentlemen of Verona, and Titus Andronicus.

15. AN ANSWER TO STEPHEN GOSSON'S SCHOOL OF ABUSE. By THOMAS LODGE. Printed about the year 1580.

16. THE ALARUM AGAINST USURERS. By THOMAS LODGE: containing a farther reply to Stephen Gosson. From the edition of 1584, 4to., in the Bodleian Library.

Before leaving the subject, the Council beg thus publicly to state the great obligations of the Society to those gentlemen who have gratuitously devoted much valuable time and labour to the editing of the various works; a service which no merely pecuniary recompence could adequately remunerate. It should also be mentioned, that the works thus rendered available can be procured only by members of the Society.

In concluding their annual statement, the Council cannot too warmly express the obligations, not merely of the Society, but of all the admirers of our early dramatic poetry, to noblemen and gentlemen who have afforded important facilities by the loan of, or means of consulting, works only to be found in the libraries of the wealthy, or in the possession of those who are curious in the literature of the time of Shakespeare. Without this ready assistance, several of the productions issued during the last two years would have been either materially incomplete, or entirely deficient; and two valuable works, directly illustrative of two of the most celebrated plays of our great Dramatist, are now in a state of forwardness, which could not have been prepared without the unrestricted use of *unique* productions existing in the collection of his Grace the Duke of Devonshire. Among the reprints of the last year is one which may be said to be absolutely necessary to the study of the rise and progress of our historical drama, and which was made from the first edition in the library of Lord Francis Egerton, one of the Vice-Presidents of the Society. The Curators of our different Public Libraries have also lent most valuable aid; and to those of the British Museum, the Bodleian, and Trinity College, Cambridge, the Society is especially bound to express its thankfulness.

*By order of the Council,*

J. PAYNE COLLIER, *Director,*

F. G. TOMLINS, *Secretary.*

## REPORT OF THE AUDITORS.

We, the Auditors appointed to audit the Receipts and Expenditure of the Shakespeare Society, certify that the Treasurer has exhibited to us his accounts from the 15th of April, 1842, to the 18th of April, 1843; that we have examined the same, together with the vouchers in support thereof, and find the same to be correct and satisfactory.

And we further report that the following is a correct Abstract of the Receipts and Expenditure of the Society during the period to which we have referred.

RECEIPTS.		EXPENDITURE	
	£ s. d.		£ s. d.
Balance in the hands of the Treasurer on the 15th of April, 1842, as per Report of Auditors . . .	559 14 9	Mr. Shoberl, Jun., for Printing . . . . .	360 0 0
Received since former Audit, up to April, as per Bank Book . . . . .	567 0 0	Mr. Bonsor, for Paper . .	164 4 0
		Messrs. Westley, for Binding . . . . .	104 13 6
		For Transcripts, &c. . .	74 0 6
		Mr. Rodd, the Society's Agent, for Delivery of Books, Postage, &c. . .	22 0 0
		For Advertisements, Postage, &c., by the Secretary . . . . .	30 0 0
			<hr/>
			754 18 0
		Balance in the hands of the Treasurer . . . . .	371 16 9
	<hr/>		<hr/>
	1126 14 9		1126 14 9
	<hr/>		<hr/>

And we, the Auditors, further report that we are informed by the Treasurer, that, from this Balance of £371. 16s. 9d., the Society has to pay for printing, binding, and for paper supplied to the first and second publications of the current year, and the Expenses incurred by the Society's agent in delivery of books, &c., from October, 1842, to the present time, amounting to £14. 0s. 7d.

And we, the Auditors, further state, on the same information, that, over and above the present Balance of £371. 16s. 9d., there are still outstanding several subscriptions for the first and second years, due from members resident abroad, or in places distant from London.

And, also, that about the sum of £220 is still outstanding upon subscriptions for the present year.

CHARLES PURTON COOPER.

CHARLES DICKENS.

H. C. ROBINSON.

Dated 18th April, 1843.

---

On the adoption of the Report by the General Meeting, the following resolutions were passed:—

RESOLUTION I. That the Report of the Council for the past year be received and printed, and that the thanks of the Society be given to the Council for their services.

RESOLUTION II. That the thanks of the Society be given to his Grace the Duke of Devonshire, for the loan of a copy of the earliest edition of Shakespeare's "Merry Wives of Windsor," 1602.

RESOLUTION III. That the thanks of the Society be given to the Right Hon. Lord Francis Egerton, M.P., for the loan of the first edition of Heywood's "Edward the Fourth," 1600, and for the loan of the second edition of Nash's "Pierce Penniless," 1592.

RESOLUTION IV. That the Report of the Auditors be received and printed, and that the thanks of the Society be given to them for their services.

RESOLUTION V. That the thanks of the Society be given to the Director for his services

RESOLUTION VI. That the thanks of the Society be given to the Treasurer for his services.

RESOLUTION VII. That the thanks of the Society be given to the Secretary for his services

---

The following Members of the Council retiring in compliance with Law IX.,

GEORGE L. CRAIK, ESQ.

THE REV. WILLIAM HARNESS.

W. C. MACREADY, ESQ.

THE REV. H. H. MILMAN.

JOHN OXENFORD, ESQ.

the vacancies were filled up by the unanimous election of

MAJOR SHADWELL CLERKE.

C. PURTON COOPER, ESQ., Q.C., F.R.S., F.S.A.

BOLTON CORNEY, ESQ.

CHARLES DICKENS, ESQ.

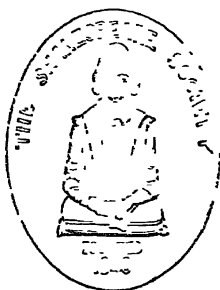
THE REV. LANCELOT SHARPE, M.A.

and the remaining Members of the Council having been elected, the Meeting separated.

---

### AGENT TO THE SOCIETY,

MR. THOMAS RODD, 9, Great Newport Street, Long Acre, London, who is empowered to receive Subscriptions, and to whom all letters relative to the delivery of the books must be addressed.



REPORT OF THE PROCEEDINGS  
OF THE  
THIRD ANNUAL MEETING  
OF THE MEMBERS OF  
THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY,

HELD ON  
THE 26TH OF APRIL, 1844.

AT  
THE ROOMS OF THE ROYAL SOCIETY OF LITERATURE,  
No 4, ST MARTIN'S PLACE, TRAFALGAR SQUARE.





# PRESIDENT, VICE-PRESIDENTS, AND COUNCIL,

FOR THE YEAR COMMENCING APRIL 26. 1844.

---

## President.

THE MOST NOBLE THE MARQUESS OF CONYNGHAM.

## Vice-Presidents.

THE EARL OF POWIS.

THE EARL OF GLENGALL

THE EARL HOWE

THE RT HON. LORD FRANCIS EGERTON.

THE RT. HON. LORD BRAYBROOKE.

THE RT. HON. LORD LEIGH.

## Council.

THOMAS AMYOT, ESQ FRS TREAS S.A.

WILLIAM AYRTON. ESQ FRS. F.S.A.

JOHN BRUCE, ESQ. F.S.A.

J. PAYNE COLLIER, ESQ., F.S.A, DIRECTOR.

BOLTON CORNEY. ESQ

PETER CUNNINGHAM, ESQ. TREASURER.

THE REV. ALEXANDER DYCE.

SIR HENRY ELLIS. K.H. F.R.S.. F.S.A.

BARRON FIELD. ESQ

HENRY HALLAM, ESQ F.R.S., V.P.S.A.

J. O. HALLIWELL ESQ.. F.R.S.. F.S.A.

THE REV. WILLIAM HARNESS

JAMES HEYWOOD. ESQ. F.R.S., F.S.A.

JOHN OXENFORD, ESQ.

T. J. PETTIGREW. ESQ. F.R.S., F.S.A.

J. R. PLANCHÉ, ESQ., F.S.A.

WILLIAM J. THOMS, ESQ., F.S.A.

F. GUEST TOMLINS, ESQ, SECRETARY.

EDWARD V. UTTERSON, ESQ., F.S.A.

SIR FREDERICK BEILBY WATSON, K.C.H., F.R.S.

THOMAS WRIGHT, ESQ., M.A., F.S.A.



REPORT OF THE COUNCIL  
OF  
THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY  
AT  
THE THIRD ANNUAL MEETING OF THE MEMBERS,  
HELD ON  
THE 25TH APRIL, 1877.

---

IN presenting their Third Report, the Council think they may offer their sincere congratulations on the permanent establishment of the Shakespeare Society, as an increased interest seems to be taken in its proceedings by those Members, who have entered on the fourth year of their subscription.

A vast and entertaining field of literature lies open to the Society, and the Council feel the greatest satisfaction at being the means of preserving and disseminating, in a permanent form, valuable and rare productions, that must be alike useful to the philologist, the antiquarian, and the lovers of poetry and fiction. It is hoped that as the Society advances, collections of tracts and other works will be formed, which not only possess intrinsic excellence, such as the works of "Nash" and "Greene," but will also be a storehouse for the student of history, and those who are interested in inquiring into the progress of society.

In order to give facility to the collection of every kind of information relating to the Dramatic and Poetic Literature of the Shakespearean age, the Council have resolved on publishing occasional volumes of Miscellanies, to be entitled "TRANSACTIONS OF THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY." To this undertaking the Members are invited to send communications. The selection will be made by the Committee appointed for the purpose, and a volume issued whenever a sufficient number of papers are collected.

The proposition has arisen from the conviction that many interesting illustrations from our old poets and dramatists are lost from the want of a means of recording and preserving them. Local customs and expressions, and illustrations derived from books or other sources, apparently remote from the subject, frequently occur, which, if registered, would afford to the commentators facts and hints of value. It may also be safely asserted, notwithstanding the labour bestowed on the subject, that of the vast mass of contemporaneous literature, both Foreign and English, there remains much that has either eluded the knowledge or the diligence of the most vigilant illustrators, but which, if recovered, will throw new light on the plots, allusions, and phrases of the time. Many of the older works on Theology, Medicine, Law, and Science, are perused alone by those interested in the particular subjects of which they treat; and if such readers would keep an eye to the result proposed by the Council of the Society, and note any such illustrations as may be met with, they would confer considerable benefit, by opening sources of information that could be in no other way obtained.

The Council, therefore, earnestly solicit the Members and

others to communicate such observations and facts as may occur to them in the course either of their reading, or in their travelling or residence in places where ancient manners and modes of speech are preserved, or such other elucidation of them as may be considered worthy of record.

Contributions should be directed to the Secretary, to the care of the Agent.

Animated by the attention bestowed on the Society in the highest quarters, both of literature and rank, the Council look forward to the extension of the Society to a sphere of usefulness in the preservation of a portion of the country's literature scarcely contemplated at its formation. They earnestly solicit the co-operation of the Members in zealously carrying out, to the fullest extent, the aims of the Society, and deem this will be most effectually compassed by individually endeavouring to increase the number of subscribers, and in actively assisting the Council, both by aiding the reproduction of separate works, and contributing to the "Transactions."

The following six volumes have been printed and distributed during the year which closed 31 December, 1843:—

1. A TREATISE AGAINST DICING, DANCING, PLAYS, AND INTERLUDES, WITH OTHER IDLE PASTIMES. By JOHN NORTH-BROOKE. From the first edition, printed about A.D. 1577. With an introduction and notes, by J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A.

2. THE FIRST SKETCHES OF THE SECOND AND THIRD PARTS OF HENRY THE SIXTH · the one published in 1594, under the title of "The First Part of the Contention between the Houses of York and Lancaster;" and the other in 1595, under the title of "The True Tragedie of Richard Duke of York." Edited by JAMES ORCHARD HALLIWELL, Esq., F.R.S., F.S.A. &c.

3. OBERON'S VISION in the "Midsummer Night's Dream," illustrated by a comparison with Lyle's "Endymion." By the Rev. N. J. HALPIN.

4. THE CHESTER WHITSUN-PLAYS a Collection of Early Dramatic Representations by the Incorporated Trades of Chester. From a MS. in the British Museum, collated with other public and private manuscripts Edited by THOMAS WRIGHT, Esq., F.S.A., Correspondent of the Institute of France. &c. Part I.

5 THE ALLEYN PAPERS a Collection of Original Documents, illustrative of the Life and Times of EDWALD ALLEYN, and of the Early English Stage and Drama. with an Introduction and notes by J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A.

6. HONOUR TRIUMPHANT, OR, A LINE OF LIFE: two Tracts. By JOHN FORDE, the Dramatist, unknown to the editors of his works. And now first reprinted from the original copies published in 1605 and 1620.

The three following works have been issued since the commencement of the present year:—

1 TARLTON'S JESTS, from the edition of 1611; and TARLTON'S NEWS OUT OF PURGATORY, from the earliest copy, preceded by a Life of that celebrated Clown, and an Account of his Jigs and Merry Sayings Edited by J. O. HALLIWELL, Esq., F.R.S., &c

2. THE TRUE TRAGEDIE OF RICHARD THE THIRD, which preceded Shakespeare's Play. From a *unique* copy printed in 1594, 4to., in the Library of his Grace the Duke of Devonshire. To which is added the Latin Play of RICARDVS TERTIVS, by Dr LEGGE, from the Manuscript in Emmanuel College, Cambridge. Edited by BARRON FIELD, Esq

3. The GHOST OF RICHARD THE THIRD, &c. Containing more of him than hath been heretofore shewed, either in Chronicles, Plays, or Poems. By C. B., 4to. 1614. This production is partly founded upon Shakespeare's Tragedy, and partly upon the Chronicles to which he resorted; and it is recommended by introductory Poems, signed Ben Jonson, George Chapman, W. Browne, George Wither, and Robert Daborne. With Introduction and notes by J PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A.

The following are also nearly ready for delivery :—

1. Vol. I. of the Transactions of the Shakespeare Society : being a Miscellany of Contributions illustrative of the Drama and Literature of the Shakespearean Era. To be continued as contributions are received.

\* \* The Council solicit the contributions of Members and others to this Miscellany.

2. THE CHESTER WHITSUN-PLAYS: a Collection of Early Dramatic Representations by the Incorporated Trades of Chester. Edited by THOMAS WRIGHT Esq., F.S.A., Correspondent of the Institute of France, &c. In Two Parts. Part II

3. THE TAMING OF A SHREW, which preceded Shakespeare's Comedy. From the *unique* copies of 1574 and 1596, 4to. in the collections of the Duke of Devonshire, and of Lord Francis Egerton, M.P. Edited by THOMAS AMYOT, Esq., F.R.S., Treas. S.A. &c. With a Fac-simile Title-page of the original edition.

4. SIR THOMAS MORE: an unprinted Historical Play. From the original MS. (licensed for the stage by the Master of the Revels about the year 1590) in the British Museum. Edited by the Rev. ALEXANDER DYCE.

The following works are under revision by the Editors:—

1. A SELECTION FROM THE NOTES WRITTEN BY WILLIAM OLDYS, IN HIS COPY OF LANGBAIN'S LIVES OF THE DRAMATIC POETS, now in the British Museum. To be edited by PETER CUNNINGHAM, Esq.

2. ILLUSTRATIONS OF THE FAIRY MYTHOLOGY OF SHAKESPEARE, selected from rare books and manuscripts, exhibiting the old popular notions respecting fairies, and how far they have been adopted in the "Midsummer Night's Dream." By J. O. HALLIWELL, Esq., F.R.S., Hon. M.R.I.A., Hon. M.R.S.L., F.S.A., &c.

3. A COLLECTION OF ALL THE DOCUMENTS which have reference to the Events of Shakespeare's Life. The Will to be edited by SIR FREDERICK MADDEN, F.R.S., F.S.A., Keeper of the MSS. in the British Museum, with Fac-similes of the Signatures. The Marriage Licence, transcripts from the Registers at Stratford-upon-Avon, and all the other Documents to be edited by JOHN BRUCE, Esq., F.S.A.



4. RALPH ROISTER DOYSTER, the oldest Comedy, and FERREX AND PORREX, the older Tragedy, properly so called, in our language : the one from the *unique* copy in the library of Eton College, and the other from the earliest edition in the collection of the Right Hon. Lord Francis Egerton, M.P. To be edited by W D COOPER, Esq., F.S.A.

5. THE DIARY AND ACCOUNT BOOK OF PHILIP HENSLOWE, between the years 1593 and 1610, in which he entered his various Transactions relating to Plays, Players, and Dramatists. To be edited (by permission of the Master, Warden, and Fellows of Dulwich College) by J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A.

6. FUNEBRIA FLORÆ The Downfal of May-Games, &c. : an attack upon popular amusements. By THOMAS HALL, B.D. 1669, 4to. To be edited by W. B. D. D. TURNBULL, Esq., of Edinburgh, F.S.A. &c.

7. TWO MASQUES, by BEN JONSON, of which Copies in his own handwriting are preserved among the Royal MSS in the British Museum.

\*.\* These MSS were unknown to all the Editors of Ben Jonson's works

The following are the suggested publications, some of which have been accepted by the Council, and others still remain under consideration :—

1. THE FAIR MAID OF THE EXCHANGE, with the Merry Humours and Pleasant Passages of the Cripple of Fanchurch. a Comedy, by THOMAS HEYWOOD. From the first edition, 4to. 1607, collated with subsequent impressions in 1625 and 1637.

2. THE JOURNAL OF A BARRISTER OF THE NAME OF MANNINGHAM, for the years 1600, 1601, and 1602, containing Anecdotes of Shakespeare, Ben Jonson, Marston, Spenser, Sir W. Raleigh, Sir John Davys, &c. To be edited from the MS. in the British Museum, by THOMAS WRIGHT, Esq., F.S.A., Correspondent of the Institute of France, &c.

3. THE PASSIONATE SHEPHERD. a collection of poems by NICHOLAS BRETON. Written in imitation of The Passionate Pilgrim of Shakespeare. From the only existing copy, 1604, 4to

4. RICH'S FAREWELL TO MILITARY PROFESSION. From the

unique copy of the first edition, in 1531, in the Bodleian Library, containing novels upon which were founded "Twelfth Night" and several dramas of the age of Shakespeare To be edited by J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A.,

5. A Volume of BALLADS UPON WHICH OLD PLAYS WERE FOUNDED, OR WHICH WERE FOUNDED UPON OLD PLAYS; including, of course, all those employed by Shakespeare. To be edited by W. D. COOPER, Esq., F.S.A.

6. THE MIRROR OF MONSTERS. an attack upon theatrical performances in 1557. By WILLIAM RANKINS, who afterwards became a Dramatic Poet, and the Author of Satires, &c., printed in 1596.

7. TRANSLATIONS OF TWO ITALIAN COMEDIES. GL' INGANNI AND GL' INGANNATI, the plots of which bear a strong resemblance to Shakespeare's Twelfth Night. By GEORGE MACRONE, Esq.

8. A COLLECTION OF BROADSIDES AND SHORT PIECES. PRINTED AND MANUSCRIPT, in prose and verse, relating to Authors, Plays, and Actors, during the Reigns of Elizabeth, James I., and Charles I.

9. A TRANSLATION OF ECHTERMEYER'S INTRODUCTION TO THE "QUELLEN DER SHAKESPEARE," containing an account of the sources of the Plots of Shakespeare's Plays.

10. A volume of the Names, Lives, and Characters of the Actors in the Plays of MARLOWE, GREENE, PEELE, SHAKESPEARE, LODGE, NASH, BEN JONSON CHAPMAN, DEKKER, WEBSTER, HEYWOOD, MIDDLETON, MASSINGER, &c. alphabetically arranged.

11. PASQUIL'S JESTS, mixed with Mother Bunch's Merriments. Whereunto is added a dozen of Gulls. Pretty and pleasant to drive away the tediousness of a Winter's Evening. From the earliest edition of 1604, compared with several later impressions.

12. A ROYAL ARBOUR OF LOYAL POESIE, consisting of Poems and Songs, and including Dramatic Ballads founded upon Shakespeare's Much Ado about Nothing, Winter's Tale, Merchant of Venice, &c. as well as upon several other plays of the time.

13. DIE SCHONE SIDEA. An early German Drama, thought to be a translation of an English Play, from which Shakespeare derived the plot of the Tempest To be edited by WILLIAM J. THOMAS, Esq., F.S.A., and to be followed by translations of three other German Plays, supposed to contain similar versions of Dramas on which Shakespeare founded Much Ado about Nothing, The Two Gentlemen of Verona, and Titus Andronicus

14. AN ANSWER TO STEPHEN GOSSON'S SCHOOL OF ABUSE. By THOMAS LODGE. Printed about the year 1550.

15 THE ALARM AGAINST USURERS. By THOMAS LODGE: containing a farther reply to Stephen Gosson. From the edition of 1554, 4to., in the Bodleian Library.

It is the annual duty of the Council to state publicly the great obligations of the Society to those gentlemen who have devoted much valuable time and labour to the editing of the various works; a service which is performed entirely gratuitously, and one which no merely pecuniary recompence could adequately remunerate.

It is also their grateful duty, as formerly, to express the obligations, not merely of the Society, but of all the admirers of our early dramatic poetry, to the noblemen and gentlemen who have afforded important facilities by the loan of, or means of consulting, works only to be found in the libraries of the wealthy, or in the possession of those who are curious in the literature of the time of Shakespeare. Without this assistance, several of the productions issued since the formation of the Society would have been either materially incomplete, or entirely deficient. The Curators of our different Public Libraries have also lent most valuable aid: and to those of the British Museum, the Bodleian, and Trinity and Emmanuel Colleges, Cambridge, the Society is especially bound to express its gratitude.

*By order of the Council,*

COVYNGHAM, *President,*

F. G. TOMLINS, *Secretary.*



And we, the Auditors, have further to report, that over and above the present Balance of £229. 3s 6d., there still remain outstanding certain Subscriptions, amounting for the first year to the sum of £30; for the second year to the sum of £70; for the third year to the sum of £125; and for the present year to £417.

We have further to report that the Society remains indebted in the following sums, properly payable out of last year's Subscriptions.—To Mr. Shoberl, for printing Forde's Tracts (the last publication of the third year), £19. 10s. 9d. and to Mr. Stevens the sum of £11. 2s. for miscellaneous printing.

JAMES COMERFORD,  
CHARLES CLARK.

*Dated 22nd April, 1844.*

## ANNUAL MEETING, 26th APRIL, 1844.

The Report of the Council and the Report of the Auditors having been read, the following resolutions were passed:—

RESOLUTION I. That the Report of the Council for the past year be received and printed, and that the thanks of the Society be given to the Council for their services.

RESOLUTION II. That the thanks of the Society be given to His Grace the Duke of Devonshire, for the loan of the unique copy of "The True Tragedie of Richard the Third," which preceded Shakespeare's Play.

RESOLUTION III. That the thanks of the Society be given to the Right Hon. Lord Francis Egerton, M.P., for the loan of a copy of the earliest edition of "Tarlton's Newes out of Purgatory."

RESOLUTION IV. That the thanks of the Society be given to the Master and Fellows of Emmanuel College, Cambridge, for the loan of the manuscript of Dr. Legge's Latin play of "Richardus Tertius."

RESOLUTION V. That the Report of the Auditors be received and printed, and that the thanks of the Society be given to them for their services.

RESOLUTION VI. That the thanks of the Society be given to the President, The Most Noble the Marquis of Conyngham for his lordship's services to the Society, and frequent presiding at the Council, and on the present occasion.

RESOLUTION VII. That the thanks of the Society be given to the Editors of the various books issued for the past year, viz. to Mr. Collier for the editions of "Northbrooke's Treatise," "The Allevyn Papers," and "Forde's Tracts," to Mr. James Orchard Halliwell, for "The First Sketches of the Second and Third Parts of Henry the Sixth;" to the Rev. Mr. Halpin, for his Dissertation on and "Illustration of Oberon's Vision in the Midsummer Night's Dream;" and to Mr. Wright, for "The Chester Whitsun Plays, Part I."

RESOLUTION VIII. That the thanks of the Society be given to the Director for his services.

RESOLUTION IX. That the thanks of the Society be given to the Treasurer for his services.

RESOLUTION X. That the thanks of the Society be given to the Secretary for his services.

BERIAH BOTFIELD, ESQ., M.P., MAJOR SHADWELL CLERKE, F.R.S.; C. PURTON COOPER, ESQ., Q.C., F.R.S., F.S.A.; CHARLES DICKENS, ESQ.; THE REV. LANCELOT SHARPE, M.A., retiring from the Council in compliance with Law IX, the vacancies were filled up by the unanimous election of

SIR HENRY ELLIS, K.H., F.R.S., F.S.A.

REV. W. HARNESS.

JAMES HEYWOOD, ESQ., F.R.S., F.S.A.

JOHN OXENFORD, ESQ.

EDW. V. UTTERSON, ESQ., F.S.A.

and the remaining Members of the Council were re-elected.

The following Members were also elected Auditors for the year ending 26th of April, 1845.

J. W. ALLEN, ESQ.

LEWIS POCOCK, ESQ.

HENRY ROBERTSON, ESQ.

#### AGENT TO THE SOCIETY.

MR THOMAS RODD, 9, Great Newport Street, Long Acre, London, who is empowered to receive Subscriptions, and to whom all letters relative to the delivery of the books must be addressed.

*\*.\* The Subscription to the Society is £1 per annum, payable in advance on the 1st January in each year, which entitles the Subscriber to all the books published in the year for which the subscription is made.*

REPORT OF THE PROCEEDINGS  
OF THE  
FOURTH ANNUAL MEETING OF THE MEMBERS  
OF  
THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY,  
HELD ON THE 26TH APRIL, 1845.

AT THE ROOMS OF THE ROYAL SOCIETY OF LITERATURE, NO. 4,  
ST. MARTIN'S PLACE, TRAPALGAR SQUARE, LONDON.

---

REPORT OF THE COUNCIL.

The Council, in presenting their Fourth Annual Report to the Society, have little more to do than congratulate the members on its continued success, and recapitulate the titles of the works issued in the course of the past year.

In compliance with a wish generally expressed, three extremely rare plays have been printed, affording considerable illustration of the drama of the period, and more particularly of the question of Shakespeare's obligation to his predecessors. The First Volume of a Miscellaneous Collection has also been issued, which, it is hoped, will be received as initiative of a series, that must prove very interesting and instructive, could Members of the Society and the possessors of rare documents be induced to contribute to it. It may be here stated that some papers of much interest have been most liberally furnished for the Volume now in progress; and it is hoped that this may induce others to aid in the establishment



of a Miscellany worthy of the subject. The Council beg to reiterate their earnest anxiety to receive contributions from the Members generally.

The labour and research bestowed for the last hundred years on the illustration of our national poet, and his great contemporaries, prove the extreme difficulty there is in reproducing their works so as to give full expression and effect to their wonderful genius; and the reception afforded to all

works on the subject, not only by those of their own country and language, but by the whole of Europe, establish also that the product of such labour and research, however necessarily slow in its progress and small in its results, is eagerly sought for and gratefully appreciated.

The amount of labour necessary to repair the inroads of time, and, by careful elucidation, to restore the full meaning of the ever-varying and universal allusions of such quick and prolific fancies as those of our early dramatists, can only be thoroughly understood by those who have had occasion to consult the vast quantity of material from which it must be acquired. This remark is made as some answer to those who expected that more directly illustrative works would have been able to be procured by antiquaries. The Society, however, has the satisfaction of seeing that the books issued by it have been universally appealed to by the numerous writers and commentators who, in reviews as well as separate works, have lately so largely availed themselves of the materials; thus proving the practical utility of the works selected.

The Council cannot too continually keep before the attention of lovers of old literature that it is only by extreme and patient perseverance that sufficient materials can be collected to entirely remove the obsolescence and incrustations which the lapse of time and change of language and manners have wrought in these great writers. The experience of every day, however, convinces all classes of readers that no amount of labour can be misspent in elucidating that which in itself is so truly excellent

One of the main purposes of the Society, as stated in its original prospectus and ever since kept closely in view, was to induce persons possessing old family papers to examine them, in the hope of finding something, if not directly illustrative of Shakespeare, illustrative at least of our early drama and stage. This object has already, in part, been accomplished by the work last issued: a printed copy of one of our great dramatist's most popular historical plays, from a contemporary manuscript possibly anterior to the earliest of the printed editions. It has been preserved for ages among the domestic records of Sir Edward Dering, of Surrenden, Kent, Baronet; and the liberality of the possessor, in allowing it to be printed, cannot be too highly estimated, nor too often mentioned, as an example and an incentive to others who, thus encouraged, may unexpectedly discover that they have long had documents of a similar character in their care and custody.

The following six volumes have been printed and distributed during the year which closed 31 December, 1844:—

1. *TARLTON'S JESTS*, from the edition of 1511: and *TARLTON'S NEWES OUT OF PURGATORY*, from the earliest copy, preceded by a Life of that celebrated Comedian, and an Account of his Jigs and Merry Sayings. Edited by J. O. HALLIWELL, Esq., F.R.S., &c.

2. *THE TRUE TRAGEDIE OF RICHARD THE THIRD*, which preceded Shakespeare's Play. From a *unique* copy printed in 1594, 4to, in the library of his Grace the Duke of Devonshire. To which is added the Latin Play of *RICHARDUS TERTIUS*, by Dr. LEGGE, from the Manuscript in Emmanuel College, Cambridge. Edited by BARRON FIELD, Esq.

3. *THE GHOST OF RICHARD THE THIRD*, &c. Containing more of him than hath been heretofore shewed, either in Chronicles, Plays, or Poems. By C B., 4to., 1614; partly founded upon Shakespeare's Tragedy, and partly upon the Chronicles to which he resorted: and recommended by hitherto unknown Poems by Ben Jonson, George Chapman, W. Browne, George Wither, and Robert Daborne. With Introduction and notes by J PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A.

4. *SIR THOMAS MORE*: an unprinted Historical Play. From the original MS. (licensed for the stage by the Master of the Revels about

the year 1590) in the British Museum. Edited by the Rev. ALEXANDER DYCE.

5. Vol. I. of THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY'S PAPERS: being a Miscellany of Contributions illustrative of the Drama and Literature of the Shakespearean Era. To be continued as contributions are received.

6. THE TAMING OF A SHREW, which preceded Shakespeare's Comedy. From the *unique* copies of 1594 and 1596, 4to., in the collections of the Duke of Devonshire, and of Lord Francis Egerton, M.P. Edited by THOMAS AMYOT, Esq., F.R.S., Treas. S.A. &c With a Fac-simile title-page of the original edition.

The two following works have been issued since the commencement of the present year:—

1. ILLUSTRATIONS OF THE FAIRY MYTHOLOGY OF SHAKESPEARE, selected from rare books and manuscripts, exhibiting the old popular notions respecting fairies, and how far they have been adopted in the "Midsummer Night's Dream." By J. O. HALLIWELL, Esq., F.R.S., Hon. M.R.I.A., F.S.A., &c.

2. SHAKESPEARE'S PLAY OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH, printed from a Contemporary Manuscript. Edited by JAMES ORCHARD HALLIWELL, Esq., F.R.S., &c. With two fac-similes of the handwritings.

The following works are in the press, and will be issued as soon as completed:—

1. THE DIARY AND ACCOUNT-BOOK OF PHILIP HENSLOWE, between about the years 1590 and 1610, in which he entered his various Transactions relating to Plays, Players, and Dramatists. Edited (by permission of the Master, Warden, and Fellows of Dulwich College) by J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A.

2. Vol. II. of THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY'S PAPERS.

3. THE CHESTER WHITSUN-PLAYS. a Collection of Early Dramatic Representations by the Incorporated Trades of Chester. Edited by THOMAS WRIGHT, Esq., F.S.A., Corresponding Member of the Institute of France, &c. In Two Parts Part II.

The following works are under revision by the Editors:—

1. NOTICES OF SHAKESPEARE AND HIS WORKS, from the earliest period to the publication of the "Theatrum Poetarum," in 1675, with

memoranda drawn from other sources on his personal and literary history. By BOLTON CORNEY, Esq.

2. *THE FAIR MAID OF THE EXCHANGE*, with the *Merry Humours* and *Pleasant Passages of the Cripple of Fanchurch*: a Comedy, by THOMAS HEYWOOD. From the first edition, 1607: accompanied by the *Play of FORTUNE BY LAND AND SEA*, by Thomas Heywood and W. Rowley. from the edition of 1655. To be edited by BARRON FIELD, Esq.

3. *A SELECTION FROM THE NOTES WRITTEN BY WILLIAM OLDYS, IN HIS COPY OF LANGBAIN'S LIVES OF THE DRAMATIC POETS*, now in the British Museum. To be edited by PETER CUNNINGHAM, Esq.

4. *A COLLECTION OF THE DOCUMENTS* which have referred to the Events of Shakespeare's Life. The Will to be edited by FREDERICK MADDEN, F.R.S., F.S.A., Keeper of the MSS. in the British Museum, with Fac-similes of the Signatures. The Marriage Licence, transcripts from the Registers at Stratford-upon-Avon, and all the other Documents, to be edited by JOHN BRUCE, Esq., F.S.A.

5. *FUNEbria FLORÆ*. The Downfall of May-Games, &c.: an attack upon popular amusements. By THOMAS HALL, B.D. 1660, 4to. To be edited by W. B. D. D. TURNBULL, Esq., of Edinburgh, F.S.A., &c.

6. *TWO MASQUES*, by BEN JONSON, of which Copies in his own handwriting, unknown to all the Editors of Ben Jonson's works, are preserved among the Royal MSS in the British Museum.

The following are the suggested publications, some of which have been accepted by the Council, and others still remain under consideration:—

1. *AN ESSAY ON THE MADNESS OF SOME OF SHAKESPEARE'S PRINCIPAL CHARACTERS*, illustrated by examples ancient and modern, with a view to show their peculiar characteristics, and exact truth to nature. By FORBES WINSLOW, Esq., M.D.

2. *RALPH ROISTER DOYSTER*, the oldest Comedy, and *FERREX AND PORREX*, the oldest Tragedy, properly so called, in our language: the one from the *unique* copy in the library of Eton College, and the other from the earliest edition in the collection of the Right Hon. Lord Francis Egerton, M.P. To be edited by W. D. COOPER, Esq., F.S.A.

3. *THE JOURNAL OF A BARRISTER OF THE NAME OF MANNINGHAM*, for the years 1600, 1601, and 1602: containing Anecdotes of Shakespeare, Ben Jonson, Marston, Spenser, Sir W. Raleigh, Sir John Davys, &c.

To be edited from the MS. in the British Museum, by THOMAS WRIGHT, Esq, F.S.A. Correspondent of the Institute of France, &c

4. THE PASSIONATE SHEPHERD a collection of poems by NICHOLAS BRETON. Written in imitation of poems in The Passionate Pilgrim of Shakespeare. From the only existing copy, 1604, 4to.

5. RICH'S FAREWELL TO MILITARY PROFESSION From the *unique* copy of the first edition, in 1581, in the Bodleian Library, containing novels upon which were founded "Twelfth Night" and several dramas of the age of Shakespeare. To be edited by J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq, F.S.A.

6. WHEN YOU SEE ME YOU KNOW ME, a historical play on events of the reign of Henry VIII. (perhaps anterior to that of Shakespeare) by Samuel Rowley. From the first edition in 1605, collated with the re-impression of 1632.

7. THE MIRROR OF MONSTERS. an attack upon theatrical performances in 1587. By WILLIAM RANKINS. who afterwards became a Dramatic Poet, and the author of Satires, &c, printed in 1596.

8. TRASLATIONS OF TWO ITALIAN COMEDIES, GL' INGANNI AND GL' INGANNATI, the plots of which bear a strong resemblance to Shakespeare's Twelfth Night. By GEORGE MACIRONE, Esq.

9. A COLLECTION OF BROADSIDES AND SHORT PIECES, PRINTED AND MANUSCRIPT, in prose and verse, relating to Authors, Plays, and Actors, during the Reigns of ELIZABETH, JAMES I. and CHARLES I.

10. A TRANSLATION OF ECHTERMEYER'S INTRODUCTION TO THE "QUELLEN DER SHAKESPEARE," containing an account of the sources of the Plots of Shakespeare's Plays.

11. A volume of the Names, Lives, and Characters of the Actors in the Plays of MARLOWE, GREENE, PEELE, SHAKESPEARE, LODGE, NASH, BEN JONSON, CHAPMAN, DEKKER, WEBSTER, HEYWOOD, MIDDLETON, MASSINGER, &c., alphabetically arranged.

12. PASQUIL'S JESTS, mixed with Mother Bunch's Merriments. Whereunto is added a dozen of Gulls Pretty and pleasant to drive away the tediousness of a Winter's Evening. From the earliest edition of 1604, compared with several later impressions.

13. A ROYAL ARBOUR OF LOYAL POESIE, consisting of Poems and Songs, and including Dramatic Ballads founded upon Shakespeare's Much Ado About Nothing, Winter's Tale, Merchant of Venice, &c, as well as upon several other plays of the time.

14. DIE SCHÖNE IDEE. An early German Drama, thought to be a

translation of an English Play, from which Shakespeare derived the plot of the *Tempest*. To be edited by WILLIAM J. THOMAS, Esq., F.S.A., and to be followed by translations of three other German Plays, supposed to contain similar versions of Dramas on which Shakespeare founded *Much Ado about Nothing*, *The Two Gentlemen of Verona*, and *Titus Andronicus*.

15. AN ANSWER TO STEPHEN GOSSON'S SCHOOL OF ABUSE. By THOMAS LODGE. Printed about the year 1580.

16. The ALARUM AGAINST USURERS. By THOMAS LODGE, containing a farther reply to Stephen Gosson. From the edition of 1584. 4to. in the Bodleian Library.

17. A Volume of BALLADS UPON WHICH OLD PLAYS WERE FOUNDED, OR WHICH WERE FOUNDED UPON OLD PLAYS: including, of course, all those employed by Shakespeare, and many others in the Roxburghe Collection now deposited in the British Museum.

It is the annual duty of the Council to state publicly the great obligations of the Society to those gentlemen who have devoted much valuable time and labour to the editing of the various works; a service which is performed entirely gratuitously, and one which no merely pecuniary recompence could adequately remunerate.

It is also their grateful duty, as formerly, to express the obligations, not merely of the Society, but of all the admirers of our early dramatic poetry, to the noblemen and gentlemen who have afforded important facilities by the loan of, or means of consulting, works only to be found in the libraries of the wealthy, or in the possession of those who are curious in the literature of the time of Shakespeare.

The Society has also to express their sense of the kindness and liberality of the Master, Wardens, and Fellows of Dulwich College, in allowing their valuable and interesting Manuscript of Henslowe's Diary to remain so long in the hands of the Society. The Council are happy to state that

this work, so important to the history of the drama, has been nearly completed for publication, and will be the next work placed in the hands of the Members.

*By order of the Council,*

CONYNGHAM, *President.*

F. G. TOMLINS, *Secretary.*

## REPORT OF THE AUDITORS.

We, the Auditors appointed to audit the Receipts and Expenditure of the Shakespeare Society, certify that the Treasurer has exhibited to us his Accounts from the 18th of April, 1844, to the 18th of April, 1845; that we have examined the same, together with the vouchers in support thereof, and find the whole Account correct and satisfactory.

And we further report that the following is a correct Abstract of the Receipts and Expenditure of the Society for the above period.

RECEIPTS.		EXPENDITURE.	
	£ s. d.		£ s. d.
Balance in the hands of the Treasurer on the 15th of April, 1844, as per Report of Auditors . . .	229 3 6	To Mr. Shober. Jun. for Printing . . . . .	130 15 9
New and Arrear Subscriptions for former years .	273 0 0	Mr. Stevens, for Miscellaneous Printing . . .	28 10 0
Subscriptions for the Current year. . . . .	270 0 0	Bonsor and Co., for Paper	87 3 0
Balance in the hands of the Secretary . . . . .	10 10 2	Westley and Clarke, for Binding . . . . .	79 12 0
		Transcripts . . . . .	34 9 6
		To the Secretary . . . .	52 10 0
		To the Royal Society of Literature, for One Year's use of their Council Room to 15th December, 1844	12 0 0
		To Mr. Rodd, the Society's Agent, for the delivery of Books, &c. . . . .	25 8 0
		To the Secretary, for Advertisements, Postage, &c. . . . .	19 9 10
		Advertisement in the Quarterly Review . . . . .	5 0 0
		To Mr. Cullford. per centage on Arrear Subscriptions received by him .	6 17 0
		Treasurer's Expenses and other Expenses incurred by Local Agents—including a Gratuity to the Doorkeeper of the Royal Society of Literature. .	4 15 6
			486 10 7
		Balance in hand . . . .	301 3 1
	787 13 8		787 13 8



And we, the Auditors, have further to report that, over and above the present Balance of £301 3s. 1d., there still remain outstanding certain subscriptions, amounting for the first year to the sum of £5, for the second year to the sum of £15, for the third year to the sum of £41, for the fourth year to the sum of £113, and for the present year to £308: in all £482.

We have further to report that the Society remains indebted in the following sums, properly payable out of last year's Subscription: to Mr. Shoberl for Printing, £82 15s. 9d, and to Messrs. Bonsor and Co. for Paper supplied £50.

J. W. ALLEN.

HENRY ROBERTSON.

LEWIS POCOCK

## ANNUAL MEETING, 26th APRIL, 1845.

The Report of the Council and the Report of the Auditors having been read, the following Resolutions were passed —

RESOLUTION I That the Report of the Council for the past year be received and printed, and that the thanks of the Society be given to the Council for their services

RESOLUTION II. That the Report of the Auditors be received and printed, and that the thanks of the Society be given to them for their services.

RESOLUTION III. That the thanks of the Society be given to Sir Edward Dering, Bart., for the loan of the unique manuscript of Shakespeare's Henry Fourth.

RESOLUTION IV. That the thanks of the Society be given to the President, The Most Noble the Marquis of Conyngham, for his lordship's services to the Society.

RESOLUTION V That the thanks of the Society be given to the Editors of the various books issued for the past year, viz. to Mr. James Orchard Halliwell, for the editions of "Tarlton's Jests," "Illustrations of Fairy Mythology," and Manuscript of Shakespeare's "Henry the Fourth;" to Mr Barron Field, for the edition of "The True Tragedie of Richard the Third," &c.; to Mr. Collier, for "The Ghost of Richard the Third;" to the Rev. Alexander Dyce, for the edition of "Sir Thomas More;" to Mr. Amyot, for the edition of "The Taming of a Shrew," &c.; and to the various Contributors to the Volume of the Society's Papers.

RESOLUTION VI. That the thanks of the Society be given to the Director, and Treasurer, and Secretary, for their services.

JOHN BRUCE, ESQ., F.S.A., BARRON FIELD, ESQ., JAMES HEYWOOD, ESQ., F.R.S., JOHN OXENFORD, ESQ., THOMAS WRIGHT, ESQ., F.S.A., retiring from the Council in compliance with Law IX., the vacancies were filled up by the unanimous election of

LIEUT.-GENERAL SIR ANDREW BARNARD, K.C.B.

BERIAH BOTFIELD, ESQ., M.P.

JOHN FORSTER, ESQ.

WILLIAM C MACREADY, ESQ.

SAMUEL NAYLOR, ESQ.

and the remaining Members of the Council were re-elected.

The following Members were also elected Auditors for the year ending 26th of April, 1846.

THOMAS BREWER, ESQ.

J. GOUGH NICHOLS, ESQ., F.S.A.

THOMAS POWELL, ESQ.

REPORT OF THE COUNCIL  
OF  
THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY  
TO THE  
FIFTH ANNUAL MEETING OF THE MEMBERS,  
HELD ON  
THE 27TH APRIL. 1846.

---

In laying before the General Meeting of the Members of the Shakespeare Society the Fifth Annual Report, the Council feel justified in taking a highly gratifying retrospect of the state of its affairs.

One of the most satisfactory circumstances, in connexion with the results of the five years' labours of the Society, is the increased and increasing zeal displayed by investigators and collectors of all matters relating to our early drama and stage. The Society was formed mainly for the encouragement and extension of such a spirit, and the Council is happy to add that it has fully answered its purpose. It was hastily supposed by many that the subject was nearly exhausted by the inquiries of about the last century and a half; but the exertions and productions of the Shakespeare Society have much tended to remove this error, and to show that many sources of valuable information remained unexplored. Into some of these the Society has already penetrated, and others are con-

stantly presenting themselves which will, of course, not be neglected. Now that an association has been established, to which such information may be addressed, and where it will always be welcome, the beneficial consequences are daily making themselves more apparent.

The work last issued to the Members, the ancient interlude of "The Marriage of Wit and Wisdom," may be adduced as one proof of this assertion. The manuscript from which it has been printed was found in the same family depository as the manuscript of Shakespeare's "Henry the Fourth," which was last year placed in the hands of the Members. We have every reason to believe that, after due search has been made, other valuable relics of a similar description will be brought to light. The ancestor of the liberal possessor—Sir Edward Dering—was himself a contributor to our dramatic literature, for private performance in his household, and it has been ascertained that he was a collector of not a few manuscript plays, besides those already printed by the Shakespeare Society. The very existence of "The Marriage of Wit and Wisdom" had been denied by the most competent authorities; and although its literary merits, measured by the standard of the great era of our drama, may appear comparatively small, it adds a new name to our list of authors in this department, and, on account of its early date and some remarkable peculiarities of construction, it must be looked upon not only as a very curious but a highly valuable addition to our national stores of illustration.

Some unexpected facts have also come to the knowledge of the Council, which, but for the spirit of inquiry recently awakened, might for ever have remained in oblivion. It is impossible here to do more than allude briefly to a few of them—such as the existence of an Edward and a Thomas Shakespeare, the former certainly, and the latter probably, connected with the stage, and in the lifetime of our great dramatist; the birth of Nathaniel Field, the actor in Ben Jon-

son's as well as in Shakespeare's plays, who turns out to be the son of one of the earliest and hottest enemies of theatrical performances; the second marriage of Ben Jonson, a circumstance not even speculated upon by his biographers; the identification of the register of John Fletcher as that of the burial of "the poet," a point hitherto doubted; the marriage of John Webster, the author of many dramas; the death of George Wilkins, the writer of "*The Miseries of Enforced Marriage*;" and the birth and parentage of John Lowen, one of the original and distinguished representatives of the characters of Shakespeare.

To these facts may be added the discovery of some new and important documents relating to our stage-history—patents to companies of players, who were until now supposed to have acted without any such royal authority; and an unprecedented commission to the Master of the Revels, in the middle of the reign of Elizabeth, giving him the most arbitrary power over actors and authors. These, and other instruments of the like kind, too brief to be separately printed, will be included in the next volume of "*The Shakespeare Society's Papers*."

It is very satisfactory to be able to state that the Society is not only exerting a powerful influence at home, but that it is exciting a strong interest abroad. In nearly all the British colonies it has members, who anxiously look for the periodical arrival of their books: to the United States of America many sets are regularly sent; and on the continent of Europe, and especially in Germany, not a few of the most eminent literary men are subscribers. The most eager curiosity is everywhere evinced as to the results of the labours and investigations of the Society.

The following volumes have been printed and distributed during the year which closed 31 December, 1845:—

1. *THE DIARY AND ACCOUNT-BOOK OF PHILIP HENSLOWE*, between the years 1590 and 1610, in which he entered his various Transactions

Master, Warden, and Fellows of Dulwich College) by J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A.

2. SHAKESPEARE'S PLAY OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH, printed from a Contemporary Manuscript. Edited by JAMES ORCHARD HALLIWELL, Esq., F.R.S., &c. With two fac-similes of the handwritings.

3. Vol. II of THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY'S PAPERS: being a Miscellany of Contributions illustrative of the Drama and Literature of the Shakespearean Era. To be continued as contributions are received.

4. ILLUSTRATIONS OF THE FAIRY MYTHOLOGY OF SHAKESPEARE, selected from rare books and manuscripts, exhibiting the old popular notions respecting fairies, and how far they have been adopted in the "Midsummer Night's Dream." By J. O. HALLIWELL, Esq., F.R.S., Hon. M.R.I.A., F.S.A., &c.

In introducing the titles of the two works which have been issued since the commencement of the present year, the Council cannot refrain from expressing its deep regret at the loss of a gentleman, one of the last labours of whose life may be said to have been the editing of the first of them. It is needless to dwell on the qualifications and accomplishments of Mr. Barron Field for the task he undertook: they are testified by the works he has left behind him. His disinterested zeal in the cause of literature was proverbial among his friends, and such of the Members of the Shakespeare Society as were not personally acquainted with him have abundant reason to acknowledge it. It was his intention to have completed, at intervals, the collection of Thomas Heywood's Dramatic Works, and to have introduced the whole by a biographical account of the poet: that duty must now unhappily devolve into other hands, to be excited by his worthy example and influenced by his generous spirit.

The two works already issued for the year 1846 are:—

THE FAIR MAID OF THE EXCHANGE, with the Merry Humours and Pleasant Passages of the Cripple of Fanchurch: a Comedy, by THOMAS HEYWOOD. From the first edition, 1607: accompanied by the Play of

FORTUNE BY LAND AND SEA, by Thomas Heywood and W. Rowley, from the edition of 1655. Edited by BARRON FIELD, Esq.

THE MARRIAGE OF WIT AND WISDOM, an Ancient Interlude. To which are added Illustrations of Shakespeare and The Early English Drama. Edited by JAMES ORCHARD HALLIWELL, Esq., F.R.S., Hon. M.R.I.A., Hon. M.R.S.L., F.S.A., etc.

The following works are in the press, and will be sent to the members as soon as they are completed.

1. THE CHESTER WHITSUN-PLAYS. a Collection of Early Dramatic Representations by the Incorporated Trades of Chester. Edited by THOMAS WRIGHT, Esq., F.S.A., Corresponding Member of the Institute of France, &c. In Two Parts. Part II.

2. MEMOIRS OF THE TWENTY-SIX PLAYERS enumerated at the commencement of the folio of 1623, as "the Principal Actors" in the dramas of Shakespeare; including such facts as were collected by Malone and Chalmers and many other particulars with which they were unacquainted, together with a correction of the errors into which they fell. By J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A.

3. THE FAIR MAID OF THE WEST, or a Girl worth Gold: a play, in two parts, by THOMAS HEYWOOD. From the edition of 1631, 4to.

4. A Volume of BALLADS UPON WHICH OLD PLAYS WERE FOUNDED, OR WHICH WERE FOUNDED UPON OLD PLAYS; including all those employed by Shakespeare, and many others in the Roxburghe Collection now deposited in the British Museum. To be edited by W. J. THOMS, Esq., F.S.A.

5. A SELECTION FROM THE NOTES WRITTEN BY WILLIAM OLDYS, IN HIS COPY OF LANGBAIN'S LIVES OF THE DRAMATIC POETS, now in the British Museum. To be edited by PETER CUNNINGHAM, Esq.

6. RALPH ROISTER DOYSTER, the oldest Comedy, and FERREX AND PORREX, the oldest Tragedy, properly so called, in our language: the one from the *unique* copy in the library of Eton College, and the other from the earliest edition in the collection of the Right Hon Lord Francis Egerton, M.P. To be edited by W. D. COOPER, Esq., F.S.A.

The following works are still in the hands of the editors, and will be put to press without more delay than is unavoidable.

1. NOTICES OF SHAKESPEARE AND HIS WORKS, from the earliest



period to the publication of the "Theatrum Poetarum," in 1675; with memoranda, drawn from other sources, on his personal and literary history. By BOLTON CORNEY, Esq.

2. A COLLECTION OF THE DOCUMENTS which have reference to the Events of Shakespeare's Life The Will to be edited by Sir FREDERICK MADDEN, F.R.S., F.S.A., Keeper of the MSS in the British Museum, with Fac-similes of the Signatures. The Marriage Licence, transcripts from the Registers at Stratford-upon-Avon, and other Documents. to be edited by JOHN BRUCE, Esq., F.S.A.

3. FUNEBRIA FLORÆ. The Downfal of May-Games, &c.: an attack upon popular amusements. By THOMAS HALL, B.D. 1660, 4to. To be edited by W. B. D. D. TURNBULL, Esq., of Edinburgh, F.S.A., &c.

4. AN ESSAY ON THE MADNESS OF SOME OF SHAKESPEARE'S PRINCIPAL CHARACTERS, illustrated by examples ancient and modern, with a view to show their peculiar characteristics, and exact truth to nature. By FORBES WINSLOW, Esq., M.D.

5. RICH'S FAREWELL TO MILITARY PROFESSION. From the *unique* copy of the first edition, in 1581, in the Bodleian Library, containing novels upon which were founded "Twelfth Night" and several dramas of the age of Shakespeare. To be edited by J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A.

6. WHEN YOU SEE ME YOU KNOW ME, a historical play on events of the reign of Henry VIII. (perhaps anterior to that of Shakespeare) by Samuel Rowley. From the first edition in 1605, collated with the re-impression of 1632

7. THE MIRROR OF MONSTERS an attack upon theatrical performances in 1587. By WILLIAM RANKINS, who afterwards became a Dramatic Poet, and the author of Satires, &c., printed in 1596.

8. TRANSLATIONS OF TWO ITALIAN COMEDIES, GL' INGANNI AND GL' INGANNATI, the plots of which bear a strong resemblance to Shakespeare's Twelfth Night. By GEORGE MACIRONE, Esq.

9. A TRANSLATION OF ECHTERMAYER'S INTRODUCTION TO THE "QUELLEN DER SHAKESPEARE," containing an account of the sources of the Plots of Shakespeare's Plays.

10. THE JOURNAL OF A BARRISTER OF THE NAME OF MANNINGHAM, for the years 1600, 1601, and 1602; containing Anecdotes of Shakespeare, Ben Jonson, Marston, Spenser, Sir W. Raleigh, Sir John Davys, &c.

To be edited from the MS. in the British Museum, by THOMAS WRIGHT, Esq., F.S.A., Correspondent of the Institute of France, &c.

11. THE DEFENCE OF PLAYS AND PLAYERS, by THOMAS LODGE, being an answer to Stephen Gosson's *School of Abuse*, 1579. Printed without date; and without title-page, in consequence of the condemnation of it by the public authorities.

12. THE ALARUM AGAINST USURERS. By THOMAS LODGE, containing a reply to Stephen Gosson's "*Ephemerides of Phialo.*" From the edition of 1584, 4to., in the Bodleian Library.

13. TWO MASQUES, by BEN JONSON, of which Copies in his own handwriting, unknown to the Editors of Ben Jonson's works, are preserved among the Royal MSS. in the British Museum.

14. DIE SCHÖNE IDEE. An early German Drama, thought to be a translation of an English Play, from which Shakespeare derived the plot of the *Tempest*. To be edited by WILLIAM J. THOMS, Esq., F.S.A., and to be followed by translations of three other German Plays, supposed to contain similar versions of Dramas on which Shakespeare founded *Much Ado about Nothing*, *The Two Gentlemen of Verona*, and *Titus Andronicus*.

15. A volume of the Names, Lives, and Characters of the original Actors in the Plays of MARLOWE, GREENE, PEELE, LODGE, NASH, BEN JONSON, BEAUMONT AND FLETCHER, CHAPMAN, DEKKER, WEBSTER, HEYWOOD, MIDDLETON, MASSINGER, &c., alphabetically arranged. By J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A., etc.

16. PASQUIL'S JESTS, mixed with Mother Bunch's Merriments. Whereunto is added a dozen of Gulls. Pretty and pleasant to drive away the tediousness of a Winter's Evening. From the earliest edition of 1604, compared with several later impressions.

17. A ROYAL ARBOUR OF LOYAL POESIE, consisting of Poems and Songs, and including Dramatic Ballads founded upon Shakespeare's *Much Ado About Nothing*, *Winter's Tale*, *Merchant of Venice*, &c., as well as upon several other plays of the time.

It has been the grateful duty of the Council to close each succeeding report with an expression of the continued obligations of the Society to noblemen and gentlemen who by the loan of printed books or manuscripts have facilitated the attainment

of its objects. On the present occasion the Council feels especially called upon to acknowledge the debt of gratitude the Society owes to the Duke of Devonshire. His Grace has in his matchless library a vast number of original sketches and drawings by Inigo Jones, not merely for the characters in masques, but in plays acted at court; and as this great architect and artist was contemporary with Shakespeare, Ben Jonson, and our other dramatists of that period, it will be at once perceived how importantly his sketches and drawings must illustrate the state of our early stage, particularly as regards costume and the manner in which particular actors dressed the parts they represented. The Duke of Devonshire, at the request of the Director, at once put his whole collection into the hands of the Council; and a work is now in preparation, to be devoted chiefly to the dramatic entertainments before royalty in the reigns of Elizabeth, James I., and Charles I., but embracing also some curious and novel features with respect to popular theatrical amusements. As the treasures accumulated by the Duke of Devonshire are of inappreciable value, and indispensable for this undertaking, the Members will be fully sensible of the great liberality of his Grace in placing them unrestrictedly at their disposal. Various fac-similes have in consequence been made, and will accompany the volume in question.

*By order of the Council,*

CONYNGHAM, *President.*

F. G. TOMLINS, *Secretary.*

## REPORT OF THE AUDITORS.

We, the Auditors appointed to audit the Receipts and Expenditure of the Shakespeare Society, certify that the Treasurer has exhibited to us his Accounts from the 18th of April, 1845, to the 18th of April, 1846; that we have examined the same, together with the vouchers in support thereof, and find the whole Account correct and satisfactory.

And we further report that the following is a correct Abstract of the Receipts and Expenditure of the Society for the above period.

RECEIPTS.			EXPENDITURE.		
	£	s. d.		£	s. d.
Balance in the hands of the Treasurer on the 18th of April, 1845, as per Report of Auditors . . .	301	3 1	To Mr. Shoberl, Jun., for Printing . . . . .	183	19 0
New and Arrear Subscriptions for the first year . . .	6	0 0	Bonsor and Co., for Paper . . . . .	50	0 0
“ second “ . . .	6	0 0	Westley and Clarke, for Binding . . . . .	56	10 0
“ third “ . . .	10	0 0	Transcripts and Facsimiles . . . . .	23	11 8
“ fourth “ . . .	20	0 0	To the Secretary . . . . .	52	10 0
“ fifth “ . . .	182	0 0	To the Royal Society of Literature, for One Year's use of their Council Room to 15th December, 1845 . . . . .	12	0 0
Subscriptions for the Current year. . . . .	266	0 0	Advertising . . . . .	15	9 6
Amount of “Composition” received from John Miland, Esq., over and above his Subscription for 1845, included in former account . . . . .	10	0 0	Postage, &c. . . . .	5	0 8
Amount of “Composition” received from G. J. Allen, Esq., Master of Dulwich College . . . . .	11	0 0	To Mr. Rodd, the Society's Agent, for the delivery of Books, &c. . . . .	43	13 6
			Treasurer's Expenses and other Expenses incurred by Local Agents—including Post Office Orders and a Gratuity to the Doorkeeper of the Royal Society of Literature. . . . .	8	12 6
				456	6 10
			Balance . . . . .	355	16 3
	812	3 1		812	3 1

And we, the Auditors, have further to report that, over and above the present Balance of £335 16s. 3d., there still remain outstanding certain subscriptions of Members whose names are included in the printed lists of the Society, amounting in the *first* year to £3; in the *second* to £12; in the *third* to £27; in the *fourth* to £74; in the *fifth* to £115, and in the current year to £279. Great exertions have been made by the Treasurer and Secretary to subdue the arrear subscriptions, and in many cases we observe successfully.

We have further to report that the bill of Mr. Shoberl for part of the Printing executed for the Society during the last year is still unpaid; as is the bill of Messrs. Bonsor and Co. for Paper supplied to the Society during the same period.

JOHN GOUGH NICHOLS.

THOMAS POWELL.

21st April, 1846.

ANNUAL MEETING, 27th APRIL, 1846.

---

The Report of the Council and the Report of the Auditors having been read, the following Resolutions were passed:—

RESOLUTION I. That the Report of the Council for the past year be received and printed, and that the thanks of the Society be given to the Council for their services.

RESOLUTION II. That the Report of the Auditors be received and printed, and that the thanks of the Society be given to them for their services.

RESOLUTION III. That the thanks of the Society be given to Sir Edward Dering, Bart., for the loan of the unique manuscript of the Interlude of Wit and Wisdom, and to the Rev. Mr. Larking for his kindness in communicating it to the Society.

RESOLUTION IV. That the thanks of the Society be given to the President, The Most Noble the Marquis of Conyngham, for his lordship's services to the Society.

RESOLUTION V. That the thanks of the Meeting be given to Mr. Richard Troward, for his liberality and kindness in producing and exhibiting the original Mortgage Deed of Shakespeare's property in the Blackfriars, signed by Shakespeare.

RESOLUTION VI. That the thanks of the Society be given to the Editors of the various books issued for the past year, and to the Contributors to the Second Volume of the Society's Papers.

RESOLUTION VII. That the thanks of the Society be given to the Director, and Treasurer, and Secretary, for their services.

LIEUT.-GENERAL SIR ANDREW BARNARD, K.C.B., BERIAH BOTT-FIELD, ESQ., M.P., SAMUEL NAYLOR, ESQ., EDWARD V. UTTERSON, ESQ., AND SIR FREDERICK BEILBY WATSON, K.C.H., retiring from the Council in compliance with Law IX., the vacancies were filled up by the unanimous election of

BAYLE BERNARD, ESQ.

THE REV. ALEXANDER DYCE.

THE REV. H. H. MILMAN.

THE REV. J. MITFORD.

MR. SERJEANT TALFOURD, D.C.L.

and the remaining Members of the Council were re-elected.

The following Members were also elected Auditors for the year ending 26th of April, 1847.

SCROPE AYRTON, ESQ.

ROBERT BELL, ESQ.

HENRY HILL, ESQ.

---

#### AGENT TO THE SOCIETY,

MR. THOMAS RODD, 9, Great Newport Street, Long Acre, London, who is empowered to receive Subscriptions, and to whom all letters relative to the delivery of the books must be addressed.

---

*\* \* The Subscription to the Society is £1 per annum, payable in advance on the 1st January in each year, which entitles the Subscriber to all the books published in the year for which the subscription is made.*

REPORT OF THE COUNCIL  
OF  
THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY  
TO THE  
SIXTH ANNUAL MEETING OF THE MEMBERS,  
HELD ON  
THE 26TH APRIL, 1847,  
AT THE ROOMS OF THE ROYAL SOCIETY OF LITERATURE, NO. 4,  
ST. MARTIN'S PLACE, TRAFALGAR SQUARE, LONDON.

---

The advantages to be expected from associations formed on the model of the Shakespeare Society are testified by the subsequent establishment of so many bodies of the same character, and supported by the same means. A new and vigorous impulse has thus been given to literature and archæology; but, at the same time, it is indisputable that, to a certain extent, one Society has interfered with the prosperity of another. Perhaps, of all the associations now existing, the Shakespeare Society has least felt the injurious effects of this competition: its purposes are defined; and the main subject to which it directs its attention is one that excites the most lively interest at home and abroad, in the Old World and in the New, viz., the origin and progress of English Dramatic Poetry and the Stage, more especially with reference to the productions of Shakespeare. Such was the design promulgated in our first prospectus, and the issue of about thirty volumes affords proof of the energy and activity with which our proceedings have been conducted. While the rivalry above alluded to has done comparatively



little in preventing the increase of our numbers, it has animated the Council to additional exertions, and will doubtless produce a corresponding effect upon the members at large.

The present is the Sixth Anniversary ; and if the growth of the Society during the past year have not been quite as rapid as formerly, another cause, beyond that already referred to, may justly be assigned for it : it has arisen out of the anxiety of the Council to give to the subscribers the utmost that could be expected for the annual payment. It was originally intended that the last work of the year which closed on the 31st December, 1846. should have been the first work of the year which commenced on the 1st January, 1847 ; but, on consideration, it was held that the state of the funds would allow the issue of another volume for the subscription of 1846. The consequence was that the first book of 1847 was unavoidably postponed till March, and many members naturally deferred the payment of their subscriptions, until they could at the same time receive a book in return. Hitherto, the Council has taken care that the first book of the year shall be ready for delivery at the very commencement of that year, and the beneficial result was the early payment of most of the subscriptions. If as before observed, the practice has this year been different, the alteration was only made with a view to the real and substantial satisfaction of the members, in order to avoid the possibility of complaint, on the score of the fewness of the publications for 1846.

The issue of the works of the Society for 1847 has thus unavoidably commenced later than usual ; but at the close of the year members will not find that the number of publications has been diminished ; although it must always be borne in mind that the principal outlay upon every book is the same, whether the members of the Society are few or numerous. It costs just as much to compose the types for five hundred copies as for five thousand.

The Report of the Council last year contained the gratifying

information that the Duke of Devonshire had placed at its disposal a most valuable series of sketches by Inigo Jones, some of which importantly illustrate the court entertainments of James I. and Charles I., when the plays and masques of our early dramatists were frequently represented. Nothing can equal the liberality of his Grace in this respect, unless it be the manner in which, in warm sympathy with our objects, he has rendered all his unequalled stores of English Dramatic Poetry accessible to the Shakespeare Society. Since the last General Meeting the facsimiles of the drawings of Inigo Jones have been completed, and the letter-press of the work has been confided to three members of the Council. Mr. Cunningham will furnish a new memoir of the artist from sources of which previous biographers were entirely ignorant; Mr. Planché has undertaken the department for which, as is well known, he is peculiarly qualified, namely, all that relates to dresses and theatrical costume; and Mr. Collier has promised a court drama of the time, to which some of the drawings apply, from the original manuscript in his hands, besides superintending through the press the two masques of Ben Jonson, in his own handwriting, preserved in the British Museum, with the existence of which manuscripts all his editors were unacquainted. A work of such variety and importance must necessarily occupy time in its preparation, but the Council has reason to hope that it will be included in the subscription of the current year.

The following volumes have been distributed among the members during the year ending 31 December, 1846:—

1. *THE FAIR MAID OF THE EXCHANGE*, A Comedy by THOMAS HEYWOOD: and *FORTUNE BY LAND AND SEA*, a Tragi-comedy, by Thomas HEYWOOD and WILLIAM ROWLEY. Edited by BARRON FIELD, Esq.

2. *THE MARRIAGE OF WIT AND WISDOM*. An Ancient Interlude. Edited by JAMES ORCHARD HALLIWELL, Esq., F.R.S., F.S.A., &c.

3. *MEMOIRS OF THE PRINCIPAL ACTORS IN SHAKESPEARE'S PLAYS*, enumerated in the folio of 1623. By J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A.

4. Eight Novels employed by English Dramatic Poets of the reign of Queen Elizabeth, originally published by BARNABY RICKE, in the year 1581, and reprinted from a copy of that date in the Bodleian Library.

In consequence of the appropriation of the last work to the year 1846, instead of making it the earliest work for 1847, it happens that the only publication yet issued for 1847, strictly speaking, has been the following:—

RALPH ROISTER DOISTER, a Comedy, by NICHOLAS UDALL, and THE TRAGEDIE OF GORBODUC, by THOMAS NORTON and THOMAS SACKVILLE. With Introductory Memoirs. Edited by WILLIAM DURRANT COOPER, Esq., F.S.A.

With regard to forthcoming publications, the delay of the second volume of the “Chester Miracle Plays” has necessarily attracted attention. The body of the work has been for some time printed, but the many avocations of the editor, Mr. Wright, have postponed the completion of the notes. The Society has never devoted any portion of its funds to the remuneration of gentlemen who in this way have given their valuable aid, and it can hardly be expected that services merely gratuitous should be performed before those from which emoluments are derived. Mr. Wright has, however, completed his notes, which are now in the press, and the Council has great satisfaction in announcing that the book will be ready for delivery very shortly after the General Meeting.

The other works in the press, and in various stages of progress, are the following:—

1. SKETCHES BY INIGO JONES FOR PLAYS AND MASQUES AT COURT. With a new Memoir of the artist by P. CUNNINGHAM, Esq.; observations on ancient theatrical costume by J. R. PLANCHE, Esq.; and three Masques by Ben Jonson, &c., edited by J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq.

2. Vol. III. of THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY'S PAPERS: being a Miscellany of Contributions illustrative of the Drama and Literature of the Shakesporean Era. To be continued.

3. A SELECTION FROM THE NOTES WRITTEN BY WILLIAM OLDYS, IN HIS COPY OF LANGBAINE'S LIVES OF THE DRAMATIC POETS, now in the British Museum. To be edited by PETER CUNNINGHAM, Esq.

4. A Volume of Poems by JOHN HEYWOOD and some of his contemporaries, with dramatic fragments by the same authors; preserved in a MS. belonging to the late Mr. Bright. To be edited by J. O. HALLIWELL, Esq., F.R.S., F.S.A., &c.

5. A Volume of BALLADS UPON WHICH OLD PLAYS WERE FOUNDED, OR WHICH WERE FOUNDED UPON OLD PLAYS; including all those employed by Shakespeare, and many others in the Roxburghe Collection now deposited in the British Museum. To be edited by J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A.

6. WHEN YOU SEE ME YOU KNOW ME, a historical play on events of the reign of Henry VIII. (perhaps anterior to that of Shakespeare) by SAMUEL ROWLEY. From the first edition in 1605, collated with the reimpression of 1632. To be edited by W. D. COOPER, Esq., F.S.A.

7. NOTICES OF SHAKESPEARE AND HIS WORKS, from the earliest period to the publication of the "Theatrum Poetarum," in 1675; with memoranda, drawn from other sources, on his personal and literary history. By BOLTON CORNEY, Esq.

8. THE JOURNAL OF A BARRISTER OF THE NAME OF MANNINGHAM, for the years 1600, 1601, and 1602; containing Anecdotes of Shakespeare, Ben Jonson, Marston, Spenser, Sir W. Raleigh, Sir John Davys, &c. To be edited from the MS. in the British Museum, by THOMAS WRIGHT, Esq., F.S.A., Correspondent of the Institute of France, &c.

During the past year, the Council has not been anxious to add to its list of projected works, in consequence of the wish not to load its proceedings with the titles of books that might excite expectations which could not, for some years at least, be realized. Abundant stores are, however, at command, and, as may be imagined, it would not be difficult at any time to double the number of volumes submitted, in this department, to the members. It will be obvious that the quantity of print and paper annually delivered must depend upon the amount of subscriptions; and those who are most anxious to promote

the objects in view will do well to omit no opportunity of exerting their influence among their friends.

The works in the hands of the Council, or of the different editors, which will be brought out at intervals, according to the condition of the funds of the Society, are these :—

1. A volume of the Names, Lives, and Characters of the original Actors in the Plays of MARLOWE, GREENE, PEELE, LODGE, NASH, BEN JONSON, BEAUMONT AND FLETCHER, CHAPMAN, DEKKER, WEBSTER, HEYWOOD, MIDDLETON, MASSINGER, FORD, &c, alphabetically arranged. By J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A., etc.

2. A COLLECTION OF THE DOCUMENTS which have reference to the Events of Shakespeare's Life. The Will to be edited by Sir FREDERICK MADDEN, F.R.S., F.S.A., Keeper of the MSS in the British Museum, with Facsimiles of the Signatures. The Marriage Licence, transcripts from the Registers at Stratford-upon-Avon, and other Documents, to be edited by JOHN BRUCE, Esq., F.S.A.

3. AN ESSAY ON THE MADNESS OF SOME OF SHAKESPEARE'S PRINCIPAL CHARACTERS, illustrated by examples ancient and modern, with a view to show their peculiar characteristics, and exact truth to nature. By FORBES WINSLOW, Esq., M.D.

4. FUNEBRIA FLORÆ. The Downfall of May-Games, &c.: an attack upon popular amusements. By THOMAS HALL, B.D. 1660, 4to. To be edited by W. TURNBULL, Esq., of Edinburgh, F.S.A., &c.

5. THE MIRROR OF MONSTERS: an attack upon theatrical performances in 1587 by WILLIAM RANKINS, who afterwards became a Dramatic Poet, and the author of Satires, &c., printed in 1596.

6. TRANSLATIONS OF TWO ITALIAN COMEDIES, GL' INGANNI AND GL' INGANNATI, the plots of which bear a strong resemblance to Shakespeare's Twelfth Night. By GEORGE MACIBONE, Esq.

7. A TRANSLATION OF ECHTERMEYER'S INTRODUCTION TO THE "QUELLEN DER SHAKESPEARE," containing an account of the sources of the Plots of Shakespeare's Plays.

8. THE DEFENCE OF PLAYS AND PLAYERS, by THOMAS LODGE, being an answer to Stephen Gosson's School of Abuse, 1579. Printed without date; and without title-page, in consequence of the condemnation of it by the public authorities.

9. *THE ALARUM AGAINST USURERS.* By THOMAS LODGE, containing a reply to Stephen Gosson's "Ephemerides of Phialo." From the edition of 1584, 4to., in the Bodleian Library.

10. *PASQUIL'S JESTS*, mixed with Mother Bunch's Merriments. Whereunto is added a dozen of Gulls. Pretty and pleasant to drive away the tediousness of a Winter's Evening. From the earliest edition of 1604, compared with several later impressions.

11. *A ROYAL ARBOUR OF LOYAL POESIE*, consisting of Poems and Songs, and including Dramatic Ballads founded upon Shakespeare's *Much Ado About Nothing*, *Winter's Tale*, *Merchant of Venice*, &c., as well as upon several other plays of the time.

12. *DIE SCHÖNE SIDEA.* An early German Drama, thought to be a translation of an English Play, from which Shakespeare derived the plot of the *Tempest*. To be edited by WILLIAM J. THOMS, Esq., F.S.A. To be followed by translations of three other German Plays, supposed to contain similar versions of Dramas on which Shakespeare founded *Much Ado about Nothing*, *The Two Gentlemen of Verona*, and *Titus Andronicus*.

At the period of the last General Meeting it was supposed that the third volume of "The Shakespeare Society's Papers" would be distributed in the course of the year 1846. The delay of it has arisen from the non-receipt of several valuable promised contributions; but the work is now in so forward a state that it may be looked for as the third of the present year, following the second volume of Mr. Wright's "*Chester Miracle Plays*." The Council cannot regret the postponement, when the effect has been to enable it to add some entirely new and valuable public records, in relation to the condition of our stage and drama, just anterior to and during the lifetime of Shakespeare. Several short and hitherto unknown tracts on the same subject have also been transmitted to the Council, together with poems by some of our early actors, until now unheard-of in our literature.

The Council cannot too earnestly impress upon members the necessity of examining carefully all documents regarding

which they may obtain information, or within their immediate control. Not a few of our subscribers are in the Church, and others are influential officers in the corporations of the kingdom. The first, we are confident, from experience, would find much in the Registers in their custody; and the last would often be able importantly to illustrate the subjects of our inquiries from muniments within their power. The volume of "The Shakespeare Society's Papers" now in the press will contain proofs of both these positions; and very recently the Council has received from Norwich (by the hands of a zealous, intelligent, and active member) some novel and interesting particulars respecting William Kempe, who, besides figuring in other plays as the greatest comedian of his day, had parts assigned to him in "Romeo and Juliet" and "Much ado about Nothing." Many other direct illustrations of the life and writings of our great dramatist, and of his contemporaries, might surely thus be obtained; and the Council of the Shakespeare Society flatters itself that it is only necessary to point out these and other sources of information, to induce the members to resort to them, and to communicate the results of their investigations.

*By order of the Council,*

CONYNGHAM, *President.*

F. G. TOMLINS, *Secretary.*

## REPORT OF THE AUDITORS.

We, the Auditors appointed to audit the Receipts and Expenditure of the Shakespeare Society, certify that the Treasurer has exhibited to us his Accounts from the 18th of April, 1846, to the 18th of April, 1847; that we have examined the same, together with the vouchers in support thereof, and find the whole Account correct and satisfactory.

And we further report that the following is a correct Abstract of the Receipts and Expenditure of the Society for the above period.

RECEIPTS.			PAYMENTS.		
	£	s. d.		£	s. d.
Balance on the 18th April, 1846, as per Report of Auditors . . . . .	355	16 3	To Mr. Shoberl, Jun., for Printing . . . . .	166	3 6
New and Arrear Subscriptions for the years 1841, 2, 3, 4, 5 . . . . .	18	0 0	Bonsor and Co., for Paper Westley and Clarke, for Binding . . . . .	80	9 9
New and Arrear Subscriptions for 1846 . . . . .	89	0 0	To the Secretary . . . . .	50	0 6
Subscriptions for the Current year . . . . .	231	0 0	To the Royal Society of Literature, for One Year's use of their Council Room to 15th December, 1846 . . . . .	52	10 0
			To Mr. Rudd, the Society's Agent, for the delivery of Books, &c . . . . .	12	0 0
			To Mr. Roberts . . . . .	13	7 0
			Transcripts, &c . . . . .	5	5 0
			Advertising, Postage, &c . . . . .	29	8 6
			Treasurer's Expenses and other Expenses incurred by Local Agents—including a Gratuity to the Doorkeeper of the Royal Society of Literature . . . . .	19	1 10
				12	15 0
				441	1 1
			Balance . . . . .	252	15 2
	693	16 3		693	16 3



And we the Auditors have further to report that over and above the present balance of £252 15s. 2d. there still remain outstanding certain subscriptions of Members whose names are included in the printed lists of the Society, and that the arrears for the last year especially are heavier than usual. On the subject of the subscriptions for the current year we refrain from offering any observation, as the Treasurer informs us that the arrear is particularly accounted for in the Report of the Council to be read at the next General Meeting.

We have further to report that part of Mr. Shoberl's bill for printing executed in the past year is still unpaid, as is the bill of Messrs. Bonsor and Co. for paper supplied to the Society during the same period.

ROBERT BELL.

SCROPE AYRTON.

22nd April, 1847.

REPORT OF THE COUNCIL  
OF  
THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY  
TO THE  
SEVENTH ANNUAL MEETING OF THE MEMBERS.  
HELD ON  
THE 26TH APRIL, 1848,  
AT THE ROOMS OF THE ROYAL SOCIETY OF LITERATURE, NO 4,  
ST. MARTIN'S PLACE, TRAFALGAR SQUARE, LONDON.

---

The Council, in submitting their Seventh Annual Report, wish to take a short retrospect of what the Society has accomplished during the seven years it has existed.

The object of the Shakespeare Society, it was stated in an early Prospectus inviting subscriptions, "is to print and distribute books illustrative of Shakespeare and the literature of his time;" and the advantages to be derived from belonging to the Society, it was stated on the same occasion, "are the procuring of valuable and interesting works at cost price, which, if published in the usual mode, could not be purchased for three times the amount; and also the preserving and circulating rare works, which, when thus printed, are preserved from total destruction or oblivion."

The Society has already issued thirty-seven volumes, and has expended thereupon nearly four thousand pounds. In illustration of the very early state of our drama, there are two volumes of the Chester Plays, a curious collection of Dramas, founded upon Scriptural subjects, and formerly represented by

the Trades of Chester at Whitsuntide ; the volume of Coventry Plays, an equally curious collection of Dramas, formerly represented at Coventry on the Feast of Corpus Christi, and the volume of "Extracts from the Accounts of the Revels at Court in the reign of Queen Elizabeth," from the original office-books of the Masters and Yeomen. The plays printed by the Society include Shakespeare's "King Henry IV.," from the only known contemporary manuscript of any of his Plays ; a careful reprint of the first and rare edition of "The Merry Wives of Windsor," printed in 1602, differing materially from the after copies, and thought by some to be the poet's first sketch of his famous comedy ; a third publication is an equally careful reprint of the very rare play of "The True Tragedie of Richard III.," printed in 1594, three years before the publication of Shakespeare's play upon the same subject ; a fourth (and quite as carefully executed) is a reprint of the rare old quarto, "A Pleasant Conceited History, called The Taming of a Shrew," upon which Shakespeare founded his comedy of the same name ; a fifth issue, of the same character, was a copy of "Timon," a play of Shakespeare's age, first printed by the Shakespeare Society from a MS. in the possession of Mr. Dyce ; and a sixth, also edited by Mr. Dyce, was the playhouse manuscript of "Sir Thomas More," composed about 1590, and preserved in the Harleian Collection in the British Museum. The first English Comedy, "Ralph Roister Doister," and the first English Tragedy, "Gorboduc," were included in one volume, recently issued under the editorship of Mr. Durrant Cooper.

It is well known that the Council have long entertained a hope that the funds of the Society would enable them to put forward from time to time accurate and annotated reprints of the plays and poems of Thomas Heywood and Thomas Dekker, with the view of forming hereafter a complete collection of their works ; and the Society, notwithstanding its limited means, has already been enabled to print four of Heywood, viz :—

“The First and Second Parts of Edward IV. ;” “The Fair Maid of the Exchange” and “Fortune by Land and Sea.” and one by Dekker, entitled, in the black letter edition from which it is reprinted, “The Pleasant Comedie of Patient Grisill.” To enable the Council to carry into effect their intentions in this matter—and, what is more, the wishes of many members who have urged such a course upon them—the Council recommend the formation of a supplemental fund for the purpose, to be called the “Heywood and Dekker Fund,” the subscription to which will be ten shillings annually, the Fund to be kept separate, and only Members of the Society who subscribe to be entitled to the supplemental publications.

Should this recommendation meet the approbation of the Members, the editions will be commenced as soon as a hundred subscribers to the extra fund have been obtained, and under regulations to be submitted hereafter.

Among the other reprints of the Society, the Council would refer more particularly to books of great rarity and of a very entertaining character, which cannot be had, unless at very high prices in the original editions, and some of which cannot be procured at all. There are few of our early jest-books more diverting than “The Jests of Richard Tarleton,” the famous Clown, the reprint of which Mr. Halliwell superintended; “A Nest of Ninnies,” by Robert Armin, one of Shakespeare’s fellow-actors, is another amusing publication of the period, also reprinted by this Society; while the far-famed “Conversations of Ben Jonson with Drummond of Hawthornden” cannot be had in a complete shape, unless in the valuable volume which Mr. David Laing so kindly undertook at the request of the Council. Other publications, of the same stamp and importance, are Nash’s “Pierce Penilesse his supplication to the Devill,” (one of the best of his works); “Riche his Farewell to Militarie Profession,” to which Shakespeare went for a portion of his “Twelfth Night;” and “Gosson’s Attack on the Stage,” and Heywood’s defence of it—so material in enabling

the student of our literature to appreciate the position of the drama and its appliances when Shakespeare wrote.

Among the many publications for which the members and the public at large are indebted to the Director of the Shakespeare Society, the Council refer with pleasure and satisfaction to the invaluable publication of Henslowe's Diary (so imperfectly printed and understood by Malone); the important Life of Henslowe's son-in-law, "famous Ned Alleyn," the rival of Burbage; and the volume of Lives of the Performers, enumerated in the folio of 1623 as "the principall actors in all these Playes," a most curious volume, displaying much successful research in the field which Malone and Chalmers were thought to have exhausted.

The Council cannot overlook in an enumeration of this kind the three volumes of the Shakespeare Society's Papers, a miscellany of communications illustrative of our early drama and stage, none of which by themselves would be of sufficient length and importance to form a separate publication. The Council would wish to urge on Members the value and importance of a miscellany of this description, and to invite contributions, however short, so that they detail facts, and refer to the sources from whence they are derived.

The following volumes have been distributed to each member on account of his subscription for the year ending 31 December, 1847.

1. RALPH ROISTER DOISTER and GORBODUC.
2. Part 2 of THE CHESTER WHITSUN PLAYS, completing the publication.
3. Vol. III. of THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY'S PAPERS.

The Council explained in their previous Reports that the resources of the Society had been somewhat heavily drawn upon by the expenses attending the publication of Henslowe's Diary, and the Lives of the Contemporary Performers in Shakespeare's Plays. By giving very liberally (and to good

purpose they are willing to think) in previous years, they were obliged to give more sparingly for the year following. This deficiency will, however, be made up in the course of the present year.

The following publication has been issued to Members who have paid their subscription due on the 1st of January last :

THE MORAL PLAY OF WIT AND SCIENCE, and EARLY POETICAL MISCELLANIES, from an Unpublished MS. Edited by J. O. HALLIWELL, Esq.

and the next issue to the Society will be

INIGO JONES'S DESIGNS FOR MASQUES AT COURT, now first Engraved from the Original Drawings in the possession of his Grace the Duke of Devonshire. Edited by J. R. PLANCHÉ and J. PAYNE COLLIER, with a new Life of INIGO JONES, by PETER CUNNINGHAM.

This work has been delayed much longer than was expected, owing partly to Mr. Planché's numerous avocations, and partly to the new materials for the Life, which have been necessarily enlarged and altered, while they have added to the value of Mr. Cunningham's labours.

The Inigo Jones will be followed in the course of the present year by a work, already in the press, though not announced in any previous publication, entitled "Extracts from the Entries in the Stationers' Registers relative to Plays, Ballads, and our Popular Literature, with notes and illustrations by J. Payne Collier, Esq., Director of the Shakespeare Society." It is well known that the Registers have hitherto been but very imperfectly examined, and that the few entries printed by Warton, Malone, and Chalmers abound with inaccuracies. Mr. Collier has transcribed the whole of the entries with his own hand, and has annotated them with all his accustomed care.

The other works in the press, and in various stages of progress, are the following :—

1. Vol. IV. of THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY'S PAPERS: being a Mis-

cellany of Contributions illustrative of the Drama and Literature of the Shakesperean Era. To be continued.

2 A SELECTION FROM THE NOTES WRITTEN BY WILLIAM OLDYS, IN HIS COPY OF LANGBAIN'S LIVES OF THE DRAMATIC POETS, now in the British Museum. To be edited by PETER CUNNINGHAM, Esq.

3. NOTICES OF SHAKESPEARE AND HIS WORKS, from the earliest period to the publication of the "Theatrum Poetarum," in 1675; with memoranda, drawn from other sources, on his personal and literary history. By BOLTON CORNEY, Esq.

4. WHEN YOU SEE ME YOU KNOW ME, a historical play on events of the reign of Henry VIII. (perhaps anterior to that of Shakespeare) by SAMUEL ROWLEY. From the first edition in 1605, collated with the reimpression of 1632. To be edited by W. D. COOPER, Esq., F.S.A.

5. A VOLUME OF BALLADS UPON WHICH OLD PLAYS WERE FOUNDED, OR WHICH WERE FOUNDED UPON OLD PLAYS; including all those employed by Shakespeare, and many others in the Roxburghe Collection now deposited in the British Museum. To be edited by J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A.

6. THE JOURNAL OF A BARRISTER OF THE NAME OF MANNINGHAM, for the years 1600, 1601, and 1602, containing Anecdotes of Shakespeare, Ben Jonson, Marston, Spenser, Sir W. Raleigh, Sir John Davys, &c. To be edited from the MS. in the British Museum, by THOMAS WRIGHT, Esq., F.S.A., Correspondent of the Institute of France, &c.

The works in the hands of the Council, or of the different Editors. which will be brought out at intervals, according to the condition of the Funds of the Society, are these:—

1. A volume of the Names, Lives, and Characters of the original Actors in the Plays of MARLOWE, GREENE, PEELE, LODGE, NASH, BEN JONSON, BEAUMONT AND FLETCHER, CHAPMAN, DEKKER, WEBSTER, HEYWOOD, MIDDLETON, MASSINGER, FORD, &c., alphabetically arranged. By J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A., etc.

2. A COLLECTION OF THE DOCUMENTS which have reference to the Events of Shakespeare's Life. The Will to be edited by Sir FREDERICK MADDEN, F.R.S., F.S.A., Keeper of the MSS. in the British Museum, with Facsimiles of the Signatures. The Marriage Licence,

transcripts from the Registers at Stratford-upon-Avon. and other Documents, to be edited by JOHN BRUCE, Esq. F.S.A.

3. AN ESSAY ON THE MADNESS OF SOME OF SHAKESPEARE'S PRINCIPAL CHARACTERS, illustrated by examples ancient and modern, with a view to show their peculiar characteristics, and exact truth to nature. By FORBES WINSLOW, Esq., M.D.

4. FUNEBRIA FLORÆ. The Downfall of May-Games, &c.: an attack upon popular amusements By THOMAS HALL, B.D. 1660. 4to. To be edited by W. TURNBULL, Esq., of Edinburgh, F.S.A., &c.

5. THE MIRROR OF MONSTERS: an attack upon theatrical performances in 1587 by WILLIAM RANKINS, who afterwards became a Dramatic Poet, and the author of Satires. &c., printed in 1596.

6. TRANSLATIONS OF TWO ITALIAN COMEDIES, GL' INGANNI AND GL' INGANNATI, the plots of which bear a strong resemblance to Shakespeare's Twelfth Night. By GEORGE MACIRONE, Esq.

7. A TRANSLATION OF ECHTERMEYER'S INTRODUCTION TO THE "QUELLEN DER SHAKESPEARE," containing an account of the sources of the Plots of Shakespeare's Plays.

8. THE DEFENCE OF PLAYS AND PLAYERS, by THOMAS LODGE, being an answer to Stephen Gosson's School of Abuse, 1579. Printed without date; and without title-page, in consequence of the condemnation of it by the public authorities.

9. The ALARUM AGAINST USURERS. By THOMAS LODGE, containing a reply to Stephen Gosson's "Ephemerides of Phialo." From the edition of 1584, 4to, in the Bodleian Library.

10. PASQUIL'S JESTS, mixed with Mother Bunch's Merriments Whereunto is added a dozen of Gulls. Pretty and pleasant to drive away the tediousness of a Winter's Evening. From the earliest edition of 1604, compared with several later impressions.

11. A PLAY ON THE STORY OF ROMEO AND JULIET, from an inedited MS. in Latin, of the time of Queen Elizabeth. By J. O. HALLIWELL, Esq., F.R.S.

Interested as the Shakespeare Society must necessarily be in everything connected with the name of the great poet whose life and works their labours are designed to illustrate, the Council take the present opportunity of congratulating their



fellow Members on the recent purchase by public subscription of Shakespeare's House at Stratford-upon-Avon. The sum that was given for this very interesting property, hallowed as it is with so many increasing associations, has been called large : the Council, however, are not of this opinion, and are pleased to think that the property has been secured to the nation ; and that many of the Members of this Society, including its noble President, the Earl of Ellesmere, the Director, the Treasurer, and the Secretary, have taken an active part in its purchase and preservation. The Council has also contributed £25 from the Funds of the Society towards the purchase-money : and for this appropriation of a small part of the sum at their disposal the Council ask the approval of the general body of the Members.

*By order of the Council,*

ELLESMERE, *President.*

F. G. TOMLINS, *Secretary.*



And we the Auditors further report that over and above the present balance of £77 18s. 9d. there still remain outstanding certain subscriptions of Members whose names are included in the printed lists of the Society; that active steps, as the Treasurer informs us, are now being taken to reduce this arrear with every prospect of complete success.

We have also to report that part of Mr. Shoberl's bill for printing in the past year is still unpaid, as is the bill of Messrs. Bonsor and Co. for paper supplied to the Society during the same period.

SWYNFEN JERVIS.

LEWIS POCOCK.

20th April, 1848.

## ANNUAL MEETING, 26th APRIL, 1848.

---

The Report of the Council and the Report of the Auditors having been read, the following Resolutions were passed.—

RESOLUTION I. That the Report of the Council for the past year be received and printed, and that the thanks of the Society be given to the Council for their services.

RESOLUTION II. That the best thanks of the Shakespeare Society are due to the Members of the Council for their representing the wishes of the general body of Subscribers in giving from the Funds of the Society the sum of £25 towards the Fund now raising for the Purchase and Preservation of Shakespeare's House.

RESOLUTION III. That the Report of the Auditors be received and printed, and that the thanks of the Society be given to them for their services.

RESOLUTION IV. That the thanks of the Society be given to the Editors of the various books issued during the past year: viz., to Thomas Wright, Esq., for the Second and concluding volume of "The Chester Plays;" to John Payne Collier, Esq., for editing and supervising the Third volume of "The Society's Papers"—and to the various contributors thereto; and to James Orchard Halliwell, Esq., for "The Moral Play of Wit and Science."

RESOLUTION V. That the thanks of the Society be given to the Director, and Treasurer, and Secretary, for their services.

JAMES HEYWOOD, ESQ., M.P., F.R.S., F.S.A., SIR E. BULWER LYTTON, BART., J. H. MARKLAND, ESQ., F.R.S., F.S.A., WILLIAM J. THOMS, ESQ., F.S.A., AND THOMAS WRIGHT, ESQ., F.S.A., retiring from the Council in compliance with Law IX., the vacancies were filled up by the unanimous election of

THE REV. ALEXANDER DYCE.

HENRY HALLAM, ESQ., F.R.S.

CHARLES KNIGHT, ESQ.

THE REV. H. H. MILMAN, F.R.S.

SIR GEORGE ROSE, F. R. S.

The remaining Members of the Council were re-elected.

The following Members were also elected Auditors for the year ending 26th of April, 1849.

GEORGE L. CRAIK, ESQ.

FREDERICK OUVRY, ESQ., F.R.S.

P. N. TOMLINS, ESQ.

#### AGENT TO THE SOCIETY,

Mr. THOMAS RODD, 9, Great Newport Street, Long Acre, London, who is empowered to receive Subscriptions, and to whom all letters relative to the delivery of the books must be addressed.

\* \* \* *The Subscription to the Society is £1 per annum, payable in advance on the 1st January in each year, which entitles the Subscriber to all the books published in the year for which the subscription is made.*

REPORT OF THE COUNCIL  
OF  
THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY  
TO THE  
EIGHTH ANNUAL MEETING OF THE MEMBERS,  
HELD,  
ON THE 26TH APRIL, 1849,  
AT THE CRAVEN HOTEL, CRAVEN STREET, STRAND, LONDON.

---

The Council have to submit their Eighth Annual Report to the Members of the Society ; and in so doing cannot but refer with satisfaction to the reviving feeling and interest manifested towards the works and literature of the great period the Society has undertaken to illustrate. Circumstances of different kinds have tended to bring about this desirable result, the chief of which are the sale of the Poet's House at Stratford-upon-Avon, and the purchase of the Chandos Portrait, from the great collection at Stowe, by the noble President of our Society.

The sale of the house and tenements at Stratford-upon-Avon was too interesting and too important an event, to those concerned in illustrating all that belongs to the personal history or the works of Shakespeare, not to engage the attention of the members of the Council very earnestly ; and the completion of the purchase of that house for the nation has occupied a very great deal of the efforts and time of the members of the Council, though, of course, not in their official capacity. The insignificance of the house itself, as contrasted with the illustrious name that alone gave value to it, made it an object of most peculiar solicitude. Their

labours in this cause have not yet ceased, and they have to urge upon the Members of the Society the continuance of their support, to bring to an honourable conclusion this national effort. The premises at present are invested in the Committee appointed to carry out the purchase, and about four hundred pounds are still required to place it in the hands of National Trustees. To preserve to future ages this interesting and characteristic record of the Poet's veritable existence is a proud distinction to any body of men, and it is peculiarly becoming that amongst the most earnest workers should be the Members of the Shakespeare Society.

The purchase of the CHANDOS PORTRAIT by the President is a matter of considerable interest to the Society, as from the liberal permission of its noble possessor every Member will have the opportunity of possessing a highly finished engraving from this, the most generally acknowledged, representation of the Poet, issued in such a form as to enable him to hang it on his walls, and engraved by an artist whose eminence gives additional value to the production.

It is hoped that this will be esteemed one of the happiest efforts made by the Council of the Society; and the Members will unanimously join the Council in acknowledging the liberality which has thus afforded to every Member the privilege of possessing, next to the original, as true a resemblance of our great dramatist as can by possibility be obtained.

In order to afford the utmost effect to this permission of the President, the Council decided that a certain number of Artist's proofs, and proofs signed by the Director, should be struck off, at advanced prices; by which means the other impressions are furnished at a very slight expense to the Society, and it is hoped will not interfere with the usual number of books supplied for the Annual Subscription. To accomplish the object as perfectly as possible, and to bring it distinctly within the original purposes for which the Society was established, the Director, Mr. Collier, has undertaken to accompany the Portrait with an account of all the known and

acknowledged representations of the Poet; a work at any time highly interesting in itself, but, appended to such an illustration, doubly so. The Council are happy to state that Mr. Samuel Cousins, the celebrated mezzotinto engraver, has undertaken the work, and that the size of the plate, exclusive of margins, is ten inches by eight. It is expected that it will be ready for delivery in the course of the present season; but, should this not be the case, it will, at all events, be included in the Subscription of the present year, 1849.

It will not have escaped the recollection of Members, that, by direction of the General Meeting last year, a new and separate subscription was opened, under the designation of "the Heywood and Dekker Fund," for the re-publication of the works of those early Dramatists, under the superintendence of the Council. The list, however, has not yet filled in a manner to warrant the commencement of such an undertaking; but the Council are unwilling to abandon a scheme which they still hope to carry out in the course of the present year.

THE BOOKS issued for the Subscription of the year ending 31 December, 1848, are:—

1. THE MORAL PLAY OF WIT AND SCIENCE. Edited by J. O. HALLIWELL, Esq.
2. EXTRACTS FROM THE REGISTERS OF THE STATIONERS' COMPANY of Works entered for Publication between the years 1557 and 1570. With Notes and Illustrations by J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq. Vol. I.

Another and important volume still remains due on the Subscription of the last year, namely,

INIGO JONES'S DESIGNS FOR MASQUES AT COURT, now first engraved from the Original Drawings in the possession of his Grace the Duke of Devonshire. Edited by J. R. PLANCHÉ and J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esquires, with a new Life of INIGO JONES, by PETER CUNNINGHAM, Esq., together with an Engraving from an Original Portrait of INIGO JONES, by Vandyke, this Engraving being made at the entire expense of Major Inigo Jones, and presented to the Society by that gentleman.

The liberality of Major Inigo Jones, just adverted to, must plead the excuse for the continuance of the delay in presenting this work to the Members. The engraving of the Por-



trait is finished, and the complete work will be very shortly ready for delivery.

The Fourth volume of the Society's Papers has been issued as the first publication for the Subscription of the present year, 1849; and the Second volume of the "Extracts from the Registers of the Stationers' Company" is making rapid progress through the press.

The Engraving of the Chandos Portrait, as already stated, will also be included in this year's Subscription.

The other works in the press, and in various stages of progress, are the following:—

1. Vol. V. of THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY'S PAPERS: being a Miscellany of Contributions illustrative of the Drama and Literature of the Shakespearian Era. To be continued.

2. TIDE TARRIETH NO MAN. A most pleasaunte and merry comedie, ryght pithy and fulle of delight. By GEORGE WAPUL. From the unique copy, 4to., 1576, in the library of the Duke of Devonshire.

3. A SELECTION FROM THE NOTES WRITTEN BY WILLIAM OLDYS, IN HIS COPY OF LINGBAIN'S LIVES OF THE DRAMATIC POETS, now in the British Museum. To be edited by PETER CUNNINGHAM, Esq.

4. NOTICES OF SHAKESPEARE AND HIS WORKS, from the earliest period to the publication of the "Theatrum Poetarum," in 1675; with memoranda, drawn from other sources, on his personal and literary history. By BOLTON CORNEY, Esq.

5. WHEN YOU SEE ME YOU KNOW ME, a historical play on events of the reign of Henry VIII. (perhaps anterior to that of Shakespeare) by SAMUEL ROWLEY. From the first edition in 1605, collated with the reimpression of 1632. To be edited by W. D. COOPER, Esq., F.S.A.

6. A Volume of BALLADS UPON WHICH OLD PLAYS WERE FOUNDED, OR WHICH WERE FOUNDED UPON OLD PLAYS; including all those employed by Shakespeare, and many others in the Roxburghe Collection now deposited in the British Museum. To be edited by J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A.

The works in the hands of the Council, or of the different Editors, which will be brought out according to the condition of the Funds of the Society, are these:—

1. A volume of the Names, Lives, and Characters of the original Actors in the Plays of MARLOWE, GREENE, PEELE, LODGE, NASH, BEN JONSON, BEAUMONT AND FLETCHER, CHAPMAN, DEKKER, WEBSTER, HEYWOOD, MIDDLETON, MASSINGER, FORD, &c., alphabetically arranged. By J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A., &c.

2. AN ESSAY ON THE MADNESS OF SOME OF SHAKESPEARE'S PRINCI-

PAL CHARACTERS, illustrated by examples, ancient and modern, with a view to show their peculiar characteristics, and exact truth to nature. By FORBES WINSLOW, Esq., M.D.

3. FUNEbria FLORÆ. The Downfal of May-Games, &c.: an attack upon popular amusements. By THOMAS HALL, B.D. 1660, 4to. To be edited by W. TURNBULL, Esq., of Edinburgh, F.S.A., &c.

4. THE MIRROR OF MONSTERS: an attack upon theatrical performances in 1587 by WILLIAM RANKINS, who afterwards became a Dramatic Poet, and the author of Satires, &c., printed in 1596.

5. TRANSLATIONS OF TWO ITALIAN COMEDIES, GL' INGANNI AND GL' INGANNATI, the plots of which bear a strong resemblance to Shakespeare's Twelfth Night. By GEORGE MACIRONE. Esq.

6. A TRANSLATION OF ECHTERMEYER'S INTRODUCTION TO THE "QUELLEN DER SHAKESPEARE," containing an account of the sources of the Plots of Shakespeare's Plays.

7. THE DEFENCE OF PLAYS AND PLAYERS, by THOMAS LODGE, being an answer to Stephen Gosson's School of Abuse, 1579. Printed without date; and without title-page, in consequence of the condemnation of it by the public authorities.

8. The ALARUM AGAINST USURERS, by THOMAS LODGE, containing a reply to Stephen Gosson's "Ephemerides of Phialo." From the edition of 1584, 4to., in the Bodleian Library.

9. PASQUIL'S JESTS, mixed with Mother Bunch's Merriments. Whereunto is added a dozen of Gulls. Pretty and pleasant to drive away the tediousness of a Winter's Evening. From the earliest edition of 1604, compared with several later impressions.

10. A PLAY ON THE STORY OF ROMEO AND JULIET, from an inedited MS. in Latin, of the time of Queen Elizabeth. By J. O. HALLIWELL, Esq. F.R.S.

In conclusion, the Council feel gratified in stating that the Members of the Society have considerably increased, and in repeating that a renewed and lively interest has been imparted to its proceedings by the activity shown in the purchase of the house at Stratford-upon-Avon, but more immediately and particularly by the arrangement made with respect to the Chandos Portrait, in order that that interesting representation may be disseminated amongst the Members by the valuable engraving of Mr. Samuel Cousins.

*By order of the Council,*

J. PAYNE COLLIER, *Director.*

F. G. TOMLINS. *Secretary*

## REPORT OF THE AUDITORS.

We, the Auditors appointed to audit the Receipts and Expenditure of the Shakespeare Society, certify that the Treasurer has exhibited to us his Accounts from the 18th of April, 1848, to the 18th of April, 1849; that we have examined the same, together with the vouchers in support thereof, and find the whole Account correct and satisfactory.

And we further report that the following is a correct Abstract of the Receipts and Expenditure of the Society for the above period.

RECEIPTS.			PAYMENTS.		
	£	s. d.		£	s. d.
Balance on the 18th April, 1848, as per Report of Auditors . . . . .	77	18 9	To Mr Shoberl, Jun, for Printing . . . . .	157	8 6
New and Arrear Subscriptions for the years 1846 and 1847 . . . . .	24	0 0	Bonsor and Co., for Paper Westley and Clarke, for Binding . . . . .	63	0 0
New and Arrear Subscriptions for 1848 . . . . .	134	0 0	To Mr Netherclift, on account of facsimiles of sketches by Inigo Jones . . . . .	24	19 10
Subscriptions for the Current year . . . . .	252	0 0	To the Secretary . . . . .	30	0 0
			To the Royal Society of Literature, for One Year's use of their Council Room to 15th December, 1848 . . . . .	52	10 0
			To Mr Rodd, the Society's Agent, for the delivery of Books, &c. . . . .	12	0 0
			To Mr. Roberts . . . . .	10	16 6
			Transcripts, copies of Wills, Extracts from Registers, &c. . . . .	5	5 0
			Advertising, Postage, &c. . . . .	10	14 0
			Treasurer's Expenses and other Expenses incurred by Local Agents—including a Gratuity to the Doorkeeper of the Royal Society of Literature . . . . .	54	2 1
				9	5 4
			Balance . . . . .	430	1 3
				57	17 6
				487	18 9
				487	18 9

And we the Auditors further report that over and above the present balance of £57. 17s. 6d, there still remain outstanding (as in former years) certain Subscriptions of Members whose names are included in the printed lists of the Society; but we have at the same time to observe that the arrears (as compared with the last year) have been very much diminished, while the receipts for the current year, when compared with the amount included in the Report of the Auditors for the prior year, exhibit an increase of £91—the last Audit including £161—the present Audit £252. We have also to report that part of Mr. Shoberl's bill for printing in the past year is still unpaid, as is a part (and not the whole as in former years) of Messrs. Bonsor and Co.'s bill for paper supplied to the Society during the same period. There is also a balance due to Mr. Netherclift for facsimiles.

We would wish in conclusion to recommend to the Council the propriety of the temporary employment of a collector for the purpose of obtaining the arrear subscriptions—a course of proceeding, the Treasurer informs us, accompanied with considerable advantages to the Society on a previous occasion.

The Auditors have not included in the account the separate subscription for the Chandos Portrait, considering that such subscription will more properly form part of the next year's accounts, when the total receipts and expenditure will have been ascertained.

GEO. L. CRAIK.  
FREDERIC OUVRY.  
P. N. TOMLINS.

25th April, 1849.

---

## ANNUAL MEETING, 26th APRIL, 1849.

The Report of the Council and the Report of the Auditors having been read, the following Resolutions were passed:—

RESOLUTION I. That the Report of the Council for the past year be received and printed, and that the thanks of the Society be given to the Council for their services.

RESOLUTION II. That the thanks of the Society are eminently due, and are hereby given, to the Right Honourable the Earl of Ellesmere, President of the Society, for the permission to engrave the Chandos Portrait of Shakespeare for the Society.

RESOLUTION III. That the Report of the Auditors be received and printed, and that the thanks of the Society be given to them for their services

RESOLUTION IV. That the thanks of the Society be given to the Editors of the various books issued during the past year . viz., to John Payne Collier, Esq., for the First Volume of the "Extracts from the Registers of the Stationers' Company," and for the valuable Notes and Illustrations thereto appended; and also to the same gentleman for editing the Fourth Volume of "The Society's Papers"—and to the various contributors thereto; and to Major Inigo Jones for the contribution of Inigo Jones's Portrait, and the expenses incurred in engraving and printing the same.

RESOLUTION V. That the thanks of the Society be given to the Director, Treasurer, and Secretary, for their services.

---

THE REV. ALEXANDER DYCE, THE REV. H. H. MILMAN, F.R.S., JOHN OXENFORD, ESQ., J. R. PLANCHÉ, ESQ., F.S.A., AND SIR GEORGE ROSE, F.R.S., retiring from the Council, the vacancies were filled up by the unanimous election of

JOHN BRUCE, ESQ., F.S.A.  
W. O. HUNT, ESQ.  
SWYNFEN JERVIS, ESQ.  
SIR E. BULWER LYTTON, BART.  
THOMAS THOMSON, ESQ., M.D.

The remaining Members of the Council were re-elected.

The following Members were also elected Auditors for the year ending 26th of April, 1850.

JOSHUA W. BUTTERWORTH, ESQ., F.S.A.  
B. H. SMART, ESQ.  
GEORGE SMITH, ESQ.

---

#### AGENT TO THE SOCIETY,

Mr. SKEFFINGTON, No. 192, Piccadilly, London, who is empowered to receive Subscriptions, and to whom all letters relative to the delivery of the books must be addressed.

---

*\* \* The Subscription to the Society is £1 per annum, payable in advance on the 1st January in each year, which entitles the Subscriber to all the books published in the year for which the subscription is made.*

REPORT OF THE COUNCIL  
OF  
THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY,  
TO THE  
NINTH ANNUAL MEETING OF THE MEMBERS,  
HELD,  
ON THE 26TH APRIL. 1850,  
AT THE ROOMS OF THE ROYAL SOCIETY OF LITERATURE, NO 4,  
ST. MARTIN'S PLACE, TRAFALGAR SQUARE, LONDON.

---

Our Society having now been established for ten years, ample time has been afforded for estimating its objects, and testing its utility; and the Council appeal with more than ordinary confidence to the continuation of the series of volumes (forty-one in number) printed under their superintendence. After this long experience, and the knowledge which the Members possess of the working of the Society, it cannot be necessary to say much upon the services thus rendered to the illustration generally of the old and admirable Dramatic Literature of our country; and especially of the productions of that great Poet, who, by the confession of all nations, stands foremost in the history of mankind, as the painter of life and manners.

Nothing can more emphatically prove the justice of the universal applause bestowed upon Shakespeare, than a comparison of his dramas with those of foreign countries of any age; and this remark is peculiarly appropriate at the present

moment, when an opportunity has been afforded for that comparison between his plays and those of the school to which they bear, in character and construction, the strongest resemblance. Mr. Ticknor, of Boston, in the second of his three excellent volumes on "the History of Spanish Literature," has for the first time enabled an English reader to form an accurate judgment on the merits of such authors as Lopé de Vega, Montalvan, and Calderon, and to decide unhesitatingly on the vast superiority of Shakespeare and his contemporaries. The striking coincidence, at least in form and fashion, between the Dramatic Poetry of England and of Spain, without the slightest apparent connexion or obligation, has long been admitted ; but, until now, it cannot be said that we have possessed adequate means for pronouncing a deliberate verdict. The general result unquestionably is, that while both schools reject the trammels of the unities, the school of England has infinitely the advantage, not merely in the delineation of character and construction of plot, but in nearly all that belongs to poetry, passion, and sentiment. We may venture to affirm, that our second-rate dramatists, of the age of Shakespeare, are as much superior to the first-rate dramatists of the age of Lopé de Vega, as Shakespeare himself is superior to those who were by many looked upon in his time as the rivals of his popularity.

Our convictions of the high claims of some of the less known contemporaries of our great Dramatist has led the Council, in the course of the last year in particular, to devote especial attention to the productions of Thomas Heywood, who began his theatrical career towards the close of the reign of Elizabeth, and did not end it until about the period of the Civil Wars. It was proposed, at the seventh annual meeting of the Society, that a separate fund should be raised, for the purpose of reprinting the productions of Thomas Heywood and Thomas Dekker, with the view of forming, hereafter, a complete collection of their works ; but it seems to have been thought, by most of our Members, that such an object, having been contem-

plated in the outset of our undertaking, ought to be included in the ordinary annual subscription. Acting upon this view, the Council has taken measures to carry it into effect ; and our latest volume issued consists of two dramas by Heywood. printed uniformly with the four others delivered some time since to our subscribers. The six plays by Heywood may now be bound together, (should such an arrangement be deemed desirable) and an Editor has been obtained for the rest, who will leave nothing undone which an ancient and ardent love for the subject can accomplish.

The Council having thus been obliged to abandon the idea of establishing a Heywood and Dekker Fund, the subscriptions of Members to it will be taken either in diminution of their current or next year's subscription, or will be returned direct by the Treasurer.

That the Council may be enabled to carry its intentions into effect, it is not only necessary that the subscriptions should be numerous, but that they should be paid with punctuality. The Council can hardly press this point too strongly on the consideration of a General Meeting ; and they may add, that if now, or at any other time, there appear to have been more delay than was expedient in the delivery of books to Members, it has mainly arisen from delay in the payment of subscriptions. Not one farthing, be it remembered, is devoted to any other purpose than printing, paper, and the general conduct of the business of the Society. Editors are merely gratuitous contributors, sometimes to the postponement of profitable labours ; and the Council give their services, without any other inducement than zeal for the objects declared at our formation.

The Engraving by Mr. Samuel Cousins, from the Chandos Portrait of Shakespeare, in the possession of the President of the Society, to which the Council referred with so much satisfaction in its last report, has been delivered to the Members not in arrear with their subscriptions ; and has given, the Council is glad to think, very general satisfaction ; while,



as a work of art, it has justly added to the well earned reputation of the distinguished artist by whom it has been engraved.

Though the cost of this Engraving has been much greater than the Society has hitherto expended on any single publication, the Council have every reason to be proud of the success of their endeavours, in transferring from canvass to steel a faithful facsimile of a portrait which has been looked upon with reverential interest by the admirers of the great poet from the reign of Charles II., when we first hear of it as then in the possession of Sir William Davenant, down to the reign of Queen Victoria, when it was bought by its present noble possessor. Our Engraving has now added to its interest, and placed the features it perpetuates beyond destruction; while it has made, and will continue to make them familiar to thousands who may never have an opportunity of seeing the original portrait. It will be remembered that the Council restricted the number of impressions to be taken from the plate to seven hundred and fifty; and also announced its determination to destroy the plate when that number had been completed. The Council has made good this intention; and an impression from the disfigured plate, and the plate itself, broken into pieces, are now laid before the Members. Had the Council, it may be observed, determined on taking a larger number of impressions, they would have failed in securing Mr. Cousins's services. The remaining impressions of the plate may be looked upon as among the best property in the possession of the Society. Every impression, it may be observed, has passed under the eye of the Engraver, and received his approval.

It will be seen, from the Report of the Auditors, that the cost of this undertaking has in some degree crippled the funds of the Society; but the Council have great reason to believe that this will be but a temporary difficulty, and that the funds at their disposal will soon return to their former amount. In the mean time, in order to repair their finances, they have de-

terminated on taking a novel step, and to *publish* the plays they have printed by Thomas Heywood, as the first volume of Heywood's Works. The volume (a copy of which is now laid on the table) will be sold at twenty shillings; but Members of at least two years' standing, who are desirous of retaining their set of the Shakespeare publications entire, may obtain it from the Agents at ten shillings, or one half of the publishing price.

The Council have to congratulate the Members on the completion and delivery of the long-promised work, consisting of a new Life of Inigo Jones; of sketches from his own hand for Court Masques and Dramas; and of five poetical productions of that description—two of them from the autograph of Ben Jonson, a third by John Marston, (recently discovered, and for the first time printed) and two others from original manuscripts of the same period. This, also, has been an unusually expensive volume to the Society, and has not been prepared without the assistance of three separate Editors; but it has attracted so much notice, and has been so generally approved, that it is the intention of the Council, with the permission of the Duke of Devonshire, (who has large and most valuable stores relating to the scenery and costume of our ancient stage by the same great artist) hereafter to issue a second volume, of similar contents and character.

The only work yet distributed for the subscription of the current year consists of the two plays by Heywood on the story of "The Fair Maid of the West." In the mean while, Mr. Halliwell is proceeding with a translation from the German of Simrock's production on the foreign sources of Shakespeare's plots; and Mr. Collier has nearly finished his collection for a third volume of Extracts from the Registers of the Stationers' Company. Mr. Cunningham's "Notes of Oldys on our old Dramatists" will, the Council are assured, be ready to appear as the last publication of the current year, or certainly not later than the first publication of the following year.

The issue of a fifth volume of "The Shakespeare Society's Papers" must obviously depend mainly upon the literary contributions of our Members; but the Council is happy to state, that various articles of much interest have already come to hand. Those who are in possession of information, directly or indirectly illustrative of Shakespeare and his contemporaries, are earnestly solicited to communicate it with as much speed as is consistent with what is due to the value of the materials.

Besides the works above mentioned, most of which are in the press, the following titles of productions in different states of preparation may be introduced :—

1. A Second Volume of SKETCHES FOR DRAMATIC PERFORMANCES AT COURT, in the reigns of James I. and Charles I.; including designs for Scenery, by Inigo Jones.

2. IF YOU KNOW NOT ME, YOU KNOW NOBODY; OR THE TROUBLES OF QUEEN ELIZABETH; two historical plays, by Thomas Heywood; from the first editions in 1605 and 1606, collated with subsequent impressions. To be edited by J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., V.P.S.A.

3. NOTICES OF SHAKESPEARE AND HIS WORKS, from the earliest period to the publication of the "Theatrum Poetarum," in 1675; with memoranda, drawn from other sources, on his personal and literary history. By BOLTON CORNEY, Esq.

4. A volume of the Names, Lives, and Characters of the original Actors in the Plays of MARLOWE, GREENE, PEELE, LODGE, NASH, BEN JONSON, BEAUMONT AND FLETCHER, CHAPMAN, DEKKER, WEBSTER, HEYWOOD, MIDDLETON, MASSINGER, FORD, &c., alphabetically arranged.

5. A volume of the Lives of the principal Performers in SHAKESPEARE'S Plays, from the Restoration of Charles II. to Garrick's first appearance on the Stage. Chronologically arranged. By PETER CUNNINGHAM, F.S.A.

To former Annual Reports it has been usual to append a list of projected and suggested works, in addition to an enumeration of those actually in progress. This course has now and then led to unreasonable expectations. It will be evident that the number of books to be delivered must always depend upon

the amount of pecuniary aid afforded by the Members ; and the Council, regardless of all trouble to themselves, would heartily rejoice, if at any period it were in their power, by the flourishing condition of the finances of the Society, to furnish twice or four times as many books in the year as they have hitherto been able to supply. Their literary resources, in connexion with our ancient Stage and Drama. are so abundant and various, that nothing more is wanted than that practical species of encouragement, without which no undertaking of the kind, however disinterested and meritorious, can be successful. An enumeration, therefore, of only a few intended publications is subjoined, merely as a guide to what may be expected, should the affairs of the Society only continue as prosperous as they have been during the last ten years.

1. A Dissertation on the COSTUME AND APPLIANCES OF THE STAGE, in the time of Shakespeare ; illustrated by engravings of some of the Characters in old Dramas, as they were dressed for performance.

2. A Volume of BALLADS UPON WHICH OLD PLAYS WERE FOUNDED, OR WHICH WERE FOUNDED UPON OLD PLAYS ; including all those employed by Shakespeare, and many others in the Roxburghe Collection now deposited in the British Museum. To be edited by W. D. COOPER, Esq., F.S.A.

3. THE MIRROR OF MONSTERS: an attack upon theatrical performances in 1587 by WILLIAM RANKINS, who afterwards became a Dramatic Poet, and the author of Satires, &c., printed in 1596.

4. A PLAY ON THE STORY OF ROMEO AND JULIET, from an inedited MS. in Latin, of the time of Queen Elizabeth. By J. O. HALLIWELL, Esq., F.R.S.

5. THE DEFENCE OF PLAYS AND PLAYERS, by THOMAS LODGE, being an answer to Stephen Gosson's School of Abuse, 1579. Printed without date ; and without title-page, in consequence of the condemnation of it by the public authorities.

Reverting to the important topic of the Chandos Portrait of Shakespeare, it may be stated, in conclusion, that the chief reason why the promised Essay upon it, and other real or

supposed resemblances, has been delayed, is a desire to obtain the most novel and accurate information. The Editor was unwilling to repeat what had before been detailed; and, in addition, the Council has been anxious to procure from Yorkshire a correct account of the copy of the Chandos Portrait, made for Dryden by Sir Godfrey Kneller. Another cause of postponement has been, that within the last few weeks two hitherto unnoticed pictures have been forwarded from Ireland, upon which it was evidently necessary to ascertain the opinions of competent judges before a decision was pronounced upon their claims as original portraits of Shakespeare and Ben Jonson.

*By order of the Council,*

J. PAYNE COLLIER, *Director.*

F. G. TOMLINS, *Secretary.*

## REPORT OF THE AUDITORS.

We, the Auditors appointed to audit the Receipts and Expenditure of the Shakespeare Society, certify that the Treasurer has exhibited to us his Accounts from the 18th of April, 1849, to the 23rd of April, 1850; that we have examined the same, together with the vouchers in support thereof, and find the whole Account correct and satisfactory.

And we further report that the following is a correct Abstract of the Receipts and Expenditure of the Society for the above period.

RECEIPTS.			PAYMENTS.		
	£	s. d.		£	s. d.
Balance on the 18th April, 1849, as per Report of Auditors . . . . .	57	17 6	To Samuel Cousins, Esq., for Engraving the Chandos Portrait of Shakespeare . . . . .	175	13 0
Arrear Subscriptions for 1846 . . . . .	4	0 0	To Messrs. Dixon and Ross, Copper-plate Printers, for printing 750 impressions of the Chandos Portrait of Shakespeare . . . . .	48	5 0
Arrear Subscriptions for 1847 . . . . .	5	0 0	Engraving Name, &c., beneath Chandos Plate, taking impressions from damaged Plate, Frames and Glasses for exhibiting and protecting Engraving . . . . .	9	17 6
New and Arrear Subscriptions for 1848 . . . . .	22	0 0	Value of Artist's Proof, and value of Director's proof, presented to the Earl of Ellesmere, and included in the Receipts . . . . .	5	0 0
New and Arrear Subscriptions for 1849 . . . . .	45	0 0	To the Royal Society of Literature, for One Year's use of their Council Room to 15th December, 1849 . . . . .	12	0 0
Subscriptions for the Current year . . . . .	120	0 0	To the Executors of the late Mr. Thomas Rodd, Agent to the Society, for the delivery of Books . . . . .	12	0 0
Twenty-two Artist's Proofs of the Chandos Portrait of Shakespeare, at £3 each . . . . .	66	0 0	To Messrs. Skeffington and Southwell, Agents to the Society, for the delivery of Books to 31st December, 1849 . . . . .	11	11 0
Thirteen Director's Proofs, at £2 each . . . . .	26	0 0	To Messrs. Westley, for Binding . . . . .	12	9 8
	345	17 6		259	13 2

RECEIPTS.				PAYMENTS.			
	£	s.	d.		£	s.	d.
Brought forward	345	17	6	Brought forward	289	13	2
				To Mr Nethercft, balance of his account for making facsimiles of sketches by Inigo Jones . . . .	14	1	3
				Cost of Annual Meeting at the Craven Hotel, Gra- tuity to the Doorkeeper of the Royal Society of Li- terature, and other petty expenses . . . . .	2	12	6
				Extracts from Wills, Search- es, Transcripts, &c. . .	3	6	6
				Advertising, Postage, Treas- urer's Expenses, &c. . .	14	6	6
					323	19	11
				Balance . . . . .	21	17	7
	345	17	6		345	17	6

And we the Auditors have further to report that, over and above the present balance of £21 17s. 7d., there are still outstanding certain Subscriptions for prior years, which the Treasurer informs us there is every chance of his getting in during the present season. These arrears would have been considerably less, we are assured, and see reason to believe, had not the affairs of the Society been thrown into confusion by the sudden death of Mr. Rodd, the Society's Agent. Arrangements, we are glad to find, have now been made for the employment of a Collector, (as recommended by the Auditors of the preceding account) both for arrear and current Subscriptions.

The liabilities of the Society consist (as on former occasions) of a balance on Mr. Shoberl's bill for printing, and on Mr. Bonsor's bill for paper. Both bills, however, owing to the issue of the Shakespeare Portrait, (the paper for which is included in the bill of Messrs. Dixon and Ross) will necessarily be smaller in amount than usual.

We have to add, that the whole cost of engraving and printing the Chandos Portrait is included in the present account, and that certain sums have still to be collected from Members whose names are down for proof impressions.

JOSHUA W. BUTTERWORTH.

B. H. SMART.

GEORGE SMITH.

24th April, 1850.

## ANNUAL MEETING, 26th APRIL, 1850.

The Report of the Council and the Report of the Auditors having been read, the following Resolutions were passed :—

RESOLUTION I. That the Report of the Council for the past year be received and printed, and that the thanks of the Society be given to the Council for their services.

RESOLUTION II. That the Report of the Auditors be received and printed, and that the thanks of the Society be given to them for their services.

RESOLUTION III. That the thanks of the Society be given to the Editors of the various works issued during the past year : viz., to John Payne Collier, Esq., for the Second Volume of the "Extracts from the Registers of the Stationers' Company," and for the valuable Notes and Illustrations thereto appended ; to the same gentleman for editing the First and Second Parts of Heywood's "Fair Maid of the West ;" and for the share he took in jointly editing the "Sketches by Inigo Jones ;" also to Mr. Planché, for his Remarks on Stage Costume, &c. ; and to Mr. Peter Cunningham, for his new and original Biography of Inigo Jones, both comprised in that work ; also to Mr. Peter Cunningham, for the great trouble and pains he has taken, relative to the production and distribution of Mr. Cousins's Engraving of the Chandos Portrait.

RESOLUTION IV. That the thanks of the Society be given to the Director, Treasurer, and Secretary, for their services.

RESOLUTION V. That the thanks of the Meeting be given to the Royal Society of Literature, for the use of their Library for the assembly of the Members on the present occasion.



JOHN BRUCE ESQ., F S A , CHARLES KNIGHT, ESQ., SIR EDWARD BULWER LYTTON, BART., WILLIAM C. MACREADY, ESQ., AND THOMAS THOMSON, ESQ., M.D., retiring from the Council, the vacancies were filled up by the unanimous election of

W. DURRANT COOPER, ESQ., F.S.A.

CHARLES DICKENS, ESQ.

JAMES HEYWOOD, ESQ., M.P.

ZOUCH TROUGHTON, ESQ.

HIS EXCELLENCY M. DE SILVAIN VAN DE WEYER.

The remaining Members of the Council were re-elected.

The following Members were also elected Auditors for the year ending 26th of April, 1851.

RICHARD BENTLEY, ESQ.

J. GOUGH NICHOLS, ESQ.

LEWIS POCOCK, ESQ.

---

#### AGENTS TO THE SOCIETY,

Messrs. SKEFFINGTON and SOUTHWELL, 192, Piccadilly, London, who are empowered to receive Subscriptions, and to whom all letters relative to the delivery of the books must be addressed.

---

*\* \* \* The Subscription to the Society is £1 per annum, payable in advance on the 1st January in each year, which entitles the Subscriber to all the books published in the year for which the Subscription is made.*

.



REPORT OF THE COUNCIL  
OF THE  
TENTH ANNUAL MEETING  
OF THE MEMBERS OF  
THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY,  
HELD ON THE 26TH OF APRIL, 1851,  
AT THE ROOMS OF THE ROYAL SOCIETY OF LITERATURE,  
NO 4, ST. MARTIN'S PLACE, TRAFALGAR SQUARE, LONDON.



COUNCIL  
OF  
THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY.

---

**President.**

THE EARL OF ELLESMERE.

**Vice-Presidents.**

THE RT. HON. THE EARL OF CLARENDON.

THE RT. HON. THE EARL OF GLENGALL.

THE RT. HON. THE EARL HOWE.

THE RT. HON. LORD BRAYBROOKE.

THE RT. HON. THE VICE-CHANCELLOR SIR JAMES  
KNIGHT BRUCE.

**Council.**

WILLIAM AYRTON, ESQ., F.R.S., F.S.A.

ROBERT BELL, ESQ.

BAYLE BERNARD, ESQ.

J. PAYNE COLLIER, ESQ., V.P.S.A., DIRECTOR.

W. DURRANT COOPER, ESQ., F.S.A.

BOLTON CORNEY, ESQ., M.R.S.L.

PETER CUNNINGHAM, ESQ., F.S.A., TREASURER.

THE VERY REVEREND THE DEAN OF ST. PAUL'S.

JOHN FORSTER, ESQ.

J. O. HALLIWELL, ESQ., F.R.S., F.S.A.

THE REV. WILLIAM HARNESS.

JAMES HEYWOOD, ESQ., M.P.

DOUGLAS JERROLD, ESQ.

CHARLES KNIGHT, ESQ.

WILLIAM CHARLES MACREADY, ESQ.

THE HON. GEORGE O'CALLAGHAN.

FREDERIC OUVRY, ESQ., F.S.A.

T. J. PETTIGREW, ESQ., F.R.S., F.S.A.

WILLIAM JOHN THOMS, ESQ., F.S.A.

HIS EXCELLENCY M. DE SILVAIN VAN DE WEYER.

F. GUEST TOMLINS, ESQ., SECRETARY.

---

This Council will continue till the 26th of April, 1853.



REPORT OF THE COUNCIL  
OF  
THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY,  
TO THE  
TENTH ANNUAL MEETING OF THE MEMBERS,  
HELD,  
ON THE 26TH APRIL, 1851,  
AT THE ROOMS OF THE ROYAL SOCIETY OF LITERATURE, NO. 4,  
ST. MARTIN'S PLACE, TRAFALGAR SQUARE, LONDON.

---

In addressing the Members of the Shakespeare Society for the tenth time, and in the eleventh year of the existence of the Society, the Council beg to congratulate their fellow-subscribers on the continued prosperity of the Society, and the interest evinced by the Members generally and by the public at large in the character of the publications.

The Council, it is true, would have been able to have accomplished more than it was able to accomplish in the past year, had many of the Members paid their subscriptions at an earlier period; but this dilatoriness in paying (which the Council is willing to hope this representation will help to remedy) is not the sole reason for the delay in the issue of the publications promised or referred to in the last Report.

It has been a source of regret to the Council that the Dissertation on the Portraits of Shakespeare, for which many Members are anxiously waiting, has not yet been completed. Our excellent Director, to whom the Society is so much indebted.

has suffered lately from ill health, and has had many occupations of a private nature to draw his attention away from the subject ; but he has not, the Council feel assured, in the slightest degree abated the attention to and interest in the Society he has so constantly and ably manifested. He now only awaits, to complete his undertaking, for a report on the Kneller copy of the Chandos Portrait, in the possession of Earl Fitzwilliam at Wentworth Wood House, in Yorkshire.

It will be remembered that Lord Fitzwilliam, in reply to an application from the Council to inspect the Portrait, expressed his unwillingness to bring the picture to London, but his perfect readiness, at the same time, to allow any gentleman connected with the Society to see it at his seat in Yorkshire. Some delay was occasioned by this arrangement ; Mr. Collier and the Council feeling that he could not put forth his Dissertation without some account of the picture. The delay, however, was not altogether unfortunate ; for, at the request of the Treasurer, Dr. Waagen, the justly celebrated director of the Berlin Gallery, kindly undertook, during a tour of picture-seeing in Yorkshire, to examine the portrait in question, and report to the Treasurer his opinion of it on his return. This Dr. Waagen (who was presented with a copy of Mr. Cousins's engraving to compare with the picture) has done verbally to the Treasurer, and has now undertaken to provide a paper for insertion in Mr. Collier's Dissertation.

Great progress has been made, the Society will be glad to hear, in the third volume of Extracts from the Registers of the Stationers' Company. But the work can advance but slowly, owing to regulations of the Company, and the necessity of having every extract made by the pen of our Director. This arrangement, while it delays the work, saves an expence to the Society, but, more than all, it ensures that every extract will be copied with care and fidelity, and seeing by what vigilant eyes the transcripts are made that no entry of moment will be overlooked.

Mr. Cunningham has an order from the Council to proceed to press with Oldys's Notes on Langbaine, and would have availed himself of the order earlier than he has yet done, but for his anxiety, which the Society will appreciate in common with the Council, to insert the result of the fresh researches he has been making among wills and parish registers for facts of moment connected with the lives which Oldys has so importantly annotated.

Mr. Bolton Corney is busy, the Council is glad to know, with his important volume of notices of Shakespeare and his Works, from the earliest period to the publication of the *Theatrum Poetarum*. The extracts will be arranged chronologically, and will, when completed, form a curious history of contemporary opinion on the merits of the great man whose name has called our Society into existence.

After this account of promises, and, as the Council trusts, reasonable excuses for delays in completing some engagements of rather old standing, it is now their duty to report to the Society what has actually been done during the past year.

Since the last report, the two following volumes have been issued to the Society :—

1. The Remarks of M. Karl Simrock on the PLOTS OF SHAKESPEARE'S PLAYS, with notes and additions by J. O. HALLIWELL, Esq.

2. Two Historical Plays on the LIFE AND REIGN OF QUEEN ELIZABETH, by THOMAS HEYWOOD, with an Introduction and Notes by J. PAYNE COLLIER, Esq.

The latter publication was the first issue on account of the subscription due on the 1st January last, and will be followed in a fortnight hence by :—

THE GOLDEN AGE; OR, THE LIVES OF JUPITER AND SATURN, WITH THE DEFINING OF THE HEATHEN GODS. And THE SILVER AGE, INCLUDING THE LOVE OF JUPITER TO ALCMENA, THE BIRTH OF HERCULES, AND THE RAPE OF PROSERPINE. Two Plays by Thomas Heywood. Reprinted from the original editions of 1611 and 1613. Edited by J. PAYNE COLLIER:

completing the second volume of the edition of Heywood's



Works, which the Society has pledged itself to complete, and which, as will be seen from the statement of the Auditors, is possessed of an interest beyond the Members of the Society.

Since their last Report, the Council has undertaken to extend a knowledge of the works of the Society, by the publication of a supplement to Dodsley's Old Plays, in four volumes octavo, and limited to one hundred copies. The collection will be found to range in size with the large paper copies of the latest and best edition of Dodsley printed in 1825, and with the editions of Shakespeare, Ben Jonson, Beaumont and Fletcher, Massinger, Ford, &c., superintended by Mr. Collier, Mr. Knight, Mr. Dyce, and Mr. Gifford.

The volumes, however, will be found to contain other merits than their dramatic character and mere uniformity of size with a work generally to be met with in all good libraries. The first two volumes will comprise the most remarkable collections of Miracle Plays that have been preserved to us; the third volume will contain our earliest English Comedy, "Ralph Roister Doister," (not hitherto included in any collection of old plays); our earliest English tragedy "Gorboduc" (printed for the first time from the first edition); two plays, anterior to Shakespeare, "Timon," and "Sir Thomas More," both printed for the first time, and both edited by Mr. Dyce, and the Comedy of "Patient Grissell," the joint composition of Dekker, Chettle, and Haughton.

It is, however, to the fourth volume and its four plays that the Council of the Society would wish to direct more particular attention, containing, as that volume does, the first sketch of the "Merry Wives of Windsor;" the first sketch of the second and third parts of "Henry VI.;" a reprint of the "Taming of a Shrew," on which Shakespeare founded his "Taming of the Shrew;" and the "True Tragedy of Richard III.," a play anterior to the "History," on the same subject by Shakespeare, and which there is every reason to believe Shakespeare had seen.

The names of the Editors are the late Thomas Amyot, Esq., J. Payne Collier, Esq., W. Durrant Cooper, Esq., Rev. A. Dyce, the late Barron Field, Esq., J. O. Halliwell, Esq., and Thomas Wright, Esq. The price of the four volumes to Members of the Society will be 30s.; to non-Members £2. Members, however, who wish to bind the books they already have, into a Dodsley for themselves, may obtain the title-pages, advertisement, additional notes, corrections, &c., price *Five Shillings*.

Since the last Report, the Society has had the misfortune to lose by death one of its Vice-Presidents, Lord Leigh, a Member of its Council from the very first; and the Editor of one of its publications, the accomplished Thomas Amyot; and two Members who always evinced an interest in the welfare of the Society, the Marquess of Northampton and Dr. Thackeray, the Provost of King's College.

The vacancy in the Vice-Presidents, caused by the lamented death of Lord Leigh, has been supplied by the election of the Right Honourable Sir James Knight Bruce, the Vice-Chancellor, who has from the commencement evinced a warm interest in the welfare of the Society.

The following is a list of works in different states of preparation:—

1. A Second Volume of SKETCHES FOR DRAMATIC PERFORMANCES AT COURT, in the reigns of James I. and Charles I.; including designs for Scenery, by Inigo Jones.

2. NOTICES OF SHAKESPEARE AND HIS WORKS, from the earliest period to the publication of the "Theatrum Poetarum," in 1675; with memoranda, drawn from other sources, of his personal and literary history. By BOLTON CORNEY, Esq.

3. A volume of the Names, Lives, and Characters of the original Actors in the Plays of MARLOWE, GREENE, PEELE, LODGE, NASH, BEN JONSON, BEAUMONT AND FLETCHER, CHAPMAN, DEKKER, WEBSTER, HEYWOOD, MIDDLETON. MASSINGER, FORD, &c., alphabetically arranged.

4. A volume of the Lives of the principal Performers in SHAKESPEARE'S Plays, from the Restoration of Charles II. to Garrick's first

appearance on the Stage. Chronologically arranged. By PETER CUNNINGHAM, F.S.A.

The following are among the suggested publications :—

1. A Dissertation on the COSTUME AND APPLIANCES OF THE STAGE, in the time of Shakespeare; illustrated by engravings of some of the Characters in old Dramas, as they were dressed for performance.

2. A Volume of BALLADS UPON WHICH OLD PLAYS WERE FOUNDED, OR WHICH WERE FOUNDED UPON OLD PLAYS; including all those employed by Shakespeare, and many others in the Roxburghe Collection now deposited in the British Museum. To be edited by W. D. COOPER, Esq., F.S.A.

3. THE MIRROR OF MONSTERS. an attack upon theatrical performances in 1587 by WILLIAM RANKINS, who afterwards became a Dramatic Poet, and the author of Satires, &c., printed in 1596.

4. A PLAY ON THE STORY OF ROMEO AND JULIET, from an incdited MS. in Latin, of the time of Queen Elizabeth By J. O. HALLIWELL, Esq., F.R.S.

5. THE DEFENCE OF PLAYS AND PLAYERS, by THOMAS LODGE, being an answer to Stephen Gosson's School of Abuse, 1579. Printed without date; and without title-page, in consequence of the condemnation of it by the public authorities.

The publication of these works will, however, materially depend on the funds at the disposal of the Society. To enable the Council to become more active, the Members themselves, in arrear with their subscriptions, can at once materially contribute.

Signed,

*By order of the Council,*

F. G. TOMLINS, *Secretary.*

## REPORT OF THE AUDITORS.

We, the Auditors appointed to audit the Receipts and Expenditure of the Shakespeare Society, certify that the Treasurer has exhibited to us his Accounts from the 23rd of April, 1850, to the 24th of April, 1851; that we have examined the same, together with the vouchers in support thereof, and find the whole Account correct and satisfactory.

And we further report that the following is a correct Abstract of the Receipts and Expenditure of the Society for the above period.

RECEIPTS.			PAYMENTS.		
	£	s. d.		£	s. d.
Balance on the 21th April, 1850, as per Report of Auditors . . . . .	21	17 7	To Mr Satchell, on account, for Printing . . . . .	169	0 0
Arrear Subscriptions for years prior to the 1st of January, 1850 . . . . .	13	0 0	To Messrs Westley & Co., for Binding . . . . .	27	1 4
Subscriptions due 1st January 1850 . . . . .	79	0 0	To Messrs. Skeffington and Southwell, Agents to the Society, for the delivery of Books from 1st January, 1850, to 31st March, 1851, and for Postage for the same period . . . . .	25	0 0
Subscriptions due 1st January, 1851 . . . . .	119	0 0	The Secretary for one half-year . . . . .	26	5 0
Sale of 15 copies of Heywood's Works Vol. I. . . . .	5	7 6	To the Royal Society of Literature, for One Year's use of the Council Room to 15th December, 1850 . . . . .	12	0 0
From the Library Committee of the Bank of England for nine years subscriptions, allowed at half-price; the Committee subscribing since 1850 at full price . . . . .	4	10 0	Transcripts, Extracts from Wills, Searches, &c . . . . .	13	12 0
1 Artist's proof of Chandos Portrait . . . . .	3	0 0	Advertisements . . . . .	12	11 6
4 Director's proof of Chandos Portrait . . . . .	8	0 0	Gratuity to Doorkeeper of Royal Society of Literature, Treasurer's Expenses, and other petty Disbursements . . . . .	8	6 0
Sale of Vols. I, II, & III of Shakespeare Society's Papers to a Member of the Society . . . . .	0	15 0		224	15 10
			Balance in the hands of the Treasurer . . . . .	29	14 3
	254	10 1		254	10 1

And we the Auditors have further to report that, over and above the present balance of £29 14s. 3d., there is still a large sum due to the Society on the Subscriptions for 1850, as well as those of prior years. We have also to observe that the receipts for the present year, though £25 more than the year before, are still very much less than is due from the actual Members of the Society ; but we are glad to be informed that a Collector, recently appointed, is now actively employed in collecting both the arrear and current subscriptions. The number of Members borne on the books of the Society is 451, of whom only 126 are as yet entitled to the publications of the year.

The liabilities consist, as before, of a balance on Mr. Shoberl's bill for Printing, and the bill of Messrs. Bonsor for paper. The arrears are, however, amply sufficient to meet the liabilities of the Society.

LEWIS POCOCK.

JOHN GOUGH NICHOLS.

ANNUAL MEETING, 26th APRIL, 1851.

---

The Report of the Council and the Report of the Auditors having been read, the following Resolutions were passed :—

RESOLUTION I. That the Report of the Council for the past year be received and printed, and that the thanks of the Society be given to the Council for their services.

RESOLUTION II. That the Report of the Auditors be received and printed, and that the thanks of the Society be given to them for their services.

RESOLUTION III. That the thanks of the Society be given to the Editors of the various works issued during the past year : viz., to James Orchard Halliwell, Esq., for editing Karl Simrock's Remarks on the Plots of Shakespeare's Plays with notes and additions; and John Payne Collier, Esq., for editing two historical plays by Thomas Heywood, entitled "If you Know not Me you Know Nobody; or, the Troubles of Queen Elizabeth."

RESOLUTION IV. That the thanks of the Society be given to the Director, Treasurer, and Secretary, for their services.

RESOLUTION V. That the thanks of the Meeting be given to the Royal Society of Literature, for the use of their Library for the assembly of the Members on the present occasion.

THE RT. HON. SIR JAMES KNIGHT BRUCE, VICE-CHANCELLOR,  
CHARLES DICKENS, ESQ., SIR HENRY ELLIS, K.H., SWYNFEN  
JERVIS, ESQ., AND MR. JUSTICE TALFOURD, retiring from the  
Council, the vacancies were filled up by the unanimous election of

ROBERT BELL, ESQ.

THE VERY REVEREND THE DEAN OF ST. PAUL'S.

DOUGLAS JERROLD, ESQ.

CHARLES KNIGHT, ESQ.

WILLIAM CHARLES MACREADY, ESQ.

The remaining Members of the Council were re-elected.

The following Members were also elected Auditors for the year ending  
26th of April, 1852.

JOSHUA W. BUTTERWORTH, ESQ.

SAMUEL HICKSON, ESQ.

GEORGE SMITH, ESQ.

---

#### AGENTS TO THE SOCIETY,

Messrs. SKEFFINGTON and SOUTHWELL, 192, Piccadilly,  
London, who are empowered to receive Subscriptions, and to  
whom all letters relative to the delivery of the books must be  
addressed.

---

*\* \* The Subscription to the Society is £1 per annum, payable  
in advance on the 1st January in each year, which entitles the  
Subscriber to all the books published in the year for which the  
Subscription is made.*











